Table of Contents

1. Introductions and News
2. New Arrivals
3. Learning a Lesson---More Than One
4. Lesson Learned
5. Eviesdropping
6. Cookies, Monsters
7. You Didn't Mention This
8. Ice in us all
9. We're Not the Rotten Ones
10. Breaking Barriers
11. Leaping Lizards
12. WARNING!!
13. Cotillion and Confessions
14. Rulebook? Not in my book
15. The Isle of the Lost
16. You Keep Saying "Welcome." It Doesn't Mean What You Think It Means.
17. I Hate You, Shrimpy
18. Uma's Ship Isn't Exactly Ship-Shape
19. I'm Goin' Down
20. Letting Go, For The First Time In Forever
21. To Cotillion, And Beyond!
22. How To Train Mal To Be A Dragon
23. You And Me. All The Way.
24. New VK's
25. Brit's Beginnings
26. This Was... Unexpected
27. I Don't Believe I Ordered Shrimp, Waiter
28. Escape!
29. Pep Talk: FAIL
30. Aftermath
31. Prisoners
32. Breakout
33. Finding Friends

34. Arendelle
35. Mahina
36. My Dad Will Never Have A Bring-Your-Kid-To-Work-Day
37. Maira The Brave---Plus A Bonus Dad!
38. Back To Auradon
39. Mist. (Not The Percy Jackson Kind. Sorta.)
40. Storming The Castle
41. I Officially Hate Sera's Dad
42. Comatose: Adj. When Sera And Arson Fall Asleep And WON'T WAKE UP!
43. Cast List!
44. Dad's Revenge---Though A Little Late.
45. Stalkers
46. NOT AN UPDATE
47. Arson's Tale
48. I Had To Ask
49. The Deadly (And Icy) Powers
50. Aunt Anna's Book Really Kills
51. Magic Mirror On The Wall, You're The Dumbest Of Them All
52. My Powers get Expelled
53. Ellie's Year
54. It's Still You And Me. All The Way.
55. Home
56. Enchanted To Meet You
57. Stop Pressing Me!
58. Icy And....The Beast?
59. FAN ART!!!!!
60. Fan aaaaaaart!
61. Endora The Enchantress
62. Beast's Battle
63. My Life Seriously Sucks
64. The Wide-Awake Princess (Of Sarcastic Violence)
65. Sera
66. Dori Didn't Take The Pictures
67. Harry Hook's Horrible (Something That Means Confession That Starts With "H"!)
68. Sera and Endora's Plan
69. Wuv. Twue Wuv.

Introductions and News

[image]

(**Above is Ellie's outfit**)

I stared uncertainly at my target. My mother, Queen Elsa, warned me that my icy powers would only get worse, but I refuse to let Fairy Godmother take them away. My deadline was in two days, but I was adamant in my decision.

"Just *focus,* Ellie." my mother said softly. "You can do it."

I'm not sure I can. But I will try. I thought. I take a deep breath then sent a flurry of sharp icicles towards the red-and-blue target. I missed the bulls-eye, but still hit the actual canvas. I cheered and threw my hands in the air in celebration. Ice shoots out of my hands and into the sky.

"INCOMING!" yells my guards, rushing forward to throw their shields over me and my mother as the shards came flying back down. I pushed them away after the danger had passed and kicked the melting ice. I had been *so close* to proving everyone wrong! I feel tears coming to my ice-blue eyes and wiped them away before they could freeze. I shake my long white-blonde hair off my shoulders and stomp away. I know my mother wanted me to take my powers away. But I *have* to keep them! Almost no one had magic in Auradon anymore. I didn't want to be in that circle. In my book, magic was amazing.

I walked down my mother's castle grounds, getting into a car to take me to school. I wasn't about to miss school just so I could sulk!

Once the car got there, I slipped her blue gloves on. I hate wearing them, because I actually like how my hands look. I have what people call "princess fingers". I never understood that, but I like it anyway. Besides, the gloves had been carefully crafted so that no cold could ever get out or in. My fingers were always clammy whenever I took them off! And they almost never matched my

outfit. Auradon was sunny! Gloves were a no-no.

I sighed and got out of the car. My black knee-high boots clacked against the cement as my deep blue dress swayed in the wind. I pulled her denim jacket around myself more. Why do I get cold so easily? And yes, people *always* teased me that the cold *did* bother me. Don't you dare sing the song.

I went into class and noticed everyone whispering feverently. Confused, I sat down at my usual seat next to Jane. Jane was a good friend, but severely insecure about how she looked. She had ice-blue eyes like me, but chocolate-brown hair cut in a bob past her ears. I tap her shoulder.

"Jane! What's going on? Did Chad get another girlfriend or something?" I joke.

She turns to me and gives a small smile. "No, Elicia. Have you not heard? Ben made his first official proclamation!"

"He did? Already? But he's not king yet!" I scoff. I like Ben, but he's a tad nicer than he needs to be. He probably picked some pity project.

Jane glances around then leans in close. "He's picking four kids from the Isle and bringing them *here*."

"The Isle?? As in, The Isle of the Lost??" I almost yelp. Jane nods.

"I'm not sure which four...Mom won't tell me." Jane says mournfully.

I lean over to my other side, where Audrey sits. She's a huge brat, but she's Ben's girlfriend. Maybe she'll know. I tap her shoulder and she throws her brown hair over her pink dress to glare at me. "What do *you* want, Ice Queen?" she scoffs.

I ignore the comment. I've gotten good at that. "Do you know the four kids who'll be coming? From the Isle?"

She gives me a smug look, pleased to know something I don't for once. (I'm a bit of a nerd. A bit!) "As a matter of fact, I do! I don't

know their names, I wouldn't dare. But the parents are Cruella De Vil, Jafar, Evil Queen, and..." She pauses and glances around. "*Maleficent.*"

"Maleficent! What is Ben thinking?" Jane squeals. "That kid will murder you!"

Audrey pouts, sticking her lip out. "Benny-boo won't let her. Will, you Benny?" She says the last part louder as Ben comes over.

Ben shakes his head. "You were supposed to keep all of this secret, Audrey!" He waves to me and Jane. I wave back, and a bead of sweat trickles down my wrist from my stupid gloves. Jane just gives a weak smile and tries to hide behind her bob cut.

Audrey gives a sweet smile to Ben. "I'm just worried, Benny-boo! These kids are bad news."

"Everyone deserves a second chance." Ben insists. He looks pointedly at me and I flush red. It's no secret how my mom started out. Even almost killing Aunt Anna! Mom hates going places that are crowded, away from Arendelle. She barely agreed to let me come to school. But that doesn't say anything about my mother. She's the most kindhearted person ever! She's almost annoyingly loyal to her family. She'd never hurt anybody on purpose, and yet she's one of the few heroes that almost got sent to the Isle with everyone else!

I agree with Ben, though. "Maybe their kids aren't so bad." I tell Audrey.

New Arrivals

"Are you *sure* you want me there?" I check one more time. Ben had come to me and asked if I would attend the welcome with him and Audrey. We've been friends for years, but I have no idea what spurred this!

Ben gives a nervous smile. "Yes, Ellie. I want you there. You're one of the only people who might understand how they feel here."

I've heard them my whole life, but the words still prick my heart. "What is that supposed to mean?"

His face turns terrified. "No! I didn't mean---you're not---Oh, I'm an idiot." he mumbles. "I *meant,* people bully you a lot. I've tried telling people to stop. But you are one of the few people who could've ended up on the Isle. You might understand their, um, situation."

"That's the only reason you want me there?" I accuse.

"That, and you're one of the only people that can keep Audrey in check." Ben says with a tiny smile. I burst out laughing and he takes that to mean I've forgiven him. "So you'll come? It's in like two hours."

I nod. "I'll be there. I promise."

the he gets fidgety. "Hey, have you decided...um... About tomorrow's deadline?"

Unintentionally, my body goes cold with fear. "I'm not doing it."

He smiles for real. "I figured. Dad and Fairy Godmother aren't happy, but that's their loss. I personally think your magic is amazing. So what if Queen Elsa chose to let hers get taken away?

New magic might just be what this kingdom needs."

And it's those words that convince me finally that Ben is the perfect leader for this kingdom.

A few short (and chaotic) hours later, Ben, Audrey, Fairy Godmother, the entire marching band, and I are waiting at the entrance of the school. I tug on my gloves nervously. *This could go so wrong...* I think to myself.

Then the limo pulls up.

The band hurriedly starts playing an annoying tune, and the limo comes to a stop, and the doors open up to reveal...

Two boys. Fighting over a blanket. One with long dark hair and a red beanie with yellow leather. Jafar's kid? And the other one, obviously Cruella De Vil's boy, with white hair that has black roots and completely red-white-and-black clothing.

"OW! Stop it, you got EVERYTHING else, why do you want whatever this is??" The white-haired boy says in a squealy voice. I gape at them.

"Cuz you want it! Give it to me!" Beanie boy growls. Two girls get out of the car in the midst of this, one that is remarkably blue, and one...

Oh...

This must be Maleficent's daughter. Purple hair, purple-pink-and-green leather, and a wicked gleam to her eye.

Blue girl does a twirl, taking Auradon in. Her face shows how happy she is to be here. She looks positively enchanted.

Fairy Godmother breaks through the band with her arms spread wide. Purple girl whispers, "Guys, guys, guys!" and steps in front of the two boys. "We have an audience," she scolds, putting her hands on her hips and smiling.

"Just...*cleaning up!"* Beanie boy says. "Get up." he growls at white-hair. He pulls the other off the ground.

"Leave it like you found it!" FG sings. "And by that I mean just *leave it.*" she clarifies. Beanie boy gives a look to the driver then throws everything back in the limo. Then Beanie boy catches Audrey's eye.

"Hello, foxy! The name's... Jay." he says, moving forward. I have to hold back a laugh at Audrey's disgust.

Audrey gives a fake laugh. FG pops in front. "Welcome to Auradon prep." Jay's smile vanishes. "I'm Fairy Godmother, headmistress." She gives a small curtsy.

Purple girl perks up. "*The* Fairy Godmother? As in, bibbidi bobbidi boo?"

"Bibbidi bobbidi, you know it!" FG says, pleased they know her.

"Yeah, I always wondered, what if felt like for Cinderella, when you just...appeared! Out of nowhere! With that sparkly wand, and warm smile!" She claps her hands together. "And that sparkly wand..."

Wait, didn't she just say that?

"That was a long time ago. And as I always say, "Don't focus on the past, or you'll miss the future," FG makes little windows with her hands.

Ben steps forward. "It's so good to finally meet you all. I'm Ben---"

"Prince! Benjamin." Audrey breaks in. "Soon to be king!" She says squealy.

Blue girl steps forward. "You had me at Prince. My mom's a Queen, which makes me a Princess." She gives a shy grin and sinks to a curtsy.

Audrey gives a fake smile and shakes her head. "The Evil Queen has no royal status here." the grin slips off Blue girl's face. "And neither do you..." Audrey finishes.

"Audrey!" I hiss. Nobody notices, but I elbow her anyway. I give Blue girl a small grin. "You have status here, but *some of us* won't admit that." I tell her. She smiles.

Ben gives an awkward laugh. "This is Audrey!"

"Princess! Audrey. His girlfriend!" She pulls Ben's arm towards her. "Right, Benny-boo?"

Purple girl tilts her head to the side.

"Ben and Audrey are gonna show you all around." FG says, taking both their arms. "And I'll see you tomorrow. "The DOORS of wisdom are never shut!" Purple girl jumps as FG flings their arms apart. "But the library hours are from 8 to 11 and as you may have heard I have a little thing about curfews..." She walks off to all of our sarcastic laughs and the marching band follows her.

Ben steps forward in anticipation. "It is so, so good to finally meet you all!" Jay punches him when he gets too close and Ben backs off. He moves to shake Purple's hand and lingers a second longer than Audrey will tolerate. Then Ben moves on. "This is a momentous occasion! And one that I hope will go down...in history..." he shakes White's hand. "Is that chocolate? As a day our two peoples began to heal!"

"Or the day that you showed four peoples where the bathrooms are." Purple breaks in.

Ben laughs and moves back to her. "A little bit over the top?"

Purple smirks. "Little more than a little bit."

"Well, so much for our first impressions! Nice job, Ben." I scold. He smiles.

Audrey scowls. "Hey! You're Maleficent's daughter, aren't you? Yeah, you know what, I totally do not blame you for your mother trying to kill my parents and stuff." Purple rolls her eyes. "Oh! My mom's Aurora. Sleeping---"

"Beauty! Yeah. I've heard the name." Purple says. I roll my eyes.

Lame, Audrey!

"Ya know, and I totally do not blame your grandparents for inviting everyone in the whole world!" Purple says. "But my mother. To their stupid christening."

"Water under the bridge." Audrey says.

"Totes!" Purple laughs. the both gives the worst laughs ever that fade into sighs.

Ben smiles awkwardly. I break in. "Okay! So, how 'bout a tour?" I ask. "Yeah? Ben?"

He clears his throat. "Auradon prep! Originally built over 300 years ago, and converted into a high school by my father..." Ben drolls. I drop back with Blue.

"Hi." I tell her.

She smiles. "Hi. I'm Evie! Evil Queen's daughter. Auradon is beautiful."

I nod. "It really is, even if magic is forbidden." I say bitterly. "Oh. Sorry, I'm Elicia. I go by Ellie, though."

"Who's your parents--"

Evie is interrupted by a high-pitched scream. I look back to see White jumping into Jay's arms and screaming. Ben looks back. "Carlos! it's okay! My father wanted his statue to morph from Beast to man. To remind us that anything is possible."

"Does he shed much?" Purple asks. I don't hold back my guffaw in time and she winks at me.

"Yeah, mom won't let him on the couch." Ben says with a totally poker face. He smiles then turns to keep walking. Purple turns and gives Evie a weird look just as Jay drops Carlos. We all keep walking but I hear two quick claps. I turn to see Carlos standing behind, testing the statue.

"Silly, it won't work for you." I tell him. "Come on!"

He gives a nervous grin then follows me inside. Purple's talking. "...Have alot of magic here at Auradon? Like...wands? And things like that?" She looks so hopeful.

"Yeah, it exists, of course." Ben gives me a glance. "Like Ellie here. She's one of the few people left with powers."

I raise my gloved hand. "Guilty."

"But it's pretty much retired," Ben goes on. "Most of us here are just ordinary mortals."

"Who happen to be kings and queens." Purple points out.

"That's true!" Audrey screeches. "Our royal blood goes back hundreds of years." She throws Ben's arm over her shoulder. Ben seems uncomfortable, so I look around for a distraction.

"Doug!" I yell. Ben looks up. "Doug, come down!" I say, pulling Ben with me.

"This is Doug." Ben says. "He's gonna help you with your class schedules and show you the rest of the dorms." he walks back to the four kids. Gotta figure out Purple's name. "I'll see you later, okay? And if there is anything you need, feel free to--"

"Ask Doug!" Audrey yells, frustrated. She and Mal do the laugh-then-sigh again. This could not be worse. Audrey pulls Ben away, but I want to stay with Doug.

Doug gives his trademark nerd-nervous wave. "Hey guys! I'm Dopey's son, as in Dopey, Doc, Bashful, happy, Grumpy, Sleepy, and..." He trails off when he sees Evie walking towards him. "Heigh-ho!" he breathes. I fight my smile. He's got a crush!

"Evie. Evil Queen's daughter." Evie says.

Doug shakes his head. "OK, so about your classes, I, uh, put in the requirements already. History of Woodsmen and Pirates, safety rules for the internet, and uh..." He clears his throat. "Remedial

Goodness 101?" He finishes with his voice a couple octaves higher.

Purple scoffs at his shoulder. "Lemme guess." She chomps on a piece of gold foil. "New class?"

"Sorry." I tell her. "It's required, I don't know why."

She grins. "Probably because of us, y'know. Villains and all."

"Coming from somebody whose mom everybody *thought* was a villain, I feel you." I say.

She grins wider. "Seriously? There are some Auradonians that were almost Isle people?"

I stick my hand out. "Elicia, daughter of the Snow Queen. Elsa."

She shakes it. "Mal. Daughter of--"

"Maleficent, Queen of Evil." I say.

"Yup." She drops the gold foil on the ground and turns back to her friends. "Come on guys. Let's go find our dorms!"

They all start to walk up the nearest set of stairs, and Doug has to shake his head a couple times before he realizes they're going the wrong way. "Oh, uh, yeah your dorms are that way guys!" he points the opposite way.

They all follow Evie back down the stairs and Doug counts on his fingers as they pass by. "Dopey, Doc, Bashful, Happy, Grumpy, Sleepy and..." he struggles with the last one. Carlos comes up next to Doug.

"Sneezy." He supplies.

I laugh. "How'd you know that?"

Carlos shrugs. "I like to read anything I can get my hands on. Plus, those names are pretty much common knowledge no matter where you live."

"I guess." I admit. Carlos follows his friends off.

If anybody actual reads this thing, I'm sorry the last chapter was so short! I'm trying to make them longer but couldn't think of anything else to add to the last one.

Learning a Lesson---More Than One

I watch with Jane as the VK's struggle through the lesson with FG. Well, three of them struggle. Mal's not even paying attention, and she's still getting all the answers right. Jane and I have been watching for the last like ten minutes, and FG is still completely positive to them.

FG starts again. "If someone hands you a crying baby," She points at the chalkboard. "Do you A) Curse it? B) Lock it in a tower? C) Give it a bottle. Or D) Carve out its heart?"

I gag at the last one. I might be able to stomach A-C, but killing it? No way. In fact, I can't remember any villains doing that before....

Wait. Nope, Evil Queen tried to. With Snow White. Technically not a baby, but still. Better the pig or whatever the hunter used than Snow White! She's the biggest fashion creator in Auradon. Though I want to know where Evie gets her clothes. I'm super jealous. I wonder if she could ask whoever they are to make me better gloves?

Jane nudges me. "Look!" Evie's hand is in the air, wiggling excitedly. FG beams and points to her.

"Evie!"

Evie puts her hand down. "What was the second one?" She asks.

FG loses a bit of her happy sparkle. "Oh, ok. Anyone else."

None of them answer, Mal fixated on whatever she's doing on her desk.

FG looks at Mal. "Mal?" She asks. Mal looks up while playing with a chunk of her purple hair.

"C, give it a bottle." She says.

"Correct. Again." FG gushes.

Carlos looks over at her. "You are on fire, girl!"

Mal looks up barely and lets go of her hair. "Just pick the one that doesn't sound like any fun." She says it like it's the most obvious thing ever.

"Oh..." The rest of the VK's say. Jane taps me.

"I've gotta get mom to sign this. Come with me?" She pleads. I hook my arm through hers.

"Sure."

She smiles then starts into the room. I let go of her arm since the area's too small for two people to walk together. Jane squeals when she passes the VK's, but I'm more interested in what Mal is drawing. I peek as I walk by. FG's wand!

"Hello, dear one!" FG says to Jane.

"Hi." Jane says breathlessly. "You need to sign off an early dismissal for the coronation." She says, shoving the clipboard to her mom. I speed up to get up there with Jane.

As FG signs it, she starts talking. "Everyone here remembers my daughter Jane?"

"Mom! No!" Jane pleads. I take her hand.

"It's okay! Jane, this is everyone." She shoves Jane towards the VK's.

Jane shuffles forward. "Hi." she squeaks. "That's okay. Don't mind me. As you were." She bolts past them and squeals again. I roll my eyes jokingly and follow her. But I stop by Mal.

"That's a great drawing." I tell her, pointing to FG's wand."

She covers it with her arm. "This? It's nothing." She waves it away. "Elicia, right? Ice Queen?"

I sigh. "I'd like you to remember me as "the nice girl" or "the funny girl" not "Ice Queen", but yeah."

FG hears. "Ellie! That reminds me, we need to talk."

"Now?" I ask.

"Oh, they don't mind. Do you, kids?" FG asks the VK's. Mal just goes back to drawing. So I walk up to FG, dreading what she'll say.

"Ellie, Ben tells me you've made up your mind already. Is there no way I can dissuade you?"

I shake my head, crossing my arms over my chest. "I know my powers will be permanent after my birthday. I get it. But I want to keep them."

FG wrinkles her nose. "Well, no, not *permanent*. But they will be much harder to remove after your birthday. You're sure? I heard you had an accident the other day."

I scowl and hide my hands more. "I'm positive. Bye, Fairy Godmother."

She smiles and lets me go. As I start to leave, I notice Mal watching me.

"What?" I demand.

"They want you to get rid of your powers?" She asks.

"Yeah. But I think magic is amazing. We've all but lost it." I say. "Nobody's taking my powers. Nobody. You'd be surprised how focused I can make it when I'm angry."

She laughs. "Well, Ice Queen, see ya around. I think your friend is leaving without you." She points to Jane's shrinking figure. I roll my eyes and chase after her. I glance back once. Mal's calculating gaze makes me wonder what she has planned.

"Audrey!" I call. "Hey! Audrey!" I chase after her. She's already in her blue-and-yellow cheer uniform matching mine. Mine has gloves, of course. And every time I look at them it reminds me that my deadline is tonight. But I've already told FG. I will *not* back down.

Audrey turns to glare at me. "What do you want, Ice Queen?"

I scowl. "It's Ellie. Stop it, Sleeping Ugly." I snap. I'm so over her bratty attitude.

She flushes red. "I heard you refused Fairy Godmother's generous offer. Is it true? You're keeping them?"

"Why is it any business of yours?" I demand.

Her eyes narrow. "It's true! You realize your mother almost killed her sister with her powers, right? It's only a matter of time before your family gets sent to the Isle. Mark my words."

Her words drive a stake into my heart. "Take that back." I hiss. But she just turns and sprints onto the tourney field. I tear after her, anger fogging my vision. I don't even realize I've stripped my gloves off until the tourney field starts to grow cold. I shoot a blast of icy magic at Audrey. But Audrey hides behind the coach and I barely see him, advancing on her.

"COACH! Ellie's using her powers against me!" She shrieks.

"Oh, you're going to wish I'd use just my powers." I snarl. I try to push the coach away, but someone grabs me from behind and holds me back. "Let---me---go!" I snap, trying to see who has me. I turn and see Carlos has a firm hold around my waist. "What---let go of me!"

He shakes his head and points to the coach. He's glaring at me. "Elicia, you know not to use your powers on the other students. New kid. Let go of her!"

Carlos instantly backs off. But he doesn't stop looking at me. "Are you okay?" he asks once everyone's walked away.

I shake my head and go to retrieve my gloves. He catches my arm. "Hey! I asked a question. You're Ellie, right?"

I jerk my arm away, tears threatening to break loose. And that couldn't even work right, because they'd freeze the second they air anyway! "I'm fine." I tell him.

"Are you sure? I'd never expected to see any Auradonian get that angry. Isle kids, sure." he grabs my arm again. "What'd she say to you?"

I shake my head. "No offense, but I literally just met you yesterday."

He smiles. "I know that. But you seemed *really* mad, so I figured you better blow off your steam on someone you don't know before you unintentionally hurt one of your friends."

I sigh. There is some logic to that. "Okay, to get what I'm mad about, you'd have to understand Auradon. Magic is in a way forbidden. Not *really,* but nobody has them anymore. So I grew up with a deadline looming in my future. FG offered to take my powers away. Tonight is the deadline, and I've said no."

"That doesn't explain why you went all Maleficent on Princess Pink over there." Carlos points out.

"Let me finish! So most of the people in Auradon are really mad about that. I've had quite a few...accidents. Nothing where I hurt anybody, but I have frozen quite a few swimming pools and frosted the grounds in the middle of summer. People think I should be forced to give them up, or sent to the Isle."

"What? Why?" Carlos asks.

"Because my mom! Everybody thought she was a witch, and they're calling me one now, and they say I'm planning to freeze King Ben, and some *awful* rumors are going around that I forced him to bring you guys here!" I explode. His hair gets coated with frost on the tips. But he just smiles and brushes it off.

"So, what'd Audrey say to you?"

"She told me it was only a matter of time until I got sent to the Isle." I whisper.

"WHAT?" comes a new voice. I turn and see Ben standing there with a shocked look on his face. "Sorry, Ellie, didn't mean to eavesdrop, but I wanted to make sure you were okay. Audrey said that?"

I give a mute nod.

Ben looks really concerned. "That'll never happen, Ellie."

"Doesn't matter if it does or doesn't. What matters is that people actually think that." I sigh and start to walk toward the cheer team, where Audrey has a smug look on her face. I stick my tongue out at her and take my place at the front next to her.

Ben glances at her one time before joining the tourney team on the field with Carlos. I hadn't even noticed he'd been in uniform too. I spot Jay on the field. Then I see how lost Carlos looks. I laugh as the coach yells, "Hey! Hey! Hey, you! Lost boy!" Carlos turns his way, confused. "Put your helmet on, get outta the kill zone! Come on!"

"Kill zone? What?" Carlos asks, wandering out of the red and white.

"Pick it up! Put it on! Two hands!" Coach yells. Carlos finally gets his helmet on and walks off the field. Coach blows the whistle and the practice game starts up. Jay takes the ball right off, banging hard into other players and knocking them off their feet. We start cheering, me being the loudest. Finally! Someone put Chad in his place!

The game ends in a matter of minutes. Audrey is the only one who watches the game in disgust. The highlight of the game was when Jay was about to score a goal and Carlos dances around in front of it.

"Jay it's me it's Carlos! Wait! Stop! Jay, stop!" he throws his wooden spoon (**please comment if you know what it's actually called, I have no idea)** at Jay in a panic. "Oh, no no no no no no!!!" he curls

up on the ground with his shield over his head. Jay runs over him and shoots the ball into the goal with ease. We all start cheering, me the loudest again. Audrey glares at me.

"I suppose you're happy, seeing as your buddy won the game!" She huffs. "You're just like them. *Evil.*" Then she tosses her ponytail and stalks away.

I shrug. I don't care right now. Jay's victory dance is way too funny to dampen my spirits. "OH YEAH! C'mon! Let's go! OH! Whoo! OO, OO, oh oh!" he throws his stuff on the ground and dances about. I laugh then actually, and he sends a grin my way.

"What just happened?"

"Who is this guy?"

TWEET!!! "YOU! Get over here!" Coach yells. We all keep cheering as Jay runs over to the coach. Coach better not get him in trouble. I jog over to see for myself.

"Whatd'ya call that?" Coach demands. Jay doesn't answer. "I call that raw talent! Come find me later, I'll show you something you haven't seen before. It's called a rulebook! Welcome to the team, son!" he claps Jay's shoulder, and I don't think I've ever seen a kid look so confused.

Then Coach looks to Carlos and sighs. "You ever thought about band?"

Carlos laughs sarcastically, but Jay cracks up. Carlos looks so dejected.

"I'll work with him, coach!" I break in. I used to be on the tourney team until Chad decided to get the rulebook out. Apparently, girls can't play. So cheer was next best option. I still hate Chad for that.

Coach gives me an doubtful look. "All right. Let's run that again!" He blows the whistle and I watch as Jay turns around, right into Chad's face. Jay ignores him and keeps walking, slamming his shoulder into Chad's.

"Ow!" Chad moans once Jay's walked away.

"What, you need a band-aid?" I ask. "Or a cold compress?" I hold up my hands and he scrambles away.

"COACH! SHE'S GONNA FREEZE ME!!" Chad screams.

I glare. "I am *not!* I was offering to get him an ice pack!"

Coach hasn't heard though, so Chad just glowers. "You were going to freeze me, just like you'll freeze everybody else someday. Take the chance while you can, Ice Queen. Lose your powers before we have to make you. Or you hurt somebody."

"*I'm not going to hurt anybody!"* I scream. Someone appears beside me.

"Leave her alone!" Carlos tells Chad. Chad snorts.

"What? You're actually *defending* her? This is perfect, Ice Queen's found her true home! Ben'll see sense soon." he tells me.

I shove Chad backward so hard he lands on his butt. I didn't take my gloves off, and yet two handprints of frost are on his uniform.

"COACH!!!" Chad squeals. "SHE USED HER POWERS ON ME!" He scrambles up and runs over to coach to display the frost prints. I bury my face in my gloved hands and start to run away. Carlos catches me.

"Don't run away. They'll think you're guilty." he pleads. "Trust me."

So I don't. I stay. Coach comes over with Audrey, Chad, and the rest of both teams trying to eavesdrop casually. Jay comes over too when he sees Carlos is involved.

"Ellie..." Coach sighs.

"He was insulting her." Carlos breaks in. "He was telling her she should get rid of her powers and that she was going to end up on the Isle."

Chad gapes at him. "I would never say that to Ellie! I was merely informing her that she shouldn't be hanging around VK's!" he grabs my arm and pulls me away from Carlos. "They're obviously a bad influence."

I'm tempted to shove him away again, but that wouldn't help my case. "You were *not.* You were telling me exactly what Carlos said you were."

"Ah-ah-ah!" He speaks over me so Coach won't hear. "I think you're getting a little tired, Ellie. Why don't you go back inside?" he holds my arm tight enough to leave marks and starts to drag me away. I try to break away now, but Chad won't let go. That is, until Carlos punches him in the gut.

"OH!" Chad moans, losing his grip on my arm. Carlos doesn't pay attention, looking at me.

"Are you okay?"

I check my arm. Sure enough, he left crescent-moon nail marks. One of them is bleeding. "He cut me." I mumble.

Coach breaks in. "What do you think you're doing, hitting one of my start players?"

"Your star player was holding Ellie against her will." Carlos argued, showing Coach my arm. Ben stares at it and Jay glares at Chad's moaning form. Audrey is giving me and Carlos murderous looks.

Coach sighs. "Audrey. Take Ellie and Chad to the nurse's. The rest of you, get back on the field!"

Audrey grabs Chad off the ground and I groan. Alone with these two. What could *possibly* go wrong?

For the few people that have bothered to read this, please comment! I love hearing feedback! Also to the few people who are reading this, thanks a million!

Lesson Learned

[image]

"Do you want help, Audrey?" I ask her as she carries an overreacting Chad.

"No! Not from the likes of *you*, anyways." Audrey sniffs. We finally get to the nurse's office and she sets Chad down on a cot.

The nurse comes in. "Oh, dear. Hello Ellie! Audrey. Chad." She says stiffly. She has good taste in people, and she *hates* Audrey and Chad.

Audrey rolls her eyes and flips her ponytail over her yellow shirt. "A new VK kid hit Chad for no reason. I think he's okay, but you need to check him." She frets.

I clear my throat. "Carlos hit Chad because he did this to me." I hold out my arm. The nurse glares at Chad.

"Mr. Charming, you're fine. You can leave now with Miss Audrey. Ellie, your arm will be fine, just give me one minute."

She comes back with a cloth and wipes away the little bit of blood that's left. She smiles and rubs my arm. "Those will go away in a bit. But were any teachers there for the scene?"

"Coach was." I grumble. "But Chad's one of his star players."

She watches Audrey help Chad off the cot and out the door. I can practically hear the fake pain in Chad's voice as he admits he probably won't be able to go to practice today. I roll my eyes and cover the marks up with my gloves.

"Thanks anyway." I say. "I'm going to go change for class."

The nurse smiles and nods.

I walk out of the locker room and glance around a few times. I see Mal and Evie by Mal's locker. Mal's locker has a huge purple-and-green Maleficent shadow with "long live evil" written in it. I walk over. On my way, Evie sees me and nudges Mal, who turns around in surprise.

"Nice locker." I tell her. "You really have a talent!"

She smiles. "So do you. I heard about what happened on the field."

"Which part?" I ask.

She grins wickedly. "All of it."

I groan. "Ugh. So you've now heard of my temper?"

She pats my shoulder. "Yup. Almost like us, kinda."

Evie breaks in. "She means she likes you. That's as close as she'll get, so I'd take it."

I beam. Hey, they're villains. But I'll take it! Somebody *finally* doesn't think my powers are awful things that should be gone. Even Jane does, but she won't tell me to my face.

Then Audrey, Chad, and Ben come out.

Audrey's giving a laugh that sounds like a foghorn, then she stops.

"Those kids are trouble." Chad whispers. Please, like we can't hear. I squeeze my eyes shut like I can block him out. Mal taps me.

"Don't close your eyes." She orders. "Listen. Build up the anger so you can get them back later."

Evie winks at me. "Again, that's as close as you'll get to an *you're a good person.* Bye Mal." Evie walks off. Mal waves her away then goes back to her locker.

"C'mon Chad. Give them a chance. Ellie too." Ben says. "They're not bad kids."

Audrey snorts. "No offense, Bennybear, you're just too trusting! Look, I know your mom fell in love with a big nasty Beast who turned out to be a prince. But with *my* mom? The Evil Fairy was *just* the Evil Fairy. That girl's mother." She whispers. "And Ellie! Using her powers on Chad! None of them can be trusted!"

"I think you're wrong about them." Ben says stubbornly. "I'll see you later."

Audrey sighs and starts to walk away. I decide I'm done.

"Bye Mal. See you later, I guess." I say.

She smiles. "Bye Ellie. And don't listen to them. They're jerks, but not as big of jerks as us. We'll get them back."

For some reason, that makes me want to laugh. But she said *us.* Did she mean Evie, Jay, and Carlos? Or was she including me?

"Any chance he's in line for a throne? Anywhere in line?" Evie asks Doug and I. She stares dreamily at Chad.

I sigh. Doug answers for me. "Chad. Prince Charming Jr. Cinderella's son? Chad inherited the charm, but not a lot of... there, there, know what I mean?"

I snort. "Charm? No way. I *still* have marks on my arm!"

Evie ignores me. "Looks like there, there to me." She sighs. Pick somebody else for a crush, Evie! *Anyone* else!

"Evie!" Mr. Deley interrupts. "Perhaps this is just review for you. So tell me, what is the average atomic weight of silver?"

Evie sits up straight. "Atomic weight? Well, uh, not very much, I mean, it's an atom, right?" She tries, laughing nervously. I groan inside.

Mr. Deley doesn't look impressed. He waves for her to come up to the board and she grabs something from her purse first. She walks

to the board and takes a piece of chalk.

"Let's see. How do I find the average atomic weight of silver?" She asks out loud. I'm praying inside that she knows what she's doing. Mr. Deley loves kids making fools of themselves.

"That would be 106.905 times 5200, plus 108.905, times 4800, which, Mr. Deley, would give us 107.9. Amu." Evie says smugly.

"Amu?" Doug whispers.

Mr Deley glares. "I forget. Always a mistake to underestimate--"

"A villain?" Evie says, turning back around so fast her hair flips in his face. "Don't make it again." She tosses the chalk and he catches it.

Evie walks back to her seat. As she passes Chad, he hands a slip of paper to her. I watch curiously as she unfolds it at her seat then glances up at him and nods. They both go down on one hand and stare at each other. Only I see Doug doing the same thing, but with a grumpy expression.

Oh, boy. Dopey's kid with a crush on Evil Queen's kid? Not gonna end well, especially with Chad planning something.

"OK! Carlos, we're gonna do some sprints. You ready?" I yell at him. He's bent down ready to run across the field and he nods.

I start the timer and Carlos takes off running before I can say go. He shoots past me, screaming his head off. "AH! Ah, no NO wait! WAIT! No! AAAH!" he starts swinging his arms around like that'll make him go faster.

"YES!" I say when he passes me. That's the fastest yet! But he keeps going, screaming his so hard his voice cracks.

"Carlos? Carlos!" I start to chase after him. I see a little brown fur ball chasing him. Dude? I follow them into the woods to find Carlos climbing up a tree. Dude has him cornered and is barking his tiny

lungs out. "CARLOS!" I yell.

"Ellie? Ellie?" Carlos calls. "Ellie, help me! This thing is a killer!" He points at Dude. I hold the squirmy dog back. "He's gonna chase me down and rip out my throat! This is a vicious, rabid pack animal!"

"Hey! Who told you that?" I ask. I pick Dude up and hold him close.

"My mother." Carlos says.

"Cruella?"

"She's a dog expert. A dog yellerer." Carlos explains, still hugging the tree. "WHY ARE YOU HOLDING HIM?? HE'S GONNA ATTACK YOU!"

I laugh. "Carlos, you've never actually *met* a dog, have you?"

"Of course not." he says.

"Dude? Meet Carlos." I make Dude wave his little paw. "Carlos, this is Dude. He's the campus mutt."

"He doesn't look like a vicious rabid pack animal..." Carlos admits, climbing down. "Jeez. You're a good boy, aren't you?" He hesitantly pets Dude's head. I hand Dude over and Carlos takes him without complaint. "You're a good boy." Carlos says.

I watch sadly. "I guess you guys have it pretty rough on the island."

"Yeah." Carlos pets Dude. "Let's just say we don't get a lot of belly rubs."

I pat Carlos' shoulder. "Good boy. I mean," my face flames. "You're a good runner. You're fast, you know."

"Oh. Yeah. Thank you, yeah." Carlos says.

"Listen, I'm gonna give you guys some space." I tell him and Dude. "Yeah? You guys get to know each other, and just...you know, come find me when you're done. Okay? See you later."

"See you out there." Carlos says, sitting down on a trunk. He pets Dude. "Hi. Hi. Oh!" He almost jumps when Dude licks his cheek. "Thank you."

I smile. Dude brings the best in everyone.

Sorry to end it here, but I gotta focus on school more! I'll hopefully update more later this week, but please for the few people who read this, please comment on what you think! I love feedback!

Eviesdropping

[image]

I jog back to the field to find some way to pass the time. Maybe I can watch the extra cheer practice or something.

But instead, I find something a lot more awful.

I notice two people sneaking along behind the bleachers, holding hands. I jog over to see who, and my heart thuds to the ground when I recognize Chad. And Evie...

Evie lets out a girly giggle as she lets Chad drag her under the bleachers. I climb up on the steps so I can listen in and make sure Chad doesn't do anything.

"Is everybody at home as pretty as you?" Chad asks, stopping under me.

Evie looks down shyly. "I like to think I'm the fairest of them all." they both laugh then Evie hesitates. "How many rooms in your castle?"

"Oh!" Chad scoffs. "Too many to count."

Evie laughs and leans in to kiss Chad, but he gives a gross look and starts talking again. "You really nailed that chemistry problem today!" Evie backs up and opens her eyes, letting her face drop. "You're gonna have all the nerds in love with you." Chad prods.

Evie grins nervously. "I'm not that smart!"

Yes, you are, Evie! Don't play dumb to get the guy! I think. Stupid Chad. He probably wants her to do his homework for him or something.

"Oh, come on." Chad says.

"No, really, I'm not!" Evie rolls her eyes, still grinning. "But I'm...I'm

really good at sewing, and cooking, and cleaning. You know, like your mother, Cinderella! Without the ratty dress."

Chad laughs and tilts his head to acknowledge it. Evie reaches into her red purse. "See this?" She holds up a small gold mirror with broken glass in the center. "If I ask it where something is, it tells me!" Evie says proudly.

Oh, no...

Chad looks at her in disbelief. "Are you kidding me?"

"No!" Evie laughs. Chad takes the mirror from her hand and holds it to his mouth like a phone.

"Where's my cell phone?" He asks, then holds it to his ear. Honestly. It's not going to *talk* to you, Chad!

Evie laughs. "It won't work for you, silly."

Chad realizes how stupid he looks and lowers the mirror. "No biggie. My dad will just get me a new one."

"Prince Charming." Evie breathes.

"Yeah." Chad says.

"And Cinderella." Evie says in wonder. "And Fairy Godmother." Evie trails off, but keeps talking like she has to. "Hey. I heard her wand is in some boring museum. Do they always leave it there?"

Chad pulls his normal so-close-yet-I'm-busy trick. He leans in then pulls back, exasperated. "I'd really like to talk, but..." He turns away and slams against the bleachers. "I'm just swamped! Unless..." He turns to Evie.

"Unless?" She asks hopefully.

He starts to take his backpack off. "If you could knock all my homework out along with yours, then...I mean, we could get together sometime...Hang." Chad says with his trademark grin.

Evie smiles nervously and takes his bag, hugging it to her chest. "Okay!"

Chad smiles and pats her. "Thanks, babe."

"Yeah!" Evie says, then Chad leaves her dreaming. "Bye."

I start to get off the bleachers, but Doug gets in first. "I couldn't help but overhear---"

"Are you stalking me?" Evie demands.

"Technically...Yes." Doug admits. *Smooth, Dougie.* "I too have a fascination with Fairy Godmother's wand. Which is another reason I look forward to the coronation!" He stands in front of her. "Perhaps we could sit next to each other and discuss its attributes?" He squeaks.

Evie walks closer. "Are you saying they use it in the coronation?"

"Yes. And asking you out?" he swells as he waits for her answer. I almost hope for Doug's sake she says yes. Evie couldn't hope for a better guy.

She laughs and smiles at him, but she still walks away. I slide through the gaps in the bleachers next to Doug.

"Ellie! I didn't see you! Um. Please tell me you didn't see that?" Doug begs.

"Sorry, Dougie. I saw that whole thing. Don't stalk her!" I lightly swat his arm.

He shies away. "But did you see her? She's so..." He sighs. "She'll never notice a nerd like me."

"Dude, seriously, get over it. Evie is super nice, she'll come to her senses. I just hope it's before Chad makes her do something stupid." I worry.

He brightens. "Do you think I should ask her out again?"

I laugh. "Dougie, no boy has *ever* asked me out. I have no experience on that. If you think you should ask her out, then by all means! One thing I will say, though. Did you notice all of them are focused on FG's wand?"

He squints at Evie's disappearing figure. "Well, I suppose so. But growing up somewhere without any magic probably made them want to see some."

"But they have. Did you not see Jane's hair yet?" I ask. "Mal used magic to make it longer."

"Wait, really?" Doug's eyes bulge. "They're not supposed to use magic, are they?"

"FG never really specified." I say.

Doug shrugs and walks off. I go to my dorm and change into comfy jeans and a dark blue shirt with a icy blue sweater over it. I twist my hair back in a braid and go to find Evie so I can talk to her. But when I finally get to her dorm, she's not alone.

I knock on the door and Evie opens it up. She smiles instantly. "Ellie! Come on in, we're just talking." She goes back to her sewing machine. I see Mal on her bed drawing in a brown book filled with scrawly writing. She glances up once to grin at me. I see Jane hanging in the back. She smiles at me then goes back to talking to Mal.

"Mom said 'if a boy can't see the beauty within, then he's not worth it.' Can you believe it? What world does she live in?" Jane wails.

"Auradon." Mal and I say together. She looks up to grin again.

"Mal." Evie says. "Do you like?" She holds up a gorgeous black-blue dress.

"Evie, did you *make* that?" I gush.

She blushes. "Yes. What do you guys think?"

"It's amazing." I tell her.

Mal looks up to see it. "Yeah. It's cute. Brings out your eyes."

Evie glances down at it. "I know."

"Evie, do you think you could make me something like that?" I ask.

She smiles big. "Of course! After I finish this. What would you like?"

"Anything. Make it up as you go." I tell her. "You're amazing with clothes."

Jane, oblivious to our conversation, sits down on Evie's bed. "I'll never get a boyfriend." She moans.

"Boyfriends," Mal blows on her page. "Are overrated."

"And how would you know, Mal?" Evie asks. "You've never had one."

"That's 'cause I don't need one, E. They're a waste of time." She tells Jane.

Evie gasps all of the sudden. "I forgot to do Chad's homework! Oh, no! Oh, no!" Evie rushes over to her bed and grabs her bag then rushes back to her desk.

"And that is exactly what I mean." Mal sighs.

I walk next to Evie. "Y'know, you don't have to do his homework. He's not swamped, we don't get that much homework."

She smiles sadly. "He said he'd hang out with me, though! I just have to finish this, then he'll have free time."

I struggle to find a way to tell her. "Evie, Chad's not---"

"Hey guys!" Lonnie comes into the room. "I'm Lonnie!" Evie and Mal stare at her. "My mom's Mulan?"

Evie takes out Chad's homework.

"No? Anyways, I love what you've done with Jane's hair. And, I know you hate us, and, well... You're evil." Mal grins. "But, do you

think you could do mine?"

Mal looks up in surprise. "Why would I do that for you?"

Lonnie holds up a bag of coins. "I'll pay you 50 dollars?"

Evie stands up and grabs the bag. "Good answer! I need to buy more material. Let's see, I'm thinking... We lose the bangs, maybe some layers, and some highlights!"

Lonnie laughs. "Oh, no, no. I want it cool. Like Mal's."

Evie looks over at Mal. "Really? the split ends, too?"

I snort. Mal slams the pencil on her notebook and Evie in turn shakes the coin bag. Mal groans and slides off the bed. She grabs a new book, a brown one with a gold dragon on the front, and opens it up.

"Okay... Beware, forswear, replace the old with cool hair." She closes the notebook and swings her finger back along with Lonnie's head, and when Lonnie comes back up, her hair magically grows and changes color. I have to admit, it looks good. Lonnie goes over to the mirror to gape at it.

"I know, I know!" Evie sympathizes. "It looks like a mop on your head. You know what, let's cut it off, layer it---"

"No no no no no!" Lonnie breaks in. "I-I love it!"

"You do?" Evie asks.

"It's just..." Lonnie hesitates. Then she reaches down and tears her skirt. "Now I'm cool."

"Like ice." Mal says.

"And I should know!" I say. That makes everyone laugh. Jane comes over and steps in front of Evie. She reaches down and tears her skirt too. Then she gasps in horror.

"What did I just do? Mom's gonna kill me!" Everyone starts

laughing. Jane and Lonnie leave after that, and I'm getting ready to. Jay and Carlos come in, and I hesitate.

"Hey guys? Ben's probably asked this already, but... is there anything that you needed?"

All of them stare at me. "Why?" Carlos finally asks.

I twirl with my braid. "I don't know. I guess, I just feel like... You guys are a lot nicer than most of the people at this school. To me, at least."

Carlos smiles. "Thanks, I think?"

Mal shakes her head. "Not that we know of, though."

"Oh, ok." I turn to leave.

"Wait!" Mal shouts. I turn back around. "Is it true that we all get to go to Ben's coronation?"

"Yeah. the whole school goes." I say.

"Wow. That is beyond exciting." Mal says, playing with a piece of her hair. "Do you think that it's a possibility that the four of us could stand in the front row next to the Fairy Godmother just so that we can..." She sucks in a breath. "Soak up, all that goodness?"

I sigh. "I wish you could, just to smash it in Audrey and Ch---" I glance at Evie. "Um, but, no. Up front, it's just Ben, his folks, and his girlfriend."

"And his girlfriend?" Mal asks.

"Yeah, I'm sorry." I say.

Mal stares in space for a second then starts to push me out. "OK thanks bye!"

"Oh ok, uh bye!" I say just before she closes the door. Wow, these kids are strange.

Cookies, Monsters

[image]

"Lonnie. Hey. *Lonnie."* I snap my fingers in front of her face. She blinks in surprise then turns to me.

"What? Sorry, I was dozing off."

I nod towards our History teacher. "He asked you a question."

Lonnie goes pink. "Can you repeat that, please?"

Cogsworth sighs. Why they picked him to substitute today, I have no idea. He has absolutely no patience. "When did King Adam build this school?"

Lonnie chews on her lip. "Um. Around 300 years ago?" I bite my lip to keep from laughing. The only reason any of us know *that* fact is from King Adam's speech he gives.

"The correct time would be better, but yes. You hit it close. WHAT TIME IS IT?" he yells. the thing about Cogsworth is that he *never* has a watch on him, for some reason.

"5:55." We all chorus.

He sighs. "You all are dismissed early. But remember you have a test tomorrow at exactly 8:04 on the dot!"

All of us scramble to pack up and sprint out the door. Lonnie catches my arm first. "Wait! Ellie, can you help me? You do this all so easily. Is there some way I can study with you tonight?"

I smile. "Sure! Do you want to come to my room? Or should we go to yours? Because Jane right now..." A sour feeling comes up in my stomach. Jane's been acting a lot different now. Ever since the hair, she's been hanging out with Audrey more and spending time with me less. ANd she sends me dirty looks every time I get near her.

Lonnie doesn't notice my change in attitude. "Sure! Come by my dorm around 7:00, ok? On the dot!" She says, imitating Cogsworth.

I laugh and wave goodbye. I walk back to my dorm and find Jane and Audrey in there.

"Oh! Hi Audrey. Jane. What are you guys doing here, I thought you were going to go watch tourney practice?" I say. I tug on my gloves as best I can.

Audrey scoffs. "It's her dorm, Ice Queen."

"I realize that, Sleeping Ugly." I snap. "Jane, why is *Audrey* here?"

Jane smirks. "Um, because we're studying? Duh. And this is my dorm, I can have who I want in here. And at least I have friends I can bring in here, Ice Queen."

"I have friends!" I shout. I clench my fists to fight my urge to pull my gloves off.

"Yeah, VK's!" Audrey says. "We've always said that you'd go there, but we everyone knows the VK's are planning something bad, and *you're* involved. Don't deny it."

"I don't *have* to, because I'm not!" I yell. Tears gather in my eyes and freeze on my skin. What happened to Jane? "The VK's aren't like you think! They don't want to hurt us!"

Jane snorts and tosses her hair. "Says you. Your deadline was *yesterday*. The second you give someone the reason, they'll have to force you to give them up. Get 'em away now, before you embarrass yourself!"

A crackling sound reaches my ears. I look down to find my gloves made of ice. I tap them and they both shatter onto my dorm floor. Jane and Audrey stare at the remains. Then they both burst into wild laughter.

"This proves it! You can't control them, Ice Queen!" Audrey points at the melting shards. "Go ahead! Try and use your powers! I dare you!"

"No--I--" But my panic is too much, and ice starts to creep from where I stand, coating the room in sharp icicles. Audrey and Jane yelp and climb on top of Jane's bed. I close my eyes and focus on my mother's voice. *You can do it, Ellie. You can bring it back. Love melts ice. Every time.*

I open my eyes again to see the ice receding back to me. Audrey and Jane are nowhere in sight. I let a sob escape me and fall hard on my knees. It's too much. This is too much.

No. I breathe in and out slowly until I calm down. I stand shakily. I have to prove I can control them. I check my watch. Oh, jeez, how long was I sitting there? It's been and hour! It's past seven! I scramble to me feet and rush to Lonnie's dorm room. I knock on the door breathlessly and she opens it up a second later.

"Hi Ellie!" Then her smile drops. "Are you okay?"

"Um, yeah." I choke. I straighten up. "Why?"

"You look like you've been crying. And, um, when you cry, it's kind of obvious. C'mere." She pulls me to her mirror. She's not wrong, my eyes are rimmed in blue-ish pink.

"Ugh. Sorry. Just...Please ignore it. What do you want to work on first?" I plead.

She gives me a *I-am-only-dropping-this-for-now* look. "Why don't we start with villain stories? those are easy."

I roll my eyes. "Okay, I'm going to give you a scenario and you have to guess the villain, ok?"

"Sure."

"I'll get you, my pretty!"

"Wicked witch of the...West?" Lonnie guesses.

"Yep. Dorothy is the hero, guess that too from now on. It'll help." I tell her.

She breathes in. "Okay. Next one? Bring it on!"

"Ok, let's see... Ah! Achoo, zzz, hmph, yay, uhhh---"

"The dwarves!" She breaks in. "Snow White, and Evil Queen. You named Sneezy, Sleepy, Grumpy, Happy, and Dopey before I got it."

"Spot on." I smile. "Okay, this one's harder. Strange clouds?"

"Oh... I know this." She presses her hand into her forehead. "OH! Pocahontas! That's what she called the ships! And villain is... Ratcliffe!"

"Yep! Okay, last one. You've pretty much got this section." I sort through my notes and grin when I see one. "You should know this quote, it rated top 10 on funniest things to say. 'You don't meet a girl like that every dynasty'."

She gives me a *look*. "Seriously? My mom! And Shan-Yu is the villain."

I clap. "Nice! Okay, next round of questions... Kingdoms. Your mom?"

"China."

"Pocahontas?"

"England...and America, technically."

"My mother?"

"The North Mountain, technically, because she gave Arendelle to your Aunt Anna and Uncle Kristoff." She smiles.

"Phew! That was the last one. I recommend you look over dates and powers, though. I know everybody thinks Ariel can turn into a mermaid, but that was just to get her daughter Melody back. Triton turned her back, not herself." I look down at my watch. It's 9:00!

"I'm going to go get snacks. You want anything?" She asks, getting up.

I shrug. "I can't think of anything, but I am hungry. I'll come with you."

She smiles and links her arm through mine. "Cool! The kitchens are probably empty right now, we should have it to ourselves." She leads me downstairs and outside the kitchen door. "I hope I see Mal. I want to tell her what all the girls think of their hair!" I nod and we keep going. Voices float down the hallway as we make our way there.

"...protein-based hormones than a reflex tear." Evie's voice says.

"Listen to you!" Mal says.

"Yeah, I knew that." Jay's voice joins in.

"Did not." Carlos argues.

"Yeah, I did."

Lonnie pushes the door open and we walk inside. "Mal! There you are! I was looking for you. You know, all the girls want you to do their hair." I don't think Lonnie notices that all of them are suddenly fidgety, and that Mal not-so-discreetly covered something up with a napkin.

Lonnie leans forward to look at what Mal is making. It looks like cookie batter. "Midnight snack, huh? What you guys making?" She leans forward more and dips her finger into the batter.

"Nothing special, just cookiOH NO NO NO!" Mal yells with her friends.

Lonnie looks back in surprise. "What? I'm not gonna double-dip!" I look into the cookie bowl. I kinda wanna try some, but after their reaction, I'm not sure I should.

"Feel... anything?" Evie asks nervously.

"Yeah, like maybe it might be missing something?" Mal adds quickly.

Jay suddenly moves forward. "Hey there."

Lonnie watches him awkwardly for a second. "Could use some chips." She answers Mal and Evie. "Ellie? Chips?"

I nod and go to the fridge and pull out a cup of chocolate chips.

"Chips?" Jay asks.

Mal gives a huge sigh and slaps the table. "And those are...?"

I look weird at her. "Chocolate chips. Just the most important food group!" I roll my eyes and hand the bowl to Lonnie. Only I notice frost coats the bottom. But since it was in the fridge, Lonnie just grabs a handful and drops it into the cookie mix.

"Wait, didn't your mom ever make you guys like chocolate chip cookies?" she pops one into her mouth when they all turn to stare at her. "Like, when you're feeling sad, and they're fresh from the oven with a big old glass of milk and she just makes you laugh and puts everything into perspective and..." She notices all the sad looks on the VK's faces. "Why are you all looking at me like that?"

I want to signal her to stop. She has to shut up!

Mal shakes her head and starts stirring. "It's just different where we're from."

Lonnie glances around. "Well yeah, I know, I just--you know, I thought---even villains love their kids...?" she trails off. Mal looks ready to cry.

"Oh... How awful." Lonnie takes Mal's hand. I actually do start crying, and for once my tears don't freeze. Mal glances at me then lunges towards me, wiping the tear off my face and flicking it into the bowl.

"Yeah, well, big bummer, but we have to get these into the oven, so thank you so much for coming by, really! Really, have a good night.

See you tomorrow, evil dreams!" she shoves us both out the door. I touch my now dry cheek and turn to Lonnie.

"Okay... that was weird." I admit. Lonnie nods.

Thank you so much for the few peoples that read this, I hope it doesn't disappoint! Please comment on what you think should happen, and what you actually think about the story!

You Didn't Mention This

[image]

I walk outside from my dorm and give a huge yawn. I'd had to stay up a while longer quizzing Lonnie, then I'd had to go find someone to take me to my Mom's castle for a new pair of gloves. When I told her about my old ones shattering, she'd gone a grayish color.

"Oh, please. No. Anything but that." She'd whispered. But when I asked her what she meant, she'd forced a smile and waved the worry away. She'd found me another pair of gloves, but these are a deep midnight blue that only barely reach past my wrists. I sigh and tug on them. At least they match my cheer outfit better.

I cross the courtyard, tugging on my limp hair to try and hide my face better. Word of my Audrey and Jane's encounter with me spread like wildfire. I can see people hiding their mouths behind their hands as I walk. I feel like a dead weight has been shoved onto my shoulders. It wasn't my fault!

I drop down at a table and observe people by their lockers. I recognize Mal, and Jay when he comes over. He stands by her and says something that makes her very mad. She yells at him then snaps in his face. But he grins and walks away again. Weird. I don't think I'll ever get these kids. Then I notice Audrey talking to Ben, gesturing to the girls crowding around Jay's outstretched hands and yelling thanks at Mal. Ben says something that Audrey interrupts. She pecks his cheek and walks away again. Mal slams her locker shut and says something that makes Ben laugh. Mal holds up a baggie with what looks like a cookie inside. She and Ben exchange a few words before she takes the cookie out of the bag and starts to eat it. He snatches it away and takes a huge bite. Ouch. He's going to regret that during the game.

Then I notice the other VK's crowding up to him. I get up to take a closer look. I stand just underneath the locker area.

"...Warm, sweet...Mal, have you always had those little golden

flecks in your eyes?" he asks. I cover my mouth to stop a laugh. *That's* a little forward!

"How ya feeling, bro?" Jay asks.

"I feel...I feel... I feel like... Like singing your name! MAAL! MA--" The 'Mal's' are cut off and muffled all of the sudden. Jay and Carlos lead Ben away to the game and I swing myself up over the bars.

"Evie! Mal! What did you do to Ben?" I ask. They both look guilty.

"Um...You heard that?" Evie asks.

"Um, *cha.* I'm pretty sure the whole school heard the MAL'S!" I snicker. "How did you get him to do that? It was hilarious! I mean, I feel kinda bad for Ben. But still!"

They both look relieved. "You're not mad?"

"Of course not! Give me whatever you used so I can use it on Chad! Except maybe I'll make him sing somebody else's name." I shudder. "He's not exactly nice to me."

Evie looks solemn. Crud, I forgot about her crush! "Hey Evie, maybe we could make Chad like you!" I suggest.

She brightens a tiny bit. "I suppose. But we only made the one batch of cookies, and *your* tear was hard enough---ow!" She complains when Mal elbows her.

I roll my eyes. "Come on, guys. I figured you used the tear for a potion or something. Normal people don't flick tears into cookie bowls."

"You *knew?"* They both exclaim.

"*Cha!* But don't worry... Even if I did tell someone, they wouldn't exactly believe me right now." I try to make it a joke, but Evie reaches over and hugs me anyway.

"I heard about last night. Don't worry, Mal was scheming last night. She'll come up with something eventually!"

"E!" Mal says. "I'm not *scheming,* we've got better stuff to do! Not that I won't get them back," she promises. "I'm just more focused on other stuff right now."

"That's fine." I assure her. "You don't have to. Really."

"Is that *her?"* I hear behind me. I turn ever so much to see Poppy and Petra Pan staring at me and whispering behind their bright red hair. I sigh and start to walk away. To my surprise, Mal and Evie join me on either side of me and walk next to me all the way to the field. I take one look at the cheer squad's warning faces and decide I don't want to cheer today. And I don't regret that decision once throughout the game, watching them dance around in a springy jump.

"They're not putting Jay or Carlos in!" I yell in dismay near the end of the game. "We're tied! They might never get to even play!"

"I know!" Evie yells. "Look! Chad's going in---again!"

I watch Jay say something to Chad. Chad in turn hits Jay lightly with his wood spoon. Coach says something to Jay and Jay pulls Carlos off the bench. Carlos sits back down and Jay pulls him up again.

"Look!" I point at them. "I think they're going in!"

"WHOO!!" Evie screams with me as Jay and Carlos run in. Mal smiles but doesn't cheer with us. Jane dances around in her knight costume. The game starts up again and the ball goes back and forth, but I only see Carlos doing some weird crouching-down motion to trip some player up. I crack up and point out to Evie and Mal when he starts dancing around in front of the fallen player.

"GET OUT OF THE KILL ZONE, JAY!" I yell. But he dodges everything with ease. And they're close... close...

"AWW!!!!" the whole crowd screams on our side. The Falcons blocked it! But the game keeps going, with 23 seconds left and Jay passing the ball to Ben, then Carlos going down and Jay dragging Carlos along with him, literally using Carlos as a shield in the kill

zone.

"I THINK THEY MIGHT DO IT!" I yell in Evie's ear. She grins ear to ear at me and nods. Jay gets the ball again and Carlos yells at him in front of the goal, bouncing the ball into the air then crouching down to let Jay jump over him. Jay passes the ball to Ben, and Ben rockets it towards the goal, and---

"HE SCORES!!!!" the announcer screams over all our excited shrieks. I look over at Mal, who's covering her ears at the loud noise, not even bothering to stop Evie from hugging her. The announcer keeps going on and on, until---

"Excuse me? Excuse me, can I have your attention please?" All of us go silent. Mal looks worried.

I nudge her. "Hey. What could he possibly be wanting to say? 'Ey, oh, nice job guys.'" I say, dropping my voice down. Evie laughs.

Ben hops up on the pedestal. "There's something I'd like to say!" Ben looks around and Audrey smiles up at him.

"Give me an 'M'!" Ben shouts, moving his arms to form it.

"M!" We all shout. Mal looks horrified.

"Give me an 'A'!"

"A!"

"Give me an 'L'!"

"L!"

All of us are still spelling, but Mal is frozen. She's gaping at Ben. I elbow her. "You brought this upon yourself." I mutter. She stays frozen.

"WHAT'S THAT SPELL?" Ben asks.

"Mal!" Everyone shouts, Mal looks annoyed now. Evie shakes her in glee.

"Come on, I can't hear you!" Ben encourages.

"MAL!"

"I love you, Mal! Did I mention that?" Ben asks.

Audrey makes a whining noise and runs off. Serves you right.

"Give me a beat!" Ben points to Doug, who instantly shouts "UNO DOS TRES QUATRO!"

"Oh, my God!" Evie says. "Cookie!"

"What was in that cookie?" Mal asks in dismay.

"Ben's crazy love for you!" I squeal. I hug her and for once I don't leave a hint of cold.

♫ Did I mention ♫
♫ That I'm in love with you? ♫
♫ Did I mention ♫
♫ There's nothing I can do ♫
♫ And did I happen to say ♫
♫ I dream of you everyday ♫
♫ But let me shout it out loud ♫
♫ If that's okay-ay-ay (Hey!) ♫
♫ If that's okay (Hey!) ♫

Carlos and Jay look *way* too happy for Mal's comfort. I don't think they'll ever let her live this down.

♫ I met this girl that rocked my worldv
♫ Like it's never been rocked ♫
♫ And now I'm living just for her ♫
♫ And I won't ever stop ♫
♫ I never thought it can happen to a guy like me ♫
♫ But now look at what you've done ♫
♫ You got down on my knees ♫

Ben rolls on the ground like a dog, and I crack up. This is too much. This is *Prince Ben!*

♫ Because my love for you is ridiculous ♫
♫ Because my love for you is ridiculous ♫
♫ I never knew (Who knew?) ♫
♫ That it can be like this ♫
♫ My love for you is ridiculous ♫

Evie shakes Mal along with the music, and Mal offers a small smile.

♫ My love is R-I-D-I-C-U-L-O-U-S! (R-I-D-I-C-U-L-O-U-S!) ♫
♫ It's (RIDICULOUS!) ♫
♫ Just (RIDICULOUS!) ♫
♫ And I would give my kingdom for just one kiss ♫

♫ Well, did I mention... ♫
♫ That I'm in love with you ♫
♫ And did I mention ♫
♫ There's nothing I can do ♫
And did I happen to say? ♫
♫ I dream of you everyday ♫
♫ ♫ But let me shout it out ♫
♫ If that's okay-ay-ay (Yeah!) ♫
♫ If that's okay ♫

♫ I gotta know which way to go ♫
♫ C'mon gimme a sign ♫
You gotta show me that ♫
♫ You're only ever gonna be mine ♫
♫ Don't want to go another minute ♫
♫ Even without you ♫
♫ That's if your heart just isn't in it ♫
♫ I don't know what I'd do. ♫

Ben catapults forward from a group of people like those trust falls, and Mal covers her mouth.

♫ Because my love for you is ridiculous ♫
♫ I never knew (Who knew?) ♫
♫ That it can be like this ♫
♫ My love for you is ridiculous ♫
♫ My love is R-I-D-I-C-U-L-O-U-S! (R-I-D-I-C-U-L-O-U-S!) ♫

♫ It's (RIDICULOUS!) ♫
♫ Just (RIDICULOUS!) ♫
♫ And I would give my kingdom ♫
♫ For just one kiss ♫
♫ C'mon now! ♫

Ben takes off his jersey and throws it at Mal, who actually catches it. A bunch of girls look sullen and try to steal it, but I rip my gloves off and glare at them. Ben rides the two-person horse over to Mal's bleachers and hops off in trust-fall again.

♫ Because my love for you is ridiculous ♫
♫ I never knew (Who knew?) ♫
♫ That it can be like this ♫
♫ My love for you is ridiculous ♫
♫ My love is R-I-D-I-C-U-L-O-U-S! (R-I-D-I-C-U-L-O-U-S!) ♫
♫ It's (RIDICULOUS!) ♫
♫ Just (RIDICULOUS!) ♫

Ben gets catapulted cheerleader-style up to the bleachers and body-surfs to Mal. I squeeze away so he can be next to her.

♫ And I would give my kingdom ♫
♫ For just one kiss ♫
♫ C'mon now! ♫

Ben comes to a stop in front of a now grinning Mal and actually tries to kiss her! She yelps and kind of laughs it off, but Evie's giving Ben a happy smile now. Ben puts his arm around Mal.

"I love you Mal! Did I mention that?"

Audrey fights her way up the bleachers but noticeably goes around me. She jerks the mic away. "Chad's my boyfriend now!"

"Hey hey hey!" Chad puts it, fist-pumping the air.

"And I'm going to the coronation with him." Audrey continues. "So I don't need your pity date." then she kisses Chad! Evie looks crestfallen, but before I can get to her, Ben grabs the mic again.

"MAL! Will you go to the coronation with me?"

She grabs the mic too. "YES!"

"She said yes!" Ben cheers to the crowd. Everyone starts clapping but Jay comes up.

"Come on Ben! The whole team is waiting for ya!"

"Bye!" Mal calls after him. Evie pretends not to care, but a tear slips down her cheek and I squeeze my way over to her.

"I feel really sorry for Audrey." I tell her.

"You do?" Evie asks.

Mal breaks in. "Yeah. I feel like if she were talented like you, and she knew how to sew, and knew beauty tips that she wouldn't need a prince to make her feel better about herself." Evie smiles and laughs. She looks up at both of us.

"I guess I am kind of talented." She admits.

"And humble, too!" I add. They both laugh.

"You are definitely gifted." Mal tells her.

"Thanks, M. And you, too, Ellie." Evie says.

"And there he is! Jay, the most valuable player! How do you like that?" the announcer says as the team lifts Jay and the gigantic trophy up on their shoulders.

I think I like that just fine. These kids deserve this. More than anyone, I should think.

Hope you liked this chapter! Please comment on what you think!

Ice in us all

[image]

I suck in a breath as I repeat the facts in my head. I hate tests, especially when Mr. Deley springs them on us out of nowhere. Doug's writing a bunch of stuff down like that will help. Although, for all I know, it might. Evie's the worst, though. The second she heard about a test, the color drained from her face and she instantly reached for her purse. She'd gone even paler and is now rifling through it like her life depends on it.

"Looking for something?" Mr. Deley says, staring at Evie. Evie looks up quickly and closes her purse. Mr Deley takes his hand from behind his back to reveal Evie's magic mirror. Evie mouths something silently.

"Thank you Chad." Mr. Deley pats Chad on the back. "It's gratifying to see someone still respects the honor code!"

Evie tilts her head to the side fast and glares at Chad with all her might. If I didn't know better, I'd say daggers could come flying out. But Chad just stares back smugly.

"It will be my recommendation that you are expelled." Mr. Deley says gravely.

"Mr. Deley, I---" Evie starts.

"That isn't fair!" Doug breaks in, standing up. "Obviously she wasn't cheating since she didn't have that... whatever it is!"

"It's called a magic mirror..." Evie whispers.

"You're not helping. Stop. " Doug says. Then he turns back to Mr. Deley. "Maybe she needed another pencil!"

"Actually, I--" Evie starts again.

"Really. Don't help." Doug says. "Please." He tells Mr. Deley. Mr.

Deley sighs.

"I thought the entire reason to bring VK's here was to give them a second chance." I pipe up.

"You can hardly speak for them yourself, Elicia." Chad says under his breath. I can't do a thing to hurt him, so I fume silently. Mr. Deley stares at Evie though.

"Well, if you can pass this test I'll return your property and let the matter drop." Mr. Deley says quickly, like he's already regretting it.

Evie and Doug both grin, and Chad groans and makes an *So-whatever-you-won't-win'next-time* face at Evie. She glares hard again until Doug pats her shoulder, telling her to get to work on the test.

I tap her shoulder and she turns to look at me. "Hope you pass." I whisper.

"Thanks." Evie says back.

"So, what'd you get, Doug?" I ask, walking to the lunch area with him.

He grins and holds up his paper. A+, of course. I shake my head. "How do you do it? Every time!"

"What, like you *don't?*" he asks, snatching my paper away and sitting down at a table. He waves it in my face.

"A-, so what?" I ask. "I'm not nearly as smart as you!" I notice a blur of blue running towards us, and Evie presses her fingers to her lips. I nod and keep talking until she slips her paper in front of Doug's face. He looks at it in surprise, and I can't help but lean up a little to see her grade.

"For the first time, it's like I'm more than just a pretty face." Evie says, sighing happily. Doug laughs and looks up at her.

"A shocker, huh?" he asks. She drops the paper in front of him and

sits down.

"I wanted to thank you both. For doing that. You were pretty great in there." Evie says.

"Hey, don't thank me. Thank Doug," I point out. "It was mostly him."

"You were great too." Doug says.

Evie taps her paper. "I bet I can get an A on the next test. Without the mirror."

I swear I'm invisible when Doug straightens his glasses nervously. "Well, maybe we can get together and we'll hang out with---"

"Yeah!" Evie laughs. "Let's get together!" I see Mal in the background looking for someone, then throwing her hands up when she sees Evie. She stalks towards us.

"THERE you are! I have been looking for you literally everywhere!" She explodes.

"What's wrong?" Evie asks.

Mal slaps her hands on the table. "Ben. Just asked me out on..." She sighs. "A *date*."

"Nice." Doug mutters.

"OH, the horror!" I exclaim. "Not that I would know, anyways."

Evie smiles. "We can handle this. Bye!"

"Bye," Doug and I say. They walk off together, arguing back and forth.

"You're looking a little pale, but I can fix that with some lip gloss and some blush,"

"No!" Mal groans.

"Mal, I can use the---"

"NO NO NO!"

I laugh. "Smooth, Dougie. Congrats, you big dope!" I jump over the table and hug him tight. He goes red. "You asked her out! Or, she kinda asked you at the same time."

He smiles nervously. Then he seems to realize what we're talking about and jumps up quickly. "I'll see you tomorrow at Family Day. Bye, Ellie!" he reaches down and hugs me. "See you!" He runs off whistling a tune and skipping happily. I snort and get up to leave. He's right, my mother will be here tomorrow!

"Ma cherie Mademoiselle, it is with deepest pride and greatest pleasure that we welcome you tonight. And now, we invite you to relax, let us pull up a chair as the dining room proudly presents - Your dinner!" Ben says. Everyone starts singing the song *Be Our Guest,* and I almost laugh. I am so happy I'm not up there with them. The look so goofy!

"Which one is Audrey, again?" My mother asks. She's awful with names. I point out Audrey dancing. "And where are those four villain children?"

"I don't see them, Mom. Wait! By the chocolate fountain, that's Mal! In the purple! And Evie's there too! Blue hair. I watch Evie take Dude from Carlos and pull my mom over.

"Guys, this is my mom!" I say, tugging her along despite her protests. She hides behind me a little ways. Carlos and Jay look up from the chocolate fountain they're currently drinking straight out of.

"How do you do." My mom squeaks.

"Mom, this is Mal, Evie, Jay, and Carlos. And you know Dude." The kids wave as I say each of their names. Mom waves back then hears someone calling her name and runs off.

"Your mom is sure a talker." Mal says sarcastically.

"Sorry. She's not really used to being in public all that much." I apologize. Mal laughs.

"It's fine. At least she didn't try and curse anybody, like I know my mom would were she here."

"Well, she had her powers taken away because she was scared of hurting somebody again, sooooo..." I drawl out. The VK's nod sadly. By now I've basically told them my life story. I have to say, I really trust these kids.

"Mal! Mal," Ben calls. Mal perks up and walks over to him.

"She's so crushing." I whisper to Evie. She smiles tightly, like she knows something I don't. That's weird. Ben talks with his parents for a minute then they all look over at us. I wave with Evie while Carlos and Jay look up with chocolate-covered mouths and make grunting noises. Mal has us come over to play croquet, which I've never liked playing, so I just hang with Evie. I laugh when Carlos starts trying to get Dude to chase the balls and Dude's butt wags crazily with his tail. I see Queen Leah come over to Mal and talk with her for a minute. Mal laughs at something then Audrey comes over.

Uh oh...

I start my walk over when suddenly Queen Leah gasps. "You!!"

I stop mid-walk, petrified. Then start to run.

"H-How are you here? And how have you stayed so young?" Queen Leah asks in disbelief. A crowd comes around them as I catch up to Mal and put my arms around her. She looks hurt. She shouldn't look hurt!

"Queen Leah, it's OK!" Ben tries. "Maleficent is still on the island. This is her daughter. Mal. Don't you remember my proclamation to give the new generation a chance?"

"A chance to *what,* Ben?" Queen Leah demands. "Destroy us? Come on, you remember, don't you? The poison apples? And the spells??" She says angrily.

"Queen Leah, this isn't---" I start.

"The spells." Queen Leah interrupts. "My *daughter.* Was raised by fairies. Because of your mother's curse." She tells Mal. "So her first words, her first steps, I. Missed. It. All!" She hugs herself and turns away.

"I'm so sor--" Mal starts forward.

"Go away!" Chad breaks in, stepping in front of her. "Stay away from her!" He yells.

"Don't do this, Chad." I hiss through my teeth, stepping in front of Mal's hurt face.

"*What?* They were raised by their parents, Ellie. What do you think villains teach their kids? Huh? Kindness? Fair play? No way, OK? Uh-uh!" He glares at Mal. "You stole another girls boyfriend."

"Hey, hey!" Ben says, but Chad's on a roll.

"You enjoy hurting people!" He points at Jay. Then he settles on Evie. "And you... You're nothing but a gold digger, and a cheater." he turns and nods at Doug, who's seething.

"Mirror mirror in my hand, who's the biggest jerk in the land?" Evie cries, shoving the mirror in Chad's face. It shines with Chad's reflection.

"What?" Chad laughs. "Come on." He swats the mirror out of Evie's hand and I snap.

"BACK OFF, CHAD!" I yell, throwing my hands in his direction. My gloves shatter once more and ice screams its way off my palms and directly at Chad. He barely has time to look at the oncoming storm before the ice hits him full-on in the face and he crumples to the ground. Everyone stares at Chad's unconscious form as I take in what I have done. I look to my mother. She's looking at me like I'm the most horrifying person in the world.

"Mom...?" I whisper. I look down at my hands. Ice trails off them in mist.

"Chad? Chad? Ellie did something to Chad!" Audrey cries.

I gape in horror at what I have done. Then someone's hand slips into mine. "Come on, Ellie." Evie whispers. I don't argue and let her drag me and a dumbfounded Mal away.

My mind is numb as I follow them to Mal and Evie's dorm room. Only once I've sat down with them and glance at the mirror do I understand why mom looked at me that way.

"I look..."

Like a villain.

My once blonde hair streaks in white, and my ice blue eyes literally are glowing. I'm a deadly pale white. Even my makeup has changed. Heavy black eyeshadow and deep blue lipstick replace my normal bland getup.

[image]

I stare in horror at Evie, Mal, Jay, and Carlos. "What happened to me?" I whisper.

None of them seem to have an answer. Then Mal speaks up. "For what it's worth... Welcome to our gang. If you want." She says in a hollow voice.

And that's when the ice starts to take over my heart. Auradon. This is *their* fault. Today was going fine until Queen Leah accused Mal of something she'd never done!

"What about Doug? And Lonnie? And Ben?" I ask. "What's going to happen to them?"

"Who cares?" Mal answers halfheartedly. "They're all Auradonians. They all think the same. I mean, did you *see* the way your mom looked at you?"

Her words are like a dagger in my chest. "Yes. I saw." I whisper. If my own mother could look at me like that, what will everyone else see me as?

"Before you decide, though, hear us out." Jay says. "Can we trust you?"

I hesitate for just a second. Doug didn't defend me. Lonnie didn't defend us. Ben? Who knows what he might have said after we left?

I nod.

"Don't tell on us or anything, but..." Carlos starts. "We've got a plan. To get Fairy Godmother's wand. You want in?"

Ice seals in my chest. These people will pay for this.

"I'm in."

Thank you guys for reading this! Please comment on what you think! I'm not going to be updating during Spring Break, sorry! Sometime after that will be next update. Also, HUGE thank you to @dragongirlgamer1 for your very helpful comments.

We're Not the Rotten Ones

[image]

"Okay, so after we get the wand, you four," Mal points at Carlos, Evie, Jay, and I. "Will go and get a limo as fast as you can. Evie, you still got the spray?"

Evie gives a small nod.

"Okay, so I'll be up front, and once I have it we'll all go for the door. Shouldn't be too hard, once we have the wand there's not going to be much they can do." Mal chokes for a minute then goes on. "So we'll go to the Isle and bring the barrier down. Then, y'know."

"Auradon will be the villain's." I finish softly. Every time I have doubts about this plan, I remember the look on my mother's----my *mother's*----face. No matter what I've tried, I can't get myself to go back to who I was. I even tried dyeing my hair, but it just slipped off.

"Okay." Mal repeats. "Let's go. If we stay in here much longer, they'll think we're hiding. We can't hide. Because we're rotten." She sighs. "To the core."

"To the core." We chorus halfheartedly back. I quickly learned this was something they say. A *lot.*

Mal grabs her bag and shoves her book in. We're all still wearing our garden party outfits, but Evie gave me a dark blue leather jacket that she had made after I had asked her. She apologized for taking so long, but I told her it didn't matter.

Mal leaves first and we all follow her. We find an empty picnic table and sit down. Mal takes out her book and rifles through it with glazed eyes. Not a moment after we sit down, Ben appears.

"Hey, guys." he says cheerily. "How is everyone? Yeah?"

None of us look up. I don't want to see how he looks at me if I do glance up.

"Hey, listen. Forget about it.All right? It was nothing. Forget about it. Let it go. Tomorrow, after the coronation, I promise everything will be okay."

None of us are listening. Evie glances up once but doesn't say anything. Mal just stares ahead. Ben leans down next to her. "I have to go." He whispers. He sighs with his hands on her shoulders. "I'll see you guys tomorrow." He lets go of Mal and walks off.

Doug comes up right after. "Listen, Evie, I wanna talk about earlier today. I just---"

"Doug!" Chad yells from the table next to ours. Doug jerks around to look at him.

"It's my fault, Doug, I'm sorry." Evie whispers.

"No, it's mine---"

"Doug!" Chad yells again, more insistent.

Doug turns around again. "What?"

Chad glares at him. I get it before Evie does. But she does soon after.

"Doug..." She whispers, barely breathing.

Doug starts to back away. "I'm sorry, I can't." He walks to Chad, slumping down on the table without actually looking at them. "Okay."

Evie looks ready to cry as she slams her notebook shut. I put my hand on her shoulder before snatching it back, remembering I don't have gloves anymore. But she smiles at me anyways.

And then, just when none of us could feel any worse, Jane and Audrey come over.

"How long does she think that's going to last?" Audrey whispers loudly. "Mal is just the bad girl infatuation. And Ellie? I mean, seriously? We never took the Ice Queen seriously, but she's really filled her shoes in."

Jane laughs. "Yeah. Mal," She leans down next to Mal's ear. "He's never going to make a villain a Queen." She glances sidelong at me. "Not that you need it, Ice Queen." She smiles sweetly as I finally look up with everybody else at the table. To my surprise, none of the VK's look angry. Just... hurt. And scared.

Audrey and Jane burst into witch laughter and stalk off. I push myself off the table and stalk over. "Hey! Hurt me all you want, but leave my friends alone! I swear you'll regret it if you hurt any of them again. Today was *your fault!"*

Audrey just laughs again. "Oh, look. She's threatening us! How cute! Right, Chad?"

Chad smirks. Doug doesn't look up, his face turning a bright pink. Chad stands up and stalks over to me. "Well, Ice Queen, look around you. What do you see?"

"Sunny weather." Jane puts in.

"Like that'll stop me." I tell her, putting my hand up and letting ice flow off it in mist. She whimpers a bit and backs up.

"No." Chad corrects, wagging his finger. "I see a bunch of kids. You can't possibly hit all of us. Any move against us, and somebody will go get Fairy Godmother to send you all to the Isle. Or *back* to the Isle, in some cases."

Carlos gets up. "She has better aim than you do, Chad. She made the tourney team long before you got in!"

"How would you know that?" Chad asks.

"Ummmm...." Carlos goes red and sits back down. Even though this probably isn't the time, I have to suppress a tiny grin. Chad notices.

"You think this is funny? You brought this," He grabs a chunk of my

snowy hair and yanks on it hard enough for me to yelp. "Upon yourself. FG's deadline was your choice. And you made the wrong one." He shoves me backward with my scalp still stinging and I fall against the table. I groan and rub my back. Now my head isn't the only thing bruising.

Mal opens her spellbook. "Beware, forswear, undo Jane's hair." She says quickly.

Jane's hair shrinks back into her head, bringing the bob cut back. She shrieks in surprise as she suddenly becomes the laughingstock. Carlos helps me off the table.

"Ew!" Chad says. Lonnie quickly checks her own hair to make sure she still has it. The four VK's stand up and walk over.

"There's a lot more where that came from." Mal says. Her voice is steady, surprisingly.

"Excuse me, who do you think you are?" Audrey demands. She has a big grin on her face.

"Do I look like I'm kidding?" Mal snaps. Audrey's grin vanishes. Mal opens her spellbook up and starts turning pages swiftly. Kids back up and scatter from us.

Mal takes a deep breath in and turns back to us. Carlos quickly lets go of me.

"I'm really looking forward to tomorrow." Mal says. She slams her spellbook shut. "Let's grab that wand and blow this popsicle stand." She walks past us all and we get up to follow her.

"We've gone over the plan a *million* times, Mal." Carlos finally says after we've gone over it again. I've been counting, it's actually only been three hundred forty-nine, but whatever.

She growls and slams her book shut. "Fine! We can take a break."

"It's midnight." I point out. "I'm going back to my dorm before

somebody calls the police or something."

Mal sighs, rubbing her forehead. "Fine. See you tomorrow, Ellie. Don't forget to drop by so Evie can give you your dress."

I whirl on Evie. "You made me a dress? I was just going to wear my one of my mom's old gowns!"

Evie gives s small smile. "And that is exactly why I made it. I'll give it to you tomorrow, but I need to finish it first. Shoo!" She swipes her hands towards the door. I laugh and walk out. Carlos and Jay say goodbye as well and walk to their own dorm. I sigh and lean against the wall. I close my eyes and try to imagine what Auradon will look like in less than a day. Auradon will never be the same. And what if we lose? What if FG is somehow able to get all the villains back on the Isle, and this time I'm with them?

I groan and press the heels of my palms to my eyes. I'm sleep-deprived. That's where these thoughts are coming from, I tell myself.

I sigh and push off the wall, going to my dorm. Normally Jane would have the lights on, doing and redoing her makeup to practice for the next day, but it's pitch-black in there. Not even Jane's normal mouse-shaped nightlight is on. I should be curious at this point, but sleep is making me lazy. I just feel my way to my bed and try to sit down.

Then someone puts their hand on my mouth.

Sleep flees in an instant, and my hands jump up to try and get them off, but someone else shoves gloves on my hands that clamp on, sticking to my skin like a glue that burns. I squeak in pain and try to pry the hand off my mouth so I can scream. Where is Jane? Bad or not, she wouldn't sit by and let this happen!

Audrey! She must be in Audrey's dorm!

The light flicks on to show three figures dressed in black. I wrench the hand off my mouth and fling the person away from me. I send a blast of ice their way, but they all duck and grab me again. I kick

and flail as the people drag me off my bed and wrestle me to the ground.

"You got the wand, right?" Chad's voice asks.

"Yep!" Quentin's voice squeaks. Quasimodo's son, the only way to describe him is a sweet idiot. He basically follows anybody who's nice to him and doesn't scare him.

I bite down hard on Chad's hand and he lets go long enough for me to push a scream out of my throat, then a different hand clamps down. Darn it, this one's wearing gloves!

"You idiot, you should've worn gloves!" Ned's voice scolds. Son of Tiana and Prince Naveen, he got Naveen's original arrogance. His mom and dad tried to teach him right from wrong, but he's always had a grudge against me since I got on the tourney team instead of him. (Until I got kicked off, that is.)

I try biting down again, but it doesn't work. Chad and Ned hold me down while Quentin holds FG's wand above my head.

"What do I say again?" He asks.

"Bibbidi Bobbidi boo, you idiot!" Chad snarls, trying to hold me down. My whole body is sore now from trying to get away, but nothing's working! My heart races fast in my chest, beating so loud I'm surprised they can't hear it. Hot tears stream down my face so I screw my eyes shut to stop it.

Why now? *Why now?* They're my stupid powers, you creeps!

I silently bid my powers farewell. Will anyone even want me in Auradon anyway, powers or not?

"Oh, right!" Quentin grins. "Sorry, Ellie. Chad promised cookies! I love cookies. Did you know that chocolate chip melts when you warm in up?"

"QUENTIN!" Chad and Ned both yell.

"Sorry! Bibbodo, no... Bibbidi! Bobbo? Oh, right! Bibbidi Bobbidi---"

"BOO!" Carlos yells, punching Chad in the jaw. Chad sprawls backwards as Ned jumps up and snatches FG's wand out of Quentin's hands. Quentin cowers in the corner of the room, trying to be invisible. Carlos wrestles with Ned for a minute before I realize they both let me go. I scramble up and try to get the gloves off. When that doesn't work, I close my eyes and concentrate on my mother's terrified face. When I open them again, the gloves are on the ground in shatters. Carlos doesn't have the wand, and Chad, Quentin, and Ned are gone.

"Are you okay?" Carlos asks.

"They tried to..." I stop. "They were..."

"Were they trying to take your powers?"

I nod.

"Seriously? Isn't there any security or anything?"

"No." I take a deep breath. "Where'd they go?"

"They ran off. I don't know where. But seriously, are you okay?" He asks. "I heard you scream once and Jay and I ran off to try and find you. We didn't know where your dorm was, though, so it took a bit. Sorry."

I give a snort and run over to hug him. He stiffens a bit then returns it. "Don't apologize." I scold. "You helped plenty. Although I might have some nasty bruises tomorrow."

Carlos laughs then. My door bursts open again and Carlos wrenches away from me. Jay looks at us both then a huge smirk curves onto his face.

"Well, I see I'm interrupting something." He says.

I laugh nervously. "Um."

He explodes into laughter. "And this whole time we thought something was happening! Wait, what happened?" he looks confused now. "Was it you that yelled for help?"

"Yeah. Chad, Ned, and Quentin had FG's wand. No idea how they got it, though... But they were trying to take my powers." I explain.

"They can do that?" Jay asks.

"Not Mal's." I assure him. "There's a really, really, *really* long explanation, but the gist of it is, FG made a deal with my mother that, when I was older, she was allowed to take my powers. It was only later that they decided it should be my choice. Maleficent never made a deal, did she?"

"Definitely not." Jay says.

"Then Mal's powers are safe. As far as I know, I'm the only whose powers the wand *can* take." I tell them.

"Then we better keep that secret. Maleficent would *love* to have powers as awesome as yours." Carlos says. Then he goes red a second later. Jay snickers.

Then my door bursts open again. Mal and Evie come in. "Ellie! Oh my God! What happened? We saw Chad and two other kids running from your dorm's direction and we wanted to see." Evie exclaims. She turns to the boys with her hands on her hips. "What happened?"

"Chad, Ned, and Quentin." I say. "They had FG's wand."

Mal's eyebrow jumps up. "They had the wand?" She says greedily.

"But they ran off with it." Carlos breaks in. She glares at him.

"You didn't get it?" She snaps.

"Hey, I was more focusing on getting them off Ellie!" He says.

"Wait, what?" Evie and Mal chorus.

So I have to explain it all again. By the end, Mal has a murderous look on her face.

"Auradonians!" She grumbles. "We'll get them back tomorrow. In the meantime, why don't you sleep in mine and Evie's room?" She

suggests. I nod and follow them out of my dorm. Carlos makes sure to close the door behind us. The hallways is completely silent. You'd never guess someone had just attacked me. In Auradon, of all places!

Now, sleeping on the ground with a poofy sleeping bag we found and staring outside at the twinkling stars, I think about tomorrow.

How is it I still have doubts, after everything that just happened?

Okay, so I know I said I wasn't going to post during Spring Break, but I had a chance to get on my computer and couldn't wait. As always, please comment on what you think, and I'll see you next update! (Also, shoutout to @dragongirlgamer1 for her very helpful comments. Sorry if I got your username wrong!)

Oh, also, I just saw I Can Only Imagine yesterday, and I actually started crying once Bart started singing I Can Only Imagine. I've always loved that song, but now that I know the backstory, I don't think I'll ever hear it the same way. MercyMe, I Can Only Imagine, listen to it if you don't already know it! It's an AMAZING song!

Breaking Barriers

[image]

(The thing above is Ellie's Coronation outfit)

"Okay." I breathe. "I might just be going crazy, but I have to admit, I love this dress." I tell Evie. She and Mal are already dressed up, but examining myself in the mirror, I can't believe Evie *made* this. For *me.* I twirl around in a circle, letting the cape wind around me. I do notice one thing, though. She didn't make me gloves. I tug on nonexistent fabric and Evie catches my hands in hers. I stiffen, expecting to freeze her, but her hands remain normal. She smiles.

"You don't need them." She assures me. "Besides, they would *totally* ruin the effect. If people are going to call you an Ice Queen, them you better look like it."

She runs over to her dresser and picks up a delicate-looking circlet of white diamond. I barely breathe when she places it on my head. It's not a real crown, but she's right. I really do look like a Queen.

Mal snickers. "Guess how Chad's going to look when he sees that."

"I'm not sure I want to. It would ruin his face forever." I tell her. Evie fusses with my dress.

"I hate those boys right now! Of course one of your bruises shows on your back, right where I decided to end the neckline!"

I swat her away. "Leave it! That way, if people ask, I can tell 'em how I got it."

"Smart." Evie says. "But still!" She tugs on my dress again, then a knock comes at our door. Mal goes over to open it, complaining about her long purple dress all the way. I love it, but she seems to think leather works with everything.

Mal pulls open the door to let Carlos and Jay in. They don't look

like they tried as hard as we did, but Carlos' eyes go wide once he sees my dress. Dude trots in behind him and starts licking Evie's bedpost for some reason.

Evie squeezes my shoulders once she sees Carlos' face. "He's crushing hard." She whispers. I swat her away again. "Shut up!"

"Wow. Ellie---Um, you guys all look---amazing. Uh, you guys look great. I mean, Ellie---Evie, did you make that?" He bursts.

Jay's holding in laughter. "Yeah, and I can tell which one he thinks looks best." Carlos scowls and bends down to grab Dude from his lick-fest. Dude pauses, looking at Carlos like *why did you do that?* before he starts licking Carlos instead. I laugh so hard I double over, and Evie starts fussing with my dress again.

"Don't bend like that! You're wrinkling it!"

The kids singing in the choir just make this so much worse. People are everywhere, and we're stuck on the balcony. Way up high. Where we can watch it all go down, with no way to get to Mal if things go south. I look at Carlos, who looks down our line at Evie and Jay. Their faces reflect mine. Do we really want this? I see my mother in the crowd down below, watching FG reveal her wand. Snow White's babbling about something, glancing down at a card. Ooh, I hope she knows how designed the prettiest dresses here. Evie really is an artist. I look at my mother again. Then Doug. And Lonnie. Panic bubbles up in my spine. Out of nowhere, I grab Carlos' hand. He goes red and looks quickly up at me.

"Are we sure we want to do this?" I ask, feeling out of breath as I say it.

He looks just as unsure. "I don't know anymore. But... It's too late to stop it now." He gestures at Mal, who's taken her place by the wand.

Then the doors open up.

Ben, holding his hands in fist, as if to stop his hands from shaking.

King Adam helps Belle up from her chair as Ben slowly creeps his way forward. My heartbeat roars in my ears, blood pumping harder than I can keep up with. Carlos grips my hand tighter as it starts to go colder. He doesn't let go. I breathe in and out until my hand goes normal again. As Ben passes us, everyone bends in a slight bow.

Ben finally makes it to the front where Mal is and sends her a nervous smile. King Adam bows to FG and FG lifts King Adam's head and turn to Ben as Ben kneels down on the steps.

The entire room is holding it's breath, and I'm the only one who can't breathe.

FG places the golden crown onto Ben's head, then walks back to get her wand. King Adam lifts the glass off the wand---it must have been here overnight, that must be how Chad got it----and Mal looks up at us. She looks scared out of her mind.

Belle takes the wand off the stand and hands it to Fairy Godmother. Holding the wand before Ben, FG starts.

"Do you solemnly swear to govern the peoples of Auradon, with justice and mercy, as long as you shall reign?" FG asks in a breathy, excited voice.

I'm holding onto Carlos so hard I'm sure I've cut off all blood circulation.

"I do solemnly swear." Ben says.

I press a fist to my stomach as if I can kick my breath back into me by doing so.

Fg smiles. "Then it is my honor," She taps Ben's shoulders with the wand. But I'm the only one, the only person in here, that notices someone forcing their way towards FG.

"And my joy, to bless our new king---"

A pale arm reaches over and snatches the wand away.

And suddenly I can breathe again.

I look quickly to Mal, but she's just as surprised as we are. Then I look back. To Jane. The wand is fighting her, emitting sparks and making her twirl around trying to control it. She can't get it to stop, and a lightning beam of light screams out of the cathedral from the wand. The Earth shakes, and I let go of Carlos to start fighting my way to the ground. They all follow me, pushing people out of the way.

"CHILD, WHAT ARE YOU DOING?" Fairy Godmother screams.

"If you won't make me beautiful, I'll do it myself!" Jane says, still trying to control the wand. Ben rushes over to Mal, going in front of her. "Bibbidi---Bobbidi---Boo!"

But nothing happens. It keeps sparking, almost angrily. "Take cover!" King Adam yells. But Carlos, Jay, Evie, and I are rushing to help Mal.

She gets there first.

Mal pushes Ben away and tears forward, wrestling the wand from Jane. "Careful, Mal!" Belle yells. Mal jerks it away finally, just as we push the door open. Jane looks around, scared, like she can't believe she just did all that. She runs to the crowd, disappearing.

Ben runs in front of Mal. "Mal?"

Mal holds the wand defensively in front of her. "Give me the wand." Ben tells her.

"Stand back!" She says.

"It's okay." Ben tries.

"Ben, I said STAND BACK!" She screams.

"I told you so!" Audrey yells, screaming with everyone else when Mal turns the wand on her. We reach Mal.

"Let's go!" Carlos says.

"Revenge time?" Jay prods.

"You really want to do this?" Ben asks in disbelief.

"We have *no choice,* Ben." I sob. I'm crying right now? Why?

"Our parents---" Mal starts.

"Your parents made their choice. Now you make yours." Ben says.

Mal hesitates, staring at everybody. Then, she says seven words that change everything.

"I think I want to be good."

"You are good." Ben says.

"How do you *know that?!*" Mal yells.

"Because..." Ben rolls his head like he's deciding something. "Because I'm listening to my heart."

Mal starts to breathe slower. "I want to listen to my heart, too." She whispers. She lowers the wand and turns to us. "And my heart is telling me that we are *not* evil." She looks at Jay. "I mean, stealing things doesn't make you happy! Tourney, and victory pizza with the team makes you happy!"

"YEAH!" someone yells in the crowd.

Mal laughs now, looking to Carlos. "And you, scratching Dude's belly makes you happy, who would've thought?" We all laugh then. Evie turns to Mal with tears in her eyes.

"And Evie..." Mal seems like she's crying now. "You do not have to play dumb to get a guy, you are so smart!"

Evie smiles big and wipes tears from her eyes. Mal turns to me last. "And Ellie, as much as people have hurt you, some in particular..." She sends a glare Chad's way and he starts whistling as inconspicuously as he can. "You're not a bad person. You never wanted to hurt anyone with your powers, you just loved having

them because they are a *part* of you."

Great, now I'm the one choking back tears of happiness. Carlos grins and grabs my hand.

Mal seems not to notice, because she turns back to Ben. "And I don't want to take over the world with evil. It doesn't make me happy. I want to go to school. "

"That might be the first time someone's ever said that." I break in. Mal smiles but keeps going.

"And I want to be with Ben. Because Ben makes me really happy." She holds up her hand to display Ben's gold Beast ring. When did she start wearing that?

She turns back to us. "Us being friends makes me really happy." She drops her hand again. "Not destroying things. I choose good, you guys." She puts her fist in the center of our circle.

And for a few eternal seconds, we just stare.

Then Jay puts his fist in with her. "I choose good, too."

Mal laughs and Evie puts her fist in as well. "I choose good."

"Well, don't leave me out!" I say, putting my fist in too. We all look at Carlos.

"So... Just to be clear... We don't have to be worried about how *really mad* our parents will be?" he asks nervously. We all laugh then, even Ben and King Adam. Carlos starts laughing then too. "'Cause they're gonna be really mad!"

"Your parents can't reach you here." Ben assures Carlos.

Well, mine sort of can... I turn to look at mom. But she's not watching me. She's watching our fists bumped together.

"Okay then." Carlos says. He puts his fist in. "Good." Mal smiles and turns to look at Ben. She jerks her head towards us and he nervously comes forward and bumps his fist in too. Mal puts her

head on his shoulder happily as the room starts to clap.

And then, a huge crash comes out of nowhere and everyone screams. Green mist swirls through the room, winding it's way towards the wand stand, where it stops. It dissipates around a figure in dark purple and black, with two horns adorning her head.

Maleficent, Queen of Evil, twirls in a circle with glee. "I'm baaaaack!" she sings in a witch voice.

"It can't be." Belle murmurs.

But Mal stays calm. "Go away, mother." She says.

Maleficent laughs. "She's funny!" She snorts. "Oh, I'm very sor...you're very funny. Here. Wand me!" She claps. "Chop-chop!"

Mal seems like she's about to hand to to her. Ben yells, "NO!" and Mal suddenly turns to FG and throws the wand at her. FG catches the wand in a second.

"BIBBIDI-BOBBIDI---" she starts, crossing the wand in front of her.

"Boo!" Maleficent says in a mocking tone. She throws her staff in the air, and I snatch my hand away from Carlos as I make a split-second decision and throw my hands in front of me like an X. Nothing seems to happen, but the entire room goes still.

All except for Mal, Evie, Carlos, Jay, and Maleficent.

And me.

"Psych!" Maleficent says. She laughs and snorts again, and I don't dare move a muscle. I'm supposed to be frozen. I know that. But why aren't I?

Maleficent creeps towards King Adam. "Oh! Oh..." she snatches his glasses off his head and bites the ear of one. "Oh, in another time, in another time..." She puts them back on his head wrong. "*Evil, like me, don't you wanna be mean...*" She sings. "Ow!" she says as she

snatches the wand from FG. I risk bringing my arms back down, and Carlos notices the movement. His eyes go wide when he looks at me, but I signal for him not to give me away and he jerks back to watching the scene.

I back up as slowly as I can into the crowd. I wind my way to where Maleficent is. She doesn't notice me. As I'm passing the glass case that once held the wand, I catch sight of my reflection. I'm not pale anymore.

I'm literally made of ice.

I look back up at Maleficent. "Oh! Oh, no." She laughs. She sticks the wand up FG's nose. "Someone needs to pluck their nose hairs. Where shall we begin?" She ducks under FG's arm. "I know. Why don't we start by getting rid of this?" She points the wand at Mal and Ben's gold ring jumps to the wand. "Perfect fit!" I clench my fists at Mal's hurt face, but I stay where I am.

"Oh! Where'd that helpful little Ice Princess go?" Maleficent snorts again. "I want to personally thank her for all her help. Heard she has some *wondrous* powers."

"Leave Ellie alone!" Carlos says.

"Oh, a Prince Charming, are we now?" Maleficent laughs. She ducks under FG's other arm. "Oh! Excuse me, pardon me, excuse me, the horns, the horns!" She proceeds to Ben. "Aw... falling in love is weak." She moves Ben's crown. "And ridiculous. It's not what you want. Either of you." She tells Carlos and Mal.

"You don't know what I want!" Mal bursts. "Mom, have you ever once *asked me* what *I want?* I'm not you!"

"Well, obviously! I've had years and years and years and...years of practice being evil! You'll get there!" She assures her daughter.

"No, I will not!" Mal says. "And I really wish that you had never gotten there yourself. Love is not weak. Or ridiculous. It's actually really amazing!" She says. I crouch lower being the thrones and creep my way forward to FG. I'm so close...

"I know one thing, young lady." Maleficent snarls. "You have NO ROOM! For love, in your life!"

At that exact moment, I dart forward and snatch the wand out of Maleficent's hand. She yelps in surprise and turns her scepter on me. "How did you stay free?" She demands. "GIMME THE WAND!!"

"Can't freeze someone who's already frozen!" I taunt. "MAL, CATCH!"

I throw the wand through the air. And I know in a heartbeat that as Mal and Maleficent both dive for it, Maleficent's going to catch it.

She's going to get the wand.

Hey guys! Hope you like this chapter, please comment on what you think! Only two more chapters left! Ish. It might be just one. Then I'll be moving on to Descendants #2! Yaaaaay!

Leaping Lizards

[image]

(The picture above is not what she's supposed to look like at the coronation, just a better visual of what she should look like when she's *not* covered in ice. As of this moment, just imagine her with a literal layer of frost coating everything, k? Enjoy the chapter!)

Mal must know she won't get to the wand in time, because just as Maleficent's hand wraps around it, Mal screams "And now I command, wand to my hand!" The wand glows gold and zips into Mal's outstretched palm. "Ha! Ha! It worked!" Mal says in disbelief. I clap loudly before I remember where we are.

Maleficent glares at me then at Mal. "I hardly think so." She mutters. She starts pacing around. "Frankly, this is very tedious, and very immature. Give me the wand, GIMME THE WAND!" she screeches.

"Hold on, Mal." Carlos breaks in. "Maybe good is more powerful than evil."

"It is!" I yell. "Look at you all!"

Maleficent snorts. "Ohhhh please, you're killing me! Arf!" She snaps at Carlos, who backs up a bit. Then barking fills the cathedral and Dude out of nowhere springs up to Maleficent.

"AH! Oh, the breath! The breath! Get off me!" She pushes Dude off of her. Jay darts forward and tries to steal her scepter. It doesn't budge.

"Gaston should be jealous." Maleficent flicks his forehead and he falls backward.

"Jay!" I yell, running down from the steps to join the VK's. He gets up and glares at Maleficent.

"ENOUGH!" Maleficent screams. "You all will regret this!" Black and green smoke gathers around her and grows until we can't see her, and she's as tall as the cathedral itself. Then the smoke dissipates. A huge purple and black dragon is in Maleficent's place. The piercing yellow eyes stare at us. Maleficent targets Jay and I and blows a burst of flame at us. Jay rolls to the side but I manage to divert most of it with a blast of ice.

Jay grabs my wrist and pulls me around a pillar, but Maleficent is waiting right there. Jay slips and falls forward trying to stop from running into her, so I grab him and pull him out of the way as Dragon Maleficent sends another burst of fire.

"COME ON ELLIE! RUN JAY RUN!" Carlos yells. I pull harder on Jay, not caring where we run, but Maleficent is always one step ahead.

"Hurry, guys! Run! Please, come on, just run!" Mal screams.

Maleficent roars and dives for both of us. Silently cursing this long dress, I let Jay drag me back away from the wand stand and back to our other three friends. We barely make it, and Evie jumps in front.

"MAGIC MIRROR, SHINE A BRIGHT LIGHT!" She shouts. Light bursts from the mirror, right into Maleficent's eye, making her land hard on the ground.

"Behind me, E!" Mal shoves Evie behind her still holding the wand. "Leave my friends alone!"

Maleficent shakes herself off, roaring at all of us.

"This is between you and me, mother." Mal says.

Maleficent leans forward to Mal, her eyes glowing a hypnotic green.

"The strength of evil is good as none, when stands before five hearts as one." Mal says. Maleficent's eyes squint from the strain. I can't

imagine what Mal's doing, but it seems to be working.

"The strength of evil is good as none, when stands before five hearts as one. The strength of evil is good as none, when stands before five hearts as one!" Mal yells.

Maleficent's eyes look like they're smoking green. Time stretches on, as Mal and Maleficent fight each other silently, and then the dragon suddenly screams in pain and disappears with a puff of green smoke. Mal lets go of her breath, panting hard. She looks at Evie in panic, then FG unfreezes.

"Oh!" FG says in surprise. We all rush forward.

"What just happened?" I demand.

"I have no idea." Mal says.

"Did you do it?" Evie asks.

"I don't know!"

"No, no, no, no. Your mother did." Fairy Godmother says. "She shrank to the size of the love in her heart. That's why it's so itty-bitty."

I look down to where we stopped. A tiny purple lizard looks up at us in confusion.

"Is she going to be like that forever?" Mal asks, kneeling down with FG.

"Well, forever is a long time. You learned to love. So can she." FG smiles at all of us.

Mal smiles. "I believe this belongs to you." She hands FG the wand. FG smiles proudly.

"And I believe *this*." She takes Ben's ring off the ground. "Belongs to you."

Mal smiles and stands up with FG. "You all have earned yourselves

an 'A' in Goodness Class. Even you, Ellie. According to the events of last night, I'll be needing to keep the class going. This time, for Auradonians."

"Wait, you knew about last night?" I ask in surprise.

"I was alerted when my wand went missing around midnight last night. I tracked it to Chad's dorm room and used it to make him tell me why he had stolen it. I also cancelled your mother's contract so that you cannot have you powers taken forcibly." FG tells me.

"Wait---Then---I get to keep them?" I ask, gesturing down at my frozen body. "But this will drive Chad up the roof!"

She smiles. "He'll never know. This version of your powers was to keep yourself from being frozen. Once I break the spell, you should go back to your former, beautiful self. Of course, if you've changed your mind, I would be happy to remove them for you. It's your choice, dear."

I examine my icy hand. Then turn to my friends. "What d'you guys think?"

Jay coughs. "I think Carlos might be blushing at the fact that Fairy Godmother just called you beautiful before he could."

"Jay!" Carlos moans.

Mal ignores them. "You love these powers, and they just saved us all. I say keep 'em."

Evie nods. "Plus, you look good in ice. It really brings out your eyes." She adds quickly.

I turn back to FG. "I'll keep them."

She smiles and turns back to the room. "Bibbidi-Bobbidi-boo!" She waves the wand and the room unfreezes. Ben's the first one to move, roaring at the top of his lungs and running forward.

"Ben! Okay, okay, we, uh," Mal clears her throat and pats Ben's chest. "We kinda got this all wrapped up here."

Ben stares at her for a second then lunges forward and picks her up, twirling her around in a circle. "Next time I rescue you, okay?"

"Um, I vote on there not *being* a next time!" I yelp.

Mal laughs and pats Ben. "Yeah, I agree. Let's not let there be a next time, okay?" She hugs Ben then pulls back and messes up his crown. It's only when I see Doug dropping Chad from his baby-hold that I think to look down at myself. Sure enough, the ice is creeping back into my skin, leaving it milky white as before.

"Ellie? You okay?" Carlos asks.

"Never thought I'd say this, but yeah. I'm good with this."I tell him. I see Mal talking to FG and Jane, the curtsying to Audrey. I guess some people can change.

"Help!" a tiny voice says. I look down in surprise to see a butler covering Maleficent with the wand case.

"Hey!" Mal rushes over. "Careful! That's my mom." The butler bows awkwardly and walks off. Carlos throws his arm over my shoulder and I grin, pulling Evie in on my other side. Once all of us are in a row, Jay whoops.

"Let's get this party started!"

"Oh-ay, Oh-ay, hey!" We all chorus.

♫ Set it off, set it off, set it off ♫
♫ Oh yeah ♫
♫ Oh yeah yeah ♫

♫ Let's set it off ♫ Evie sings.

♫ Oh yeah ♫
♫ You can make it happen ♫
♫ Ohay, Ohay Hey! ♫

Ben's in the center, belting it out.

♫ Kings and Queens, it's our time to rise ♫
♫ Write the book story of our lives ♫
♫ This is us taking back the night ♫
♫ Ohay, Ohay ♫

He reaches a hand out to Mal, who dances over and takes it without hesitation. Am I the only one who wonders why all the girl's dresses are suddenly short enough to dance in, and conveniently missing the capes?

♫ Break the spell, we were born this way ♫
♫ Be yourself, forget the DNA ♫
♫ Everybody raise your hands and say ♫
♫ Ohay, Ohay, hey! ♫

Evie starts dancing with Doug, and I don't think I've ever seen Doug this happy.

♫ Sound the alarm, get on your feet ♫
♫ Let's set it off and rock this beat ♫
♫ Dance till your heart is wild and free ♫
♫ Ooh, Oh, Oh ♫
♫ Feeling the power, let it all out ♫
♫ Like what you see in the mirror, shout ♫
♫ We got the keys, the kingdom's ours ♫
♫ Ooh, Oh, Oh, ♫
♫ Ohay, Ohay Hey ♫

♫ Let's set it off! Oh yeah (oh, yeah) ♫
♫ Start a chain reaction ♫
♫ Never let it stop! ♫
♫ Let's set it off, oh yeah (oh, yeah) ♫
♫ You can make it happen ♫
♫ With everything you got! ♫
♫ Let's set it off! ♫

♫ Get ready, set it off ♫
♫ Come on ♫
♫ We got to set it off ♫

♫ On the right ♫
♫ Get ready, set it off ♫
♫ To the left ♫
♫ We got to set it off! ♫
♫ Ohay Ohay Hey! ♫

I do not want to dance in this, I'd trip over everybody. I'm completely content to sit with Jane, who apologized a million times until I forgave her. That is, until Jay and Carlos come over and sit on either side of us.

Yo!
♫ It's time to set this thing off ♫
♫ Let's make it happen now ♫
♫ I'll make my own future, ignore the rumors ♫
♫ Show 'em my passion sound ♫
♫ They all told me I should back down ♫
♫ Judgin' me 'cause of my background ♫
♫ Thinking 'bout changing my path now ♫
♫ Nah, I ain't goin' out like that now ♫

Carlos helps me up and pulls me on stage, along with Jay and Jane. I start laughing at Carlos' dancing, and catch Audrey dancing with Jay. Who would've thought? The music swelling in my heart, and me feeling happier than I've ever been, I sing along with everybody else.

♫ Oh yeah! ♫

♫ Let's set it off! ♫
♫ Oh yeah ♫
♫ Let's set this off! ♫
♫ Start a chain reaction, ♫
♫ Never let it stop! ♫
♫ Let's set it off! ♫
♫ Let's set this off! ♫
♫ Oh yeah ♫
♫ Let's set this off! ♫
♫ You can make it happen ♫
♫ With everything you got! ♫
♫ Let's set it off! ♫

♫ Get ready, set it off! ♫
♫ Come on ♫
♫ We got to set it off! ♫
♫ That's right! ♫
♫ Get ready, set it off! ♫
♫ (To the left!) ♫
♫ We got to set it off! ♫
♫ Get ready, set it off, ♫
♫ We got to set it off, ♫
♫ Get ready to set it off ♫
♫ Come on!

3, 2, 1, Uh!

Ooh yeah!

♫ Let's set it off! ♫
♫ Oh yeah ♫
♫ Let's set this off! ♫
♫ Start a chain reaction ♫

Ben tries to kiss Mal once, but she turns away and runs off, meeting him again up on the balcony. All of us are forming chains with our arms, Carlos on my one side, Chad on my other. He doesn't apologize, but he doesn't shrink from my touch. Maybe he can change. Maybe we all can.

Mal's eyes glow green for once instant.

Or maybe the world will always be a place that has both good. *And* evil.

Carlos grabs my hand again, and we start dancing. However much I went through to get here, Ben's proclamation, and these kids, made my life the best it could possibly be.

Hello readers! So, Descendants 1 is officially over. *CRI* BUT! Descendants 2 will be coming soon! Sorry if the ending was a

little arupt, and that Carlos never actually said he liked Ellie, but more will come in book #2! Please comment on what you guys think, and I'll meanwhile try to update on number 2! Have fun in the suspense until then! MWAHAHA!

JK. JK. I'm already working on next round of updates.

WARNING!!

So some of you might have seen the comment BeautyBeastRose left yesterday. It was true, my school had blocked Wattpad on my computer for some reason. I got on today, and I also Emailed my teachers, and they're trying to figure out why it's blocked. It is unblocked for the moment, but for some reason keeps blocking/unblocking itself. Until the problem is fixed, this story is on pause. I'm not sure when it will let me update again. I'm writing this super fast so it won't lock me out again.

I'm really sorry! I'm super mad right now and i hope I'll be able to continue Ellie's story soon!

Cotillion and Confessions

[image]

"Ellie! Earth to Ellie!"

I snap out of my daze, turning to Ben. "Sorry, what?"

"I said, how is Cotillion going?" He repeats.

"Oh, um... Well, Jane's doing most of it, but it's going well." I say. I rub my arms as we watch Mal answer questions from reporters. She looks a bit nervous. Who wouldn't be, bombarded with questions like that?

"Mal! Over here, please! Mal!"

"Only three days until the royal Cotillion! Ever think like you would be Lady of the Court?"

"How does it feel to be the most envied girl in Auradon?"

"Do you like being blonde?"

"Is your mother still a lizard?"

I elbow Ben. "Seriously?"

He clears his throat and shoulders through the crowd. "Okay, okay. Excuse me. Uh, we will let you know if...and when that, uh, particular situation changes." Ben tells the reporters. I shove my way in too to stand next to Mal. She smiles gratefully.

"Princess Elicia! How are your new powers adapting?"

"Is your mother still afraid of you?"

I stare at the reporter who asked that. Ben clears his throat again and the reporters move on.

"Did you ever think you'd be with a villain kid?" Someone asks Ben.

Ben gives a tired laugh. "We're done here." The reporter crowd erupts into questions and complaints, and FG comes in.

"Shush, shush! Shush shush! Shush shush!" She clasps her hands. "This is still a school, so if you are here, you are either skipping, or trespassing."

They erupt into questions again, but she ignores them. "Shush! Shush! Shhh. Shhh. Shhh!" She gestures for them to leave and they sadly start to turn away.

"Thank you guys!" Ben says.

FG nods to us and then leaves. Mal looks at Ben then. "Whew!"

"Don't pay any attention to them." Ben tells her.

"That's a lot easier said then done. Right?" Mal says.

"I know. I know." Ben sighs. "Maybe we should do something. GO somewhere. Get away."

"Yeah!" Mal says hopefully.

"Yeah, what do you---" Ben looks at his watch. "I have a council meeting. I'm so late."

"That's okay!" Mal assures him. Someone elbows me.

"Hi, Evie." I tell her.

"She's crushing hard." Evie whispers. "He needs to do something with her before she explodes."

"I agree." I tell her. "I'm completely invisible when he's here. We all are."

Evie nods. Then she grabs Mal's arm. "If we don't do your fitting for your gown right this minute, you'll be dancing in your bathrobe, okay? Hi." She tells Ben. "Let's go. Let's go!" She drags Mal off.

"Bye, Ben!" Mal calls back.

"Bye." He says.

"Have fun!" I tell Mal, who promptly sticks her tongue out at me.

"KING BEN! KING BEN! PRINCESS!" Suddenly the reporters are back, with all of their annoying questions.

"Princess, who are you going to Cotillion with?"

"Ben, where is Mal going?"

"What will your dress look like, Princess?"

"How did your mother react to your power breakthrough?"

"Shush!" I yell, mimicking Fairy Godmother. "Shush!"

They pause for one minute. Then one person bursts out, "Can you demonstrate your powers for the paper?!" And they all break loose again. I groan and rub my hands together.

They want a demonstration? Fine.

I tap the statue behind us once, and ice crawls up in, making it look wintery. The second all of them are looking up with "Ahh"s and "Ohh"s, I grab Ben's hand and sprint away. By the time they look down again, we're gone. Both of us explode in laughter.

"Thanks, Ellie. I don't know how long I would have been there." Ben sighs. "I gotta go. Coun--"

"Council meeting! Yeah." I say. "Go on. They're probably waiting."

"That doesn't make me feel better."

"No, but it will make you move faster! Go!" I yell. He takes off, running way faster than someone in a suit should. I laugh.

"Ellie! Hey!"

I turn and see Jay running towards me. "Hi, Jay."

"Have you seen Carlos? He forgot Dude by the lake again." Jay gestures to the furball trotting behind him. I laugh and kneel down. Dude happily comes over and hops into my arms. I pick him up, scratching his ears.

"Did Carlos forget you again? How dare he. How can he forget such a sweet dog like you, Dude?" I tell the dog. Most people use baby voices when talking to dogs, but I like to think they can hear us.

Jay laughs. "He probably had a certain someone on his mind when he left him."

"Oh, shut up." I slap his shoulder. Jay's the only one who teases me and Carlos about it, but Evie is the one who prods it on. It's slightly annoying, actually, because I know Carlos will never do anything about it.

Jay smirks and brushes frost off his shoulder. "I'm glad you're not wearing gloves anymore. I never liked them on you." he tells me.

"And yet, I still have the random urge to tug on them." I say.

"And ya always will, until you decide not to." He says.

"You realize that doesn't make any sense, right?"

"Dude! There you are!" Carlos comes running over. "Oh! Hi Ellie. Ummmm..."

"Here." I hand him Dude. "Bye, Dude. Sorry to run off, but I have to find Jane." I tell Carlos and Jay. "Have you guys seen her?"

"No." They chorus.

"Hey, Ellie. Ummmm..." Carlos stops. "I was wondering if maybe... ummmmmmmm..."

"Ellie!" Jane calls.

"Sorry, Carlos." I tell him. Can't be that important of a question, because he just smiles and nods. "Bye guys!"

"Ellie! There you are. So, did you ask Mal what party favors she wanted? I want pen toppers, but the rest--"

"No! I'm sorry, I didn't ask her." I tell Jane. "I'll ask her tomorrow."

"No, I will." Jane says. "I can't focus. I'll ask her before class. Bye!" She runs off again.

Sheesh! This girl has no attention span, not while Cotillion is here.

"Look, there's Mal!" Jane asks. "But I need to find Ben! You go ask!" She shoves me towards Mal.

"Ugh, fine! Don't push. Mal!" I say, coming up.

"Oh, hey Ellie!" Carlos says.

"Hi."

"I was wondering....uh....if you....liked the....carrot cake? Last night?" He sputters.

"I had the ice cream." I tell him.

"Oh. Cool. Uh..."

Jay grabs Carlos away and mutters something to him while they both leave. Evie moves forward.

"I have an opening for a fitting at 3:00. Who wants it?"

"Me!" Lonnie says out of nowhere. "Sorry." She says to us.

"Perfect. I'll take you two later." She says to me and Jane, who'd also appears from nowhere.

"I thought you were looking for Ben?" I ask.

"Couldn't find him." She mutters. "Did you ask Mal yet?"

"No."

"MAL!" She screeches. "I hate to keep bugging you, but the decorating committee needs more answers. So, as much as I hate to, um... you know, um..."

"Bug me?" Mal asks.

I walk off to Evie and Lonnie. "Hey Evie, did you finish my dress yet?" I ask her.

"Almost. You can't see it yet, but it's *gorgeous."* Evie gushes.

"Well, you made it, so I'd be surprised if it wasn't." I tell her. She smiles. Then Mal comes over.

"Oh, Mal, I can hardly wait to see what your wedding will look like." Lonnie beams.

"Me too. Wait, what?" Mal exclaims.

"The Royal Cotillion is like getting engaged to be engaged to be engaged." Jane says.

"I knew it!" Evie says.

"Well, everyone knows it!" Lonnie says.

"I didn't know it! How come nobody told me that?" Mal looks like she's panicking now. "Is my entire life just planned out in front of me--"

"Hi Mal." Ben says, coming up behind her.

"Hi, Ben." We all say.

"Oh! Oh, quick moment!" Jane pulls Ben away and I can see her showing Ben the glass windows. Mal starts to walk off and he turns back. "Oh, uh, see you later, Mal."

"Okay." She says. I walk next to her.

"Are you okay?" I ask, rubbing at my arms. I seem to never be able to be warm nowadays.

"I'm fine. Why would I not be fine? Just nobody thought to tell me I'm suddenly engaged! And I'm going to a dozen different meetings a day, and I want to go back to the Isle, of course I do! Why would I want to go back to the Isle? No, I was kidding!" She bursts, giving an unconvincing laugh afterwards.

"Mal." I say sternly.

She sighs. "Ellie, I just... I don't fit in very well here."

"What are you talking about? You're doing great!" I tug on her hair.

"That's the point. This," She gestures to her hair. "Was magic. I used magic to make it this way, Ellie."

"Oh..." I say. Now I get it. I bite my lip. Should I really tell her? I mean, if it makes her feel better... "Well, you're not the only one who's having trouble fitting in still." I admit.

She instantly looks up. "What?"

I twist my white hair around my finger. "I'm not exactly on the best terms with my mom. She's angry that I didn't give up my powers, because she's afraid of what I can do. Just the other day, I froze a flower and it *still* hasn't melted, which I know that doesn't sound entirely dangerous, but it should have melted by now if I had the control level Mom wants."

"Chad hasn't been doing anything, hasn't he?" She asks suspiciously. "Or Audrey?"

"Audrey hasn't." I say. "She's on that spa trip with the three fairies, remember? But Chad..." I sigh and let go of my hair. "He's not happy that he has to take Goodness 101 with Ned and a few other kids."

Mal drops her books. "Fairy Godmother actually did that?"

"Yup. I was present for one once. It was hilarious. Until Chad cornered me afterward and basically called me a witch." I rub my arms while Mal picks her books back up.

"He what??" She exclaims. "Ugh! Ellie, I'm sorry, I've been so busy, I

didn't even---"

"It's fine, really." I stop her. "Just... don't tell anybody, okay? I want to fit in here, but everybody giving me pity party would make it worse. And, Mal?"

"Yeah?"

"Do you really want to go back to the Isle?"

She sighs. "Sometimes. I mean, life was so *simple* there. You're the biggest, baddest, villain you can be, and you're free to do whatever you want. Here, I just..."

I put my arm over her shoulder. "I hear you. But, do me a favor? Don't go back. Please. I know you're having a hard time. But if you went back... there might not be a way to get you here again. And I don't want to lose one of my friends."

She smiles. "I'll try, Ellie."

Hello, whoever's reading this! So, the blocking thing seems to have been fixed... for now. Sorry if this chapter is a little boring, but next one will be better. Hopefully. Maybe.

ANY-way, as long as the blocking doesn't randomly come back, I'm back to updating every five seconds! YAAAAAAY! Hope it stays that way!

If not.... well, you'll be able to tell by my silence.

Hope you like Descendants 2! (My version, anyways.)

Rulebook? Not in my book

[image]

"Ellie! If you come to my current fitting, I might be able to squeeze you in after!" Evie says, grabbing my arm.

I laugh. "I thought you said it was almost done!"

"Not the dress, silly, your crown! You had one at the coronation, I'm giving you one this time!" She says.

I roll my eyes. "All right. I'm coming!" I let her drag me to her dorm room, where Doug is waiting.

And Chad.

"Oh. You." I glare daggers at him then sit down on Evie's bed. Chad just sniffs and ignores me from his place on the pedestal.

"He's getting his cape done." Evie tells me. She brings a huge blue cape from a box and puts it on Chad. He rubs it like a pet.

"What about peacock feathers! Yeah, bet you nobody's gonna have those at Cotillion!" He says.

"Chad." Evie starts. "When I look at you, all I can think of is...King."

Chad gasps, and I cough to cover my snort. Evie's playing him.

"And fake fur!" She finishes, stroking the line if black-and-white fur. "Fake fur says it all."

"Loud and clear." Doug says.

"Amphitheater in five!" Jay says from the doorway. He gives a nod to me and waits for Chad.

"Why did the coach make him captain instead of me? I'm obviously better." He sighs, almost dreamily. "King Chad, though. I do rather

like that."

"He made him captain because you suck." I mutter.

"What was that?"

"Oh, I didn't say anything." I say innocently. Evie flashes me a smile.

"You know who else would like 'King Chad'?" Chad asks.

"Who?" Evie says.

"Audrey." He chokes.

"She would." Evie assures him.

"Chad! Let's go!" Jay presses.

"Yeah. I'm coming." He wipes a tear away and Evie snatches the cape off his shoulders before he leaves. Once he does, we all burst into laughter.

"Not a lot of there, there." We all say.

"Someone's obviously having trouble dealing with his breakup with Audrey." Evie laughs.

"Yeah, did you see? He was crying!" I say.

Doug grins. "Evie. I've been doing the numbers..."

"Yeah?" Evie asks.

"And, after we collect from all the girls for their gowns and Chad's cape..." He presses something and his computer beeps. Evie looks over and makes a strangled sort of gasping sound. I peek over Doug's shoulder.

Woah.

"Wow! No wonder people work!" Evie says. "What am I going to do with all this money?"

"You could divide it evenly among your friends." I innocently suggest.

Doug laughs. "Well, I think in the next few years, you could buy that castle you always wanted." He puts his hand on hers. "That way you wouldn't need a prince."

"You're right, I don't." Evie admits. She puts her hand on his. "Because I have you."

They sit in silence for two whole seconds before I burst. "Okay, you guys are literally so sweet I'm going to explode. Just make a ship name already!"

Evie and Doug both laugh. Then Evie becomes all business again. "I still need you head measurements, so I can make a crown. Hold still!" She measures around my head once then waves me off. "Go on, before you explode. Oh! I heard someone new's going to be joining the fencing team. Why don't you go see who it is?"

"That's it?" I ask. "That was fast. Okay, bye!" I walk out the door then peek back in once. "Ship name, remember!"

Doug throws a scrap of cloth at me. I duck back out and run down the hallway, laughing like mad.

I know I'm annoying. So what?

"All right boys, let's line it up!" Jay yells. "Carlos, you're with me! Let's go!" All the boys line up across from each other. "Assembler! Salute! Lower the point, masks down. En garde!" All the boys launch at each other, swinging he dull blades around. I sort of wish someone would hit Chad with a sharp one. Just once.

"Keep your center!" Jay yells, swinging Carlos around.

"Eyes on your opponent!" Jay yells, in front of someone. "Up and over!" He ducks under the person as they jump. For a while everybody fights until somebody new jumps in front of Jay. Jay takes his mask off in surprise, while the person remains unknown.

"Get 'im, jay!" Carlos yells. I wish I was down there. I'd tried out for this team, too, until Chad got in with his rulebook. Since the VK's got here, though, I barely have time for sports. So I kind of stopped playing everything. I'm still pretty handy with a sword.

Jay and the unknown person spar for a bit, and this person's fighting technique looks really familiar. They're seriously bendy, and look a bit feminine when the move...

Then they rip off their mask.

"Lonnie!" I yell in surprise. Jane starts clapping on the other side of the balcony, and I join in. I should have known! We used to fence together all the time before I tried out! She'd wanted to try out, too, but had chickened out last second. Too bad Chad's still here, though.

"Not bad!" Jay tells her.

"You should put me on the team." She tells him.

"Hey, w-what?! No, no, no. We'll-- We'll be the laughing stock of the league." Chad steps next to Jay. "A-And what's gonna happen next? We'll have girls playing tourney? Come on, guys." he looks around the room, laughing.

Shut up, Chad.

"So?" Jay asks.

"So?" Chad asks incredulously. "Uh, so, have you not read the rule book?" he pulls the rulebook out of his pocket. Seriously, he keeps it with him? "Section 2, paragraph 3, 11-4. "A team will be comprised of a captain and eight men." Hmm?" He shoves the book in Lonnie's face, then the crowd's. "Why don't you read the rule book?"

"Okay, yeah, but you're down a man!" Lonnie protests.

"Let her in, Chad!" I yell.

"I mean, since Ben had to leave to do all that king stuff." Lonnie continues.

"Exactly." Chad says. "We're down a *man*."

"Jay." Lonnie turns to him.

He sighs. "I'm sorry. Coach trusts me. I'm not gonna stay captain if I just throw out the rule book."

Oh, come on Jay...

Lonnie rolls her eyes. "If my mother thought that way, she would have lost the war." She tells them angrily.

"Pfft." Chad turns to Jay. "Okay?"

Lonnie sighs and turns to leave. As she's leaving, Chad holds up the stupid book. "Rule book. Rule book."

Lonnie stops once, like she's going to turn back around. But she doesn't. SHe's not going to do anything about this? Seriously? This is not fair!

I catch Chad still holding the rulebook in plain site.

Hm....

I raise my hand and shoot a shard of ice at his hand, knocking the stupid book out of his grasp. He gasps in surprise and looks up at me. I glare hard.

"You're not supposed to use your powers, Ellie!" He yells. The room has gone silent.

"And this is supposed to be Auradon, the land of opportunities." I shoot back. I swing off the balcony and hop to one of the cubes on the ground so I can be in Chad's face. "Can't you just keep your stupid mouth shut for *one second?"*

"Wha---She was breaking the rules! We'd be the laughingstocks!" he protests, inching away from me.

"For having *girls* on the team?" I ask.

"Well, yeah! You guys care too much about your hair, and your makeup, to be serious about sports!"

"Are you kidding me?" I yell. You could hear a pin drop. "That's a total lie! Is that what you actually think when it comes to girls?"

He thinks about it for a second. "Yes."

I shove him backwards. He lands on his butt then scrambles up and runs away. I roll my eyes. Coward.

Jay clears his throat. "All right, guys. Practice is over. Let's go."

The crowd slowly disperses. Carlos comes running up to me. "Ellie! That was awesome."

"It's so unfair!" I growl. "Lonnie's amazing with a sword. Why can't she be on the team?"

"I don't know. Rulebook." He says.

I snort. "And that's another thing! If I ever see Chad holding a rulebook again, I'm going to stuff it up his mouth so fast he won't see it coming!" I sigh and calm down. "Anyways, what's up?"

"Uh..Not much. You?" He says nervously.

"You literally just saw what was up with me." I sigh. Now that Chad's gone again, my hot rage has left, leaving me colder than ever. Dude barks and comes up to me, rubbing his fuzzy head against my leg. I laugh and bend down to pet him. "Hey, are you going to bring Dude to Cotillion? You'll need to get a pass if you do."

"I don't know. Um, speaking of Cotillion---"

"I know, it's all anyone's ever talking about." I say. "Cotillion, 24/7! It's like they've never been to one before!"

"I... haven't. Actually." Carlos mumbles.

I stand up again. "Oh! Um..." Whoops. That was wrong. "Well,

lucky, I always end up serving punch with Jane and her mom, anyway."

"Ellie, maybe we should---"

"Skip the whole thing?" This whole conversation is going downhill, I don't know what's wrong with my mouth! Too late to back down now, though. "I wish we could. And---"

My phone rings. I look up to where I left it on the balcony. "Ugh. I gotta go. Good practice, though!" I tell him.

"Yeah." He says. Dude whines as I leave.

I walk out of the practice area and stroll across the courtyard. The grass is greener than normal, like the whole of Auradon is glowing in anticipation for Cotillion. I shove my phone into my bag. I'd missed yet *another* call from my mother. She keeps calling me, but each time I'm either busy and miss it or I decide not to answer. I'll still never forget the look on her face. Ever.

I shudder and rub my arms again, glancing down long enough to see the ice on my arms. I shudder again, for a very different reason, and brush it off my skin.

I keep walking, shoving my hands into the pockets of the leather jacket Evie made for me before Ben's coronation. I love wearing it, but it's as if I'm wearing something that screams, "I'm different! I almost took over Auradon, remember? I don't fit in!"

I sigh.

Auradon hasn't changed much. Goodness 101 has done nothing for Chad and Ned. I don't blame Quentin. He's just gullible. He's sweet, and he bursts into tears every time he remembers it now. It's almost annoying, because he *keeps* apologizing.

"Ice Queen!"

I groan and speed up a bit. I do not have time to deal with this right

now.

But Ned catches up anyways. He grabs my wrist and spins me around to face him. "Ice Queen! I said your name! You shouldn't ignore people, they'll think you're scheming again!"

I look around, puzzled. "All I heard was Ice Queen. I didn't hear my name, I'm terribly sorry."

He rolls his eyes. He looks like Naveen, but he can't play an instrument to save his life. He hates dancing, unless it's with some girl. "Ice Queen *is* your name, or did you not hear?" He reaches into his pocket and pulls out his phone, showing me a post.

It's a picture of me firing ice at Chad's rulebook.

ICE QUEEN OUT OF CONTROL! WITCHES STILL EXIST? PETITION BELOW TO GET HER SENT TO THE ISLE!

And below is listed a number to text to.

My heart thunders in my ears. Ned lets go of my wrist and smirks. "Not so tough, are you now?"

"Go away." Is all I can force out. He busts out laughing.

"Go away? That's your best shot? Gosh, I know people used to say that you belonged on the Isle, but you don't at all! You certainly don't belong here. So where do you belong?"

He leans close to my face.

"Nowhere. Even your own mother doesn't want you, Ice Queen." he puts his phone away and flips his dark hair out of his eyes. "See ya around, freak!"

Cackling like a witch, he stalks off, leaving me frozen in my spot. My blood sings in my bones, those words moving faster than I can keep up with.

Petition below to get her sent to the Isle.

Ice Queen out of control.

Your own mother doesn't want you.

Witches still exist.

And, fear and hate blowing up in me, I run.

"I don't belong here." Someone's crying. Hard. Sobbing, like me. I stop running.

Mal's dorm!

I push the door open a bit. Mal's there, crying hard, back in her villain leather. She takes a pencil box and puts her mother inside it. I push the door open more.

"Mal?"

She bolts up, wiping tears quickly. I make no move to hide mine.

"Ellie! Wh---you shouldn't be---I'm just---" She sobs, still wiping tears away.

"Are you going back to the Isle?" I ask.

She hesitates for a second, then nods.

"Take me with you. Please." I beg.

She seems to notice my tears for the first time. "Why?"

"Look at your phone. They're petitioning anyway." I tell her. Her eyes go wide and she sweeps her phone up, checking my story. She looks back at me.

"Okay."

Hello anyone who reads this! Hope you like! Ellie's choice is a

bit sudden, I know, but I had no idea how else to shove her to the Isle. I had to understand Elsa's character. Elsa was said to be out of control, and was called a witch, when she ran away. Elsa was sensitive, and angry, and terrified. I tried to make Ellie that way. Sorry if it was fast, I tried my best! As always, please comment on what you think, and I'll see you next update!

The Isle of the Lost

[image]

"Okay. Okay!" Mal says. "I...I guess you're coming." She wipes her last tear away.

"Thank you." I tell her. She looks back at me and a bit of her old smirk comes back.

"Nice jacket, but it's not enough. You're wearing jeans already, that's good." She sighs and rubs her forehead. "I'm not E, but here." She pulls one of Evie's older pale blue shirts out and throws it at me. "That'll do."

"You're sure this will get us there?" I ask her.

She turns back. "Not at all. But it's all I've got. Just going to say... on the Isle, magic doesn't work. I'm not entirely sure if that stretches to yours. You sure about this?"

"Positive." I climb onto the purple bike behind her. She blows out once and opens her spellbook. She's still crying a bit, so her voice sounds stuffy when she says, "Noble steed, proud and fair, you shall take me anywhere." She breathes in and closes the book, putting her goggles on and starting her bike.

"You ready, Ellie?"

"Yes."

"Okay. Please work." She mutters. Then she starts her bike and drives right onto the water, trailing behind green sparks. We're moving way faster than I thought we would, and I look back at Auradon once. It doesn't look so bad, from here. It's beautiful.

Then we hit the barrier.

And when I say hit, I literally mean hit. Green magic crawls from where we crossed in, and I almost fall of the bike from the backlash. Mal looks back.

"Hang on, we're almost there." She says. She doesn't look like she's been crying now. We rocket past trashy beaches and filthy stores. People shriek when they see Mal coming and dive out of the way. Mal's laughing and she doesn't stop or slow down. One person makes a squealy sound when they duck out of the way, and I find this so funny I actually laugh. Mal glances back.

"See what I mean?" She calls. We finally stop next to a poster of her and Ben. She curls her lip in disgust and rips the paper off the wall. she balls it up and drops it on the ground. We keep going then until she brings us into a garage, sort of. She gets out with her helmet under her arm. I follow her as she picks a rock up and throws it at a "Danger, flying rocks" sign. The rock hits the sign and sends it backwards a little. The wire gate next to us opens up.

"This was where we stayed when we didn't want to be near our parents." She tells me.

"Like an apartment?"

"Sort of." She leads me up the stairs until we get to a huge space. I can clearly pick out which rooms are for who.

"You paint all these?" I ask, running my hand along a picture of the four of them. She nods and sets her helmet down. She runs a hand through her blonde hair.

"It feels so great to be back here." She says under her breath. She twirls her finger through her hair again and pauses.

"How would you feel at meeting another Isle kid?" She asks.

"Who?"

"Daughter of Drizella." She smiles and takes a deep breath in. "Dizzy. She does hair. And..." She lets go of her hair. "I definitely need it."

I laugh. "Yeah, that blonde is really a stretch from your old purple. Sure, I'll come. Why not?"

She grins.

"Okay, it should only be Dizzy in here. But Stepmother would be fine, too." She stops at a sign that says *closed until midnight.* "Ha! They haven't taken this down yet." She ignores the sign and pushes the door open. I look up at the sign.

Lady Tremaine's Curl up and Dye.

Fun.

I follow Mal inside, then past some weird paint-covered plastic. I grin at the inside. It's covered in paint, and there's a girl with bright red hair sweeping around with headphones on. I nudge Mal.

"That Dizzy?"

Mal smiles and nods. "That's Dizzy." She steps inside and Dizzy looks up.

"Mal!" She takes her headphones off. "Is Evie back too?"

Mal laughs. "As if."

Mal doesn't see it, but Dizzy deflates. I wonder how well Evie knows this girl.

"I forgot that you guys don't open 'till midnight." Mal says. She looks around. "Place looks good."

Dizzy smiles and nods. Mal walks further in. "So what is your deal? Has your grandmother given you any customers yet?"

"Just a witch here and there." Dizzy says. "Mostly it's a lot of scrubbing, scouring, and sweeping. Lots and lots of sweeping."

"Sounds like real Cinderella treatment." Mal says. I stay in the

doorway, not quite sure what I'm supposed to do once Dizzy sees me.

Mal notices. "Oh, Diz, that's Ellie." She points. Dizzy turns and lights up when she sees me.

"I know! The Ice Queen deal was huge news here. Nobody could believe that and Auradon kid helped you guys almost take over!" She says excitedly. "You're really popular here." She tells me. "Can you really do magic?"

I laugh and walk further in. Mal was right, Dizzy's sweet. "I'm not sure if I can still do it on the Isle. I haven't tried yet."

"Can you try?" She pleads. "I think your magic is so cool, I wish I had powers! All I got was a flare for fashion." She poses to show off her dress. I have to admit, she does look really good. I can't help but laugh.

"You're like a mini Evie." I tell her. She seems to grow with that and Mal smiles at me. Dizzy beams and Mal speaks up.

"Hey, Dizzy, you used to do Evie, right?"

"Yeah! I thought of the little braids!" Dizzy says.

"Do you have any ideas for me?" Mal asks.

Dizzy makes an L with her fingers in front of Mal's face. Then she walks forward and takes a piece of Mal's hair. "The washed-out blonde with purple tips? The best of no worlds!" She lets go of Mal's hair again. "You can't see where you face ends and your hair begins!"

I snort and Dizzy smiles at me. Mal goes and sits in the chair facing the mirror, and Dizzy grabs her hands. "Oh, what *is* this? Bored-to-death-pink?" She comments on Mal's fingernails. She spins the chair around so Mal's back is to her. "How far can I go?"

"The works." Mal says. "I mean, whatever makes me feel like me, but you know..." She looks up at Dizzy. "Way worse."

"Yay!" Dizzy says. She grabs a huge pair of scissors and turns back to Mal. I almost giggle at the look on Mal's face.

Over the next half-hour, almost forty-five minutes, Dizzy transforms Mal. She dyes her hair back to purple, then cuts a bunch of it off, then puts a bunch of curlers in it, *then* does her nails (Which Mal rolled her eyes at), and then Dizzy did a big reveal.

"Wow, Dizzy, that looks great!" I tell her. And it does. Mal's hair is once again purple, but it's straight and has bangs in front. It's a lighter shade this time too, and Mal's chewing gum as well.

Dizzy does a cute little bow. "Thanks! What do you think, Mal?"

Mal gets off the chair and close to the mirror. "Hey! There I am!" She laughs and turns to Dizzy.

"Voila!" Dizzy says.

"Voila." Mal repeats. Dizzy beams then turns to me.

"Am I doing you, too?" She asks. "Because I have *so* many ideas. For one---"

"Diz, she just came along." Mal says. "Unless you want to?" She asks me. I take one look at Dizzy's hopeful face and smile.

"Okay. Why not? Just don't cut any of my hair, please." I tell Dizzy. "Other than that, go wild."

"I love you!" She screams, hugging me.

Mine doesn't take as long, only about twenty minutes tops. She doesn't curl mine, but she does put some sort of dye in. Despite what I said, she does end up cutting a bit off, saying that "layers would look great on me." Mal watches the whole time, smiling each time Dizzy makes a comment about my lack of style. Dizzy even supplies me with some jewelry that she doesn't use. My big reveal is a bit more subdued, but even Mal looks pleased.

"Hey! Now you really look like one of us." She laughs. "Great job, Diz."

Dizzy beams and looks at me. "Do you like it?"

I try and see myself in the broken-up mirror. My hair is still mostly white, but it's shorter and wavy, not the mess of curls I normally have. Blue dye streaks down the white every so often, and some of it is pulled back and twisted up. I grin.

"Looks great." I tell Dizzy. "What color dye is that, I might want some more."

She grins. "It's called 'Blizzard Blue.' And it's for sale if you want it!"

"Not now, Diz." Mal says. "But here." She takes some money out of her pocket.

"For me?" Dizzy asks.

"Yeah! You earned it." Mal says.

Dizzy giggles and starts skipping over to the cash register. "Fork it over, ya runt." A boy in red leather and a pirate hat appears in the doorway. He has a hook on his hand. Hook's kid, duh. I wonder what his name is?

Dizzy loses her happiness and hands over the money. He taps the table with his hook. "And the rest of it." Dizzy opens the register and hands him some more.

"Mm!" He says, then turns to leave. "Thank you. Mm-hm!"

"Still running errands for Uma?" Mal calls. "Or do you actually get to keep what you steal?"

The hook kid turns around slowly and grins. "Well, well, well. What a nice surprise!"

"Hi, Harry." Mal says.

"Just *wait* until Uma hears you're back." He walks close to Mal and grins greedily at her. "She's never gonna give you back your old territory."

Mal scrunches her nose up as if puzzled. "Oh. Well, that's ok. Because, I will be taking it." She says.

Harry scoffs and runs his hook through her purple hair. "I could hurt you." He tells her.

Her hand slams down on his hook. She takes the gum out of her mouth and puts it on the tip of the hook. "Not without her permission, I bet." She says, sticking her bottom lip out.

Harry gives a tight smile and turns to leave when he sees me. "Oh! And lookee here! Who's this lass?"

Mal turns to me. I don't want to give my name, but it's only a matter of time before he figures it out anyway. "No one special." I tell him. His silver eyes stare at me. He grins.

"Oh, I *do* know ya! Yer that Ice Queen! From Boradon!" he laughs madly. "Uma'll love this."

I glare at him and go over what Mal said in my head. From what she told him, I'd say he follows orders from the Uma girl. And he carries his hook around...

I grab his hook away and throw it across the room. "Fetch." I tell him. Mal grins. Dizzy clamps her hands over her mouth to stifle her giggle. I note the ice rimming the edge of the hook when Harry retrieves it. So my powers *do* work here.

Harry fits his hook back onto his hand starts to leave. On his way out, he swipes a hand across Dizzy's table, sending everything flying to the floor. He bows dramatically. Then he leaves.

"Great. More sweeping." Dizzy says.

"Don't worry, Diz." Mal says. "Just have Ice Queen here do it." I glare at her and she laughs. "Kidding. We're going back to the apartment, if you wanna come Dizzy."

Dizzy smiles but gestures at the floor. "I gotta get this away before grandmother comes back. Thanks for letting me do your hair, though!"

Mal nods and leaves the store. I take a bit of the money I brought with me and hand it to Dizzy. "Thanks for everything." I tell her. She smiles and slips it into her pocket.

Hope you guys enjoyed this chapter! Next one will be coming soon. Pls comment on what you guys think!

(Also, I really love Dizzy's character. Loved writing it, too.)

You Keep Saying "Welcome." It Doesn't Mean What You Think It Means.

[image]

Back at the apartment, Mal shows me an extra room where I can stay. Her room is covered in purple and green, and Evie's is blue and red. Carlos' and Jay's are on the other side of the apartment and I haven't bothered looking, but the room Mal gives me is basically just a plain gray cement slab stuck together. There's a rickety bed and a couple shelves.

Mal's different here. At Auradon, she strived to be the perfect girl. She played good, she answered questions, she smiled and said 'thank you' and 'please.'

Here, she lets herself go. She laughs at everything, makes fun of anyone endlessly, and doesn't care. She seems more relaxed.

"Does the whole Isle stink like this?" I ask her. "Or is it just your guy's house?"

She smirks. "Nope, it's the pirates. The shrimp, to be exact. You'll get used to it."

I hear something grinding downstairs, but Mal ignores it and goes back to her spray-paint drawing. It's of the four VK's, but this time I'm added as well. She captured me pretty well for a black-and-gray spray paint job.

Footsteps come up the stairs and I sit bolt upright. They stop for a minute and I think it must just be someone on the street or something.

"At least I don't see a picture of me with horns and a pitchfork." Ben says.

Ben!

Ben's standing in the entrance, staring at Mal. Mal whirls around. "Ben." She sputters, a bit of her Auradon self coming back. Like always, she seems to deflate in his presence.

He starts to walk forward and her hand goes up to stop him. He looks at me then. "Ellie?" He says in surprise. "I didn't know you'd come too."

Mal nods. "I left the note for E before she showed up and asked to come. Ben, why are you here?"

"Ellie... What are you doing here?" Ben asks.

"Because I don't belong in Auradon, Ben." I snap. I get up off the couch and twist the silver ring Dizzy gave me on my finger. "I never did. And I may not belong here, either, but it's at least a lot better than Auradon was."

Ben looks stricken as he turns to Mal. "Mal, I'm so sorry about our fight." he tells her. They had a fight? That must be why she left! "It was all my fault, it--it..." He looks down once then back up at her, pleading. "Please come home." He holds up his gold ring. I hadn't noticed Mal wasn't wearing it. What kind of friend am I? Ben looks at me. "Both of you."

"Ben..." Mal climbs down from her perch. "I am home. We both are. You never saw what Auradon did to Elicia, did you? What it was doing to me."

"I---" he starts.

"Ben." I say. "We're not going back."

He seems to fumble for a minute. "I--I brought the limo. It's a sweet ride." he tries.

Mal shakes her head. "I don't fit it, Ben. I really gave it my best shot. And if you think that I can change, I think that you're wrong."

"About both of us." I stand up next to Mal. "Ben, my whole life I've

been told I'm something evil, I'm something that should never have set foot in Auradon."

"B--But I'll change!" He says. "I'll--skip school, have more fun, you know what? I'll---I'll blow off some responsibilities---"

"No!" Mal cries. "See, I'm such a terrible influence! It's only a matter of time before I do something so messed up that not only does the kingdom turn on me they turn on you!"

"Don't quit us, Mal!" Ben yells, grabbing her hand and putting the gold ring in it. "The people love you." he says something else that I don't hear, but I guess I'm not supposed to. I slip a little ways away and sigh inside. There's no way Mal will go back. No way I'll go back.

Ben turns to me. "I don't have a ring... but... Ellie, I'm so sorry. I never realized... I didn't..."

"It's okay, Ben." I tell him. "I'm fine. I actually really like it here. Some people are a bit strange..." (Harry Hook, cough.) "But on the Isle, nobody knows me as the evil abomination. Besides, didn't you see what people were trying to do? They want me on the Isle anyway, Ben. I don't see a reason to stop them anymore."

"Ellie. Carlos came too. He almost didn't come because you went missing in Auradon and he wanted to keep looking." Ben tells me.

I stop. "He did?"

"Yes. Everyone's worried, Ellie, but nobody ever thought you'd come here!" Ben says. "Ellie, you don't belong here! This isn't where people care about you."

"Like who, my mom?" I shoot back. "She won't talk to me, Ben. She tries calling, but the few times I answer she just tries to convince me to talk to Fairy Godmother!" I yell. "She doesn't love me any more than Auradon does, Ben!"

He seems at a loss for words.

Mal's still staring at the gold ring in her hand. Then she speaks up.

"I have to take myself out of the picture." She takes Ben's hand and presses the gold ring in. "Because it's what's best for you, and it's what's best for Auradon."

Ben stares at it. "Mal, pl-please---" he moves forward but she stops him.

"I-I can't do this." She says. She turns away and grabs her spray-paint can again. "You should go, Ben."

Ben turns to me with a pleading look on his face. "Ellie?"

I shake my head. "You heard her."

He doesn't move and Mal turns back. "Ben, please go. Please leave." She tells him. He turns and walks out the door. A single tear goes down Mal's face, but she swipes it away and looks at me. "You should probably talk to Carlos." She whispers. My chest feels tight as I nod. He needs to understand why I'm staying. I can't belong in Auradon any more than Mal can.

I get up and run down the many stairs. The gate opens up and Jay, Carlos, Evie, and Ben stare at me as I come through. Ben looks happy for just a second. "You're coming?"

I shake my head no. "I came to explain." I tell them. Ben starts to walk off sadly, but I focus on the three VK's. "I can't stay in Auradon anymore." I murmur.

"But you're not from here, like Mal." Evie protests. "You're good, always have been."

"Have I? Did you see what they're saying about me? That I'm a witch? Ice Queen out of control? Evie, you have no idea what people say about me. None of you do."

"Ellie, I'm sorry if we did anything---" Carlos starts.

"You guys didn't do anything. You didn't. But I can't pretend I'm a picture-perfect princess anymore. I don't belong anywhere, but Auradon least of all. I'm sorry." I look down to where Ben walked off. "Ugh, where'd he go. I'll be right back." I brush past the three of

them and follow Ben's shape through the mist.

"Ben, come back!" I yell. "Running off's not going to---" A hand clamps over my mouth and something slams onto my forehead. I groan and slide silently to the ground, the world blurring into gray and bright white. Spots dance over my vision as a grinning face appears in my vision.

"Welcome to the Isle, lass." Harry Hook says, then slams his hook on my skull again. The last thing I see is Ben's panicked eyes locking with mine.

Hello again! So, hope you liked this chapter, it took me forever to decide if I wanted Uma and her crew to capture Ellie AND Ben, or just Ben, but I finally decided on capturing both of them. Please comment on what you think, or what I could add or take away to make it better, and I'll update soon!

I Hate You, Shrimpy

[image]

I come to with fuzzy words making their way into my equally fuzzy brain. I crush my eyelids together to try blocking out the painful light piercing through. I open them up slowly, trying to adjust. When I do, I check my surroundings out.

I'm in a wooden room, covered in mold and stored with smelly food. I wiggle my hands a bit, but they're tied behind my back, and I feel the gloves. Ugh. They put gloves on? Seriously? Gloves haven't stopped me before. I close my eyes and try to get them to shatter like before, but all I feel is the painful pulsing in my brain.

My ice is barely a feeble pull now.

I open my eyes again and glance down at myself. I'm not tied to a chair or anything, just on the ground. And with a gag in my mouth. How long have I been here? Where's Ben? Do Evie, Jay, and Carlos know we're missing? They must by now.

I test my powers again, to no result.

A door opens up near me and a kid with a bandana and orange-brown leather comes in. He smiles and helps me up. "Hi! I'm Gil, son of Gaston. What's your name?"

I stare at him and grunt. He notices my gag and pulls it out. I spit the awful taste out and try my voice. Not bad, at least it's not shaking. "I'm Elicia, daughter of Queen Elsa."

"Oh! You're the girl that helped Mal almost take over Auradon!" He smiles. Then bops himself on the forehead. "Oh, I forgot why I came in here. I'm supposed to take you out in the shop so Mal can see you. We wanted Ben to come out too, but Mal would probably kill us if we had both of you out in plain view." He grabs my arm, not hard, and pulls me out of the room. I squint in the sudden bright light and the onslaught of people talking.

Gil leads me past all the people, who don't give me a second glance. People tied up and being dragged around must be normal here, I sigh to myself.

Gil sits me down at the back of the room, right next to the entrance. He waves goodbye and leaves me alone. I wriggle my hands around, trying to get them loose, but Harry Hook comes over.

"Ah-ah-ah!" He grabs my arm to stop me. "We need ya for when pretty miss Mal shows up, lass. Which should be any second now!"

A girl wearing an apron and a pirate hat comes out from where I was. She has aqua and black braids reaching past her waist, with purple, gold, teal, and black leather on her. She drops a tray full of food in front of some lady and the customer whirls around.

"Hey! I wanted the fried clams!"

Harry gives a girly giggle. "Watch this, lassie."

Braid girl turns around fast. "And I wanted a sea pony. Life ain't fair!" She yells. She walks on and gives her other tray to someone just as the doors bang open and someone sings,

"I'm baa-aack!"

"Mal!" I yell. Her purple head turns quickly to me just as Harry puts his hand over my mouth. She stares in shock at me.

"Ellie!" She turns to braid girl, who by now I'm assuming is the Uma girl everyone's talked about.

"Loser, party of one." Uma says, gesturing to a table. "Right this way please."

Mal takes one last glance at me then starts towards Uma. Uma kicks a chair at Mal, who grabs it just in time and swings it around to sit on. Mal looks around.

"Place still stinks." She comments.

Uma scoffs. "Oh, I'm sorry. We're down a butler today. *Princess.*"

Mal looks at me again. Harry gives a girlish wave. "I see Ellie. Where is he?" Mal asks Uma.

Uma whisks her apron off. "You know I've dreamed of this? You, wanting something from me. And me watching you squirm like a worm on a hook."

Get her back, Mal.

"I'm so flattered that you dream of me." Mal shoots back. "I haven't given you a thought since I left.

Uma slams her hands down on the table. Mal seems to have hit a nerve. "Obviously." Uma snarls. "You have your perfect little life, don't you?" Uma smiles then and turns to the shop. "Doesn't she have her perfect, little life?" The shop laughs.

Uma turns back to Mal. "And we're twenty years into a garbage strike."

"Listen, if you have some kind of score to settle with me, game on!" Mal says. "I see no need to bring Ben or Ellie into this!"

Uma laughs. "It may be a little unnecessary, but oh. It is so much fun." Uma leans close. "Here's the deal."

"Just like your mother, always a catch." Mal says.

Uma sits down and puts her arm on the table, arm-wrestle style. "If you win, Ben and Princess Ice over there are free to go!"

Mal smirks and puts her arm next to Uma's.

"Don't you wanna know what I get if I win?" Uma asks too innocently.

Stop it, Mal. She's playing you! I want to scream.

"Still dreaming." Mal tells Uma.

"Mm." Uma clasps hands with Mal. "Last I checked, your mother thought she had things all sewn up too! How'd that work out for her

again?"

Mal ignores the jab. "On three."

"One. Two. Three!"

The both start. Mal instantly seems to gain a bit more ground. Uma laughs. "You know, that whole princess act." Uma rolls her eyes. "Ugh. I never bought it for a second. You can stick a tiara on a villain, but," Uma says matter-of-factly, "You're still a villain."

Mal grins. "And you can slap a pirate hat on, but you're still shrimpy. Oh!" Mal's comment makes Uma's hand go down further. Mal's eyes go green.

But Uma's not angry. She's laughing. As her hand gets closer and closer to the tabletop, she spits out, "If I win, you bring me the wand."

Mal's eyes go back to normal in surprise, and Uma slams Mal's hand down. Uma jumps up in celebration, and Harry removes his hand from my mouth. I spit the taste out and watch Mal, who's not moving. Uma leans back in front of Mal.

"Now. If you want Beasty Boy and Ice Queen back, bring me Fairy Godmother's magic wand. To my ship tomorrow at 12 noon." Uma stands back up straight and flips her hair over her shoulders. "Sharp." She starts to walk away but turns right back around. "Oh! And if you blab? You can kiss your baby goodbye." Uma laughs and actually walks away then.

"Wait." Mal stands. "Let Ellie go now. She's right there, and I don't even have the wand with me right now!"

Uma laughs and looks to Harry, who puts his arm over my shoulder. I shake my head at Mal. "*Do not* give them the wand." I tell her. "Ben would agree, we're not---" Harry covers my mouth again. Seriously??

Mal stares at me, then at Uma. "Deal or no deal?"

Uma scoffs. "No. Bring us the wand, or both of them become shark

lunch."

Mal growls but doesn't argue. She leaves the chip shop and Harry takes his hand from my mouth again. I glare at him. "Is that seriously necessary?" I demand.

"Nah. But watchin' the ice in yer eyes when I do it makes it fun!" He taps my nose and walks away.

I roll my eyes and try to get off the stupid ropes again. Gil comes over, putting egg yolks in his mouth.

"Hi!" he says. "That went well. Sorry Uma didn't let you leave. But she needs you guys here. Egg?" he offers one to me.

"Um, no thanks. I just ate." I tell him. He chokes another one down.

"Tha's okay. You're probably used to Boradon food, anyway." He tells me.

"Boradon?"

"That's what Harry calls it."

"Oh." I shift on my seat. Now that Mal's gone, Harry and Uma are kind of ignoring me. "Why does Uma hate Mal so much?"

He squints over at Uma. "Well, there are a couple reasons. One, because she told Uma she wasn't big and bad enough to be in her gang when Mal still lived here, she called her Shrimpy back then." He snickers. "Shrimpy. Ha! Oh, and also, Mal was s'posed to break down the barrier during the coronation." He snorts and chugs another egg. "But she didn't! I guess Auradon isn't so bad after all, 'cuz it changed the baddest of them all." He says wistfully.

"You know, I could probably get you an invite." I tell him. And no joke, he literally perks up so much the egg he had in his mouth just drops on the ground.

"Really?"

"Sure. Ben would have to make it official, and people would

probably hate me even more, but if you want to."

"People hate you?" he asks. He actually sounds really confused. "But you're so cool! No pun intended. I mean, you've got awesome powers! Which was kinda the point of the gloves. They've got this weird spell on them. Hans had them and gave them to us when he heard you were here."

"Hans? Hans, the guy who tried to kill my mom?" I ask.

"Yeah!" Gil points across the room, where a guy in a sharp-looking but still filthy suit is glaring at me.

"Oh." My stomach sinks. No wonder I can't use my powers. A) I was knocked out, and that hurt. B) I know what gloves these are. Hans had them specially made for Elsa should he ever get revenge. They take all the heat from your body and gather it in the gloves, and they give you monster headaches when you try to use your powers.

Gil pats my shoulder. "They're s'posed to really hurt you. Do they? 'Cuz if they do I could take 'em off for a while."

"Yes!" I exclaim. "I mean, you seriously would do that?"

"Sure!" he looks excited and starts to untie me. Out of nowhere, a hand reaches in and stops Gil. I look up to see Hans glaring at Gil.

"She's playing you, boy. She just wants to get out." He says in an oily voice.

"Well, can you blame me? My mom's would-be killer is here, and I'd rather not be within fifty miles of him." I snap.

He smiles and shoos Gil away. Gil waves good-naturedly to me and walks away.

"Well, Elicia, right?"

"My friends call me Ellie."

"Ellie. Nice."

"I said my *friends,* dung boy." I remember my mom mentioning that he had to scoop poop as punishment once. His face goes red and I know I've hit it right.

"Then Elicia. You met my son yet?"

"No, and I don't want to."

"Hans Jr! Come here!" Hans yells.

"Nice name. Self-centered much?" I ask Hans Senior. Hans Jr comes over.

"What, Dad? I was talking to Yda!" He gestures to a deathly skinny girl with purple hair.

"You can talk to Yzma's heinous daughter later. I want you to meet someone. Take a guess who this girl's mother is?" Hans Senior tells his son.

Hans Jr. turns to look at me. He looks a lot like his dad, with calculating brown eyes and annoying sideburns. He grins after a few seconds. "Hey! This is Ice Queen!"

"Right-o!" Hans Sr. exclaims. "Now, take a good look. Does she look like she's going anywhere?"

"Uh, no, Dad."

"Duh." I say. "Even the Duke of Weaseltown could figure that out."

"IT'S WESELTON!" someone screams.

"Not in the history books!" I yell back.

Hans Sr. rolls his eyes. "Son, I want you to make sure she doesn't go anywhere. I want to be there when the shove her into the water."

"Right, dad." Hans Jr. sits down and stares at me. I last about three seconds before it creeps me out.

"You do realize that Uma's going to give me back once she has the

wand, right?" I snap at him.

He laughs. "Who said she wasn't? But once she has the wand, nothin' can stop her from dumping you both anyway."

A chill of dread goes through me. Perfect.

"Hanses!" Uma yells. "Quit talking to the prisoner and put her back in her cell!"

Hans Jr. groans and grabs my arm, jerking me off my seat. "C'mon, pretty. You can see Ben now, and know we're tellin' the truth 'bout all this. You ain't goin' nowhere."

"And you ain't got no vocabulary." I spit back. "Read a book!"

"Can't read, don't wanna." He says back.

"Obviously." I point out. "You're dumber than a sack of potatoes."

"Still smarter than you." He shoots back, dragging me past Harry, who waves. "You shouldn't have come to the Isle, girl. My dad'll stop at nothin' to get back at you and your family."

"He does realize that all his punishment was *his* fault, right?"

Hans Jr. sighs, stopping me in the hallway. "Yes, he realizes that."

Hans Sr. pokes his head in. "Don't talk to the prisoner, boy! She'll use her witch powers!"

I look around. "Who exactly are you talking about? You guys got a witch prisoner?"

He glares at me. "I'm talking to you, Ice Queen!"

"*Oooh.*" I say. "I get it! You don't understand my powers, you don't get that magic and witchcraft are two different things. Witches use magic for bad. I'm not a witch, dung boy. Use what brains you have! Or... Do you have any? Is that why you think I'm a witch?"

His face goes redder and redder as I talk. "Shut up, girl. You don't

know who you're messing with."

"Well, I'm dying at noon tomorrow, so there's nothing really you can do." I tell him. Hans Jr. grabs my shoulders and marches me away quickly after that. As soon as we're out of earshot of his dad, he whirls me around and shoves me against the wall.

"You got a death wish, girl?" he asks in disbelief. "Nobody's talked to my dad like that. *Ever."*

"You need to find someone, then!" I yell. "Your dad's a jerk, and so are you, and so is every stinking pirate on the island!"

He shoves me again. "Shut your mouth. You don't know my dad, girl."

"Obviously not, since I grew up in picture-perfect land!"

He looks surprised. "Did you just make fun of Boradon?"

"Why is that such a big deal?"

He shakes his head. "Dad's right, you're playin' with your words. Come on, cell time." He grabs my arm again and drags me back to a moldy room. He opens the door up and shoves me in so hard I lose my balance. I trip and fall on my face. The door closes behind me, leaving the room pitch-black.

"Ow." I mutter, trying to get up.

"Ellie?"

"Ben!" I yell. "Where are you?"

"Give me a sec." Someone kicks me and I yelp. "Sorry! I tripped. Found you, though." He helps me up and starts messing with my ropes. He finally gets them undone and helps me up the rest of the way. "Are you okay? What'd they do?"

"Nothing. They knocked me out to get me here, then I had to taste Harry Hook's hand for a bit when they didn't want me to talk. It was gross." I tell him.

"Wait, why would they not want you to talk in a cell?"

"Oh! No, I was out in the shop. Uma arm-wrestled Mal for our freedom."

"I'm guessing she lost?" Ben sighs.

"Gee, how'd you guess?" I ask. "Yeah. And guess what Uma wants instead."

"What?"

"FG's wand."

"*What?!*" Ben cries. I hear something bang against the wall. "Ow! Ugh, this could not be worse. They're bringing the *wand* to the Isle?"

"I think so. Tomorrow at noon is when they're supposed to give it to Uma."

Ben fumbles through the room again until he finds my shoulder. "Is it bad that I'm torn between really wanting them to save us, and really really *really* wanting them to keep the wand safe?"

I take a shaky breath in. "Not at all. Except I know for sure I'm going to die either way."

"What? Why?"

"Because Hans is here. And apparently Uma told him she'll kill me anyways."

Ben moves forward and hugs me. I can't help but grin thinking of what Mal would look like if she saw this. But it does help a little.

"Well, hopefully, they have a plan." Ben mumbles.

"That's all we have to hope for." I reply.

So, this chapter was a bit longer because I couldn't figure out where to end it. Comment what ya think, and next chapter's

coming up!

Uma's Ship Isn't Exactly Ship-Shape

[image]

I throw the ball at the wall again.

It bounces back again.

I catch it.

Again.

Big whoop.

I sigh and put the ball to the side. They'd moved us to Uma's ship last night, and Gil gave me a ball because he said it makes people feel better.

Suuuuuuuure.

Better about dying? Maybe. Because I'm pretty sure I'm going to die of boredom first. I think they're holding Ben up on deck where Mal can see him. I wish they'd do that for me too.

I glance out the window again. There's a clock on the docks that's slow, but it's close to real time. It's close to noon. maybe 11: 15-ish.

I sigh and pick up the ball again. Just as I'm about to throw it, the door opens up. I change my course so that the ball bounces off the person's forehead. It hits true, bonking Harry Hook between his eyes and falling to the ground.

He looks down. "Did you just throw a ball at me, lass?"

I gesture lazily to it. "Check for yourself, pirate."

He bends down and stabs his hook through the rubber. "Yer gonna come with me. Now."

I stand up slowly and walk over to pluck the ball of his hook. Then I walk back to my spot and slide down the wall to bounce the ball again.

"I'm fine right where I am, Hook."

He rolls his eyes and grabs my arm, picking me off the ground and pulling me out of the room. "Uma wants ya up on deck."

I sigh and let him drag me up and out to the misty sea air. I gaze out and see Auradon in the distance. I stop and barely notice when Harry does too. But I do notice when he starts tying me to one of the masts.

"Hey!" I jerk away. "Seriously, Hook?"

He growls. "Would ya rather be the one on the plank?" He gestures over to the mast on the opposite side of the ship. Someone's already tied there. Ben!

I swallow and shake my head. Feeling slightly sick that I'm not fighting it, I let Harry tie me up and walk away. I turn around as much as I can and watch Harry tease Ben for a minute until Uma comes over and makes Harry go away. Sadly, he comes back to me.

"Uma says I'm not allowed to hook him, but she never said anything 'bout ya, lass!" He giggles and dances around me for a minute before settling next to me. "Ya look like one of us, but yer not rotten enough." he pouts for a minute. "It's too bad noon's fifteen minutes away. Mal and her wand'll get ya outta this, eh?"

"Mal and the wand aren't going to do anything for me, Hook." I tell him.

"Why's that?, Icy?"

"Ok, one, don't call me Icy. It's stupid. And second, see Annoying Jr. over there?" I nod towards Hans Jr. up in the ropes.

Harry looks over at him. "Eh, that kid's weaker than king Boradon over there."

"Ben isn't *weak*." I snap. "He's currently leading a kingdom. I'd like to see you try that."

He grins wickedly. "Challenge accepted." Then he walks away.

That doesn't sound good.

Uma comes over. "Well, I gotta say, you're handling this much better than I would expect Auradonian pretty-pink princess to."

"I hate pink." I tell her.

"Surprise! Not much of an accomplishment, though." She sits down in front of me. "Guess what King Beasty just offered me?"

"I couldn't possibly guess." I drawl.

She grins. "Well, the both of you really are entertaining! I almost hope Mal actually save you guys."

"What did Ben offer you, Uma?" I ask.

"An invite to Auradon!" She tells me.

"And let me guess. You said no?"

"Smart girl. Or, not so smart. Why'd you come here in the first place, Ice Queen? You had your life in Auradon. Why come here?" Uma asks.

I lean my head back against the mast, staring at the sky. "I don't know anymore."

"Sure ya do. C'mon. Spill." She settles back, relaxing.

I snort and almost double over in laughter. "Uma, I'm tied to a mast and you're talking to me like we're BFF's! How does that even make sense?"

She smiles and leans forward again. "It might make more sense then you think, if you cooperate in the right way."

"What, you mean join your crew?" I laugh again. "And here I was

thinking Hans wanted me dead. No, let's be best buddies!"

"Princess, if you wanna live, I'd suggest droppin' that sharp tongue of yours." Hans Jr. drops out of nowhere.

"Nah. I like my tongue." I stick it out at him. Kinda childish, but still. It works.

He rolls his eyes and walks away. Uma keeps smiling. "This is what I mean, Icy. You'd make a great pirate."

"Well, one thing I will say. For kidnappers, you guys are still nicer than some Auradonians I can name." I tell her.

She grins wider. "So! That's why you left!"

"I never said---"

"You might not have actually said it, but you sure implied it. Auradon isn't all it's cracked up to be, is it?" Uma asks.

I glance behind me at Ben. "Not always. But it's got some people worth fighting for."

"Your mom?"

I can't help it and I snort. "Not if you held me at knifepoint. No. Not my mom."

"Believe me, I know mom issues." Uma tells me. "My mom couldn't care less that I exist, except that she needs someone for night shift."

"Ouch." I say. "But, Uma, Auradon is... Amazing. It somehow changed Mal, who was the Queen of Evil. Auradon is an amazing place that will never lose it's magic."

"Y'know, when I was a kid, I wanted nothing more than to go there." Uma tells me.

"Really? You could come, you know. Let us go, and come with us."

Uma gets up. "Nah. I'm good here. So, what happened? Your mom

freeze your heart or something?"

"As if. No, she wants me to talk to Fairy Godmother." Wait, why the heck am I telling her this?

Uma taps her necklace. "Y'know, if you join the crew, we could help you. You wouldn't have to wear these gloves." She gestures to my hands still behind my back.

"Tempting. Hard pass." I say.

She loses a bit of her grin. "Auradon has trained you well, Princess. One last chance. Nothin's stopping the Hanses from revenge if you say no again."

"Uma, why are you doing this? What is the point?"

"The point? The *point?* The point is, I'm getting Mal back for all she's done. She's a traitor, and she never should have come back." She grabs a knife and stabs it right next to my face on the wood. "And you shouldn't have come here either." She gives me a smile and walks off. I glance at the knife barely an inch from my skin. A hand reaches over and plucks it off. I look up.

"Hi Harry."

"Icy." he nods, playing with the knife. "Your friends will be here soon. Or, they won't."

"Harry, you do realize that you wear more makeup than most girls, right?" I tell him sweetly.

He smooths his hair back under his pirate hat. "What's it to ye, lass?"

I shrug. "Just seems stupid."

"You criticize me, I criticize you. Got any other comments?"

"Well, for one thing----"

"Hey guys!" Gil yells. "They're here!"

Harry and I both look up at the same time. Gil's up in the crow's nest, watching the docks. I look over where he's looking, and I see Mal, Evie, Carlos, Jay, and---for some reason---Lonnie coming towards us.

I look at the slow clock.

Yup.

Noon.

Harry walks away from me fast and cuts Ben loose, shoving him towards the plank. "Welcome!" he yells.

"Finally!" says Uma, dancing with glee.

Mal comes up the boardwalk.

Without the wand.

I'm Goin' Down

[image]

"Mal!" I yell. She glances once at me and then at Ben. Uma laughs hard.

♫Huh! Let's get this party started, I swear I'm cold hearted! ♫

Harry shoves Ben onto the plank. Ben stumbles dangerously close to the edge.

♫There's no negotiation, I'm not here for debating! ♫

♫You need some motivation? Just look at Ben an' Ellie's faces ♫

Harry hooks his arm over Ben's shoulder and Evie glances at Jay. I'm just praying that they find some way out of this, since I still don't see a wand...

♫Then ask yourself how long you think I'll remain patient. ♫

♫I'll throw them overboard and let 'em swim with killer sharks! ♫

♫You either hand over the wand or they'll be ripped apart! ♫

Carlos looks like he might explode. Is it bad that I'm about to die, and I'm happy I have a good soundtrack for my death?

♫Now let's all just be smart ♫

♫Although for you that must be hard!♫ Mal sings.

♫You'll get your wand. No one has to come to any harm! ♫

♫Don't try to intimidate, your bark is much worse than you bite. ♫

♫Who's the baddest of them all? I guess we're findin' out tonight! ♫

♫Let's go, bring it on♫ Uma's crowd starts singing and dancing around, imitating crowns on their heads.

♫ Better give us what we want ♫

♫ It's the wand for the crown ♫

♫ If you don't, it's going down ♫

♫Let's go, make your move♫ Mal's side barks back.

♫ Peace or war, it's up to you ♫

♫ Give him up and do it now ♫

♫I f you don't, it's going down ♫

♫ We want the wand ♫

♫ Or else these two are gone ♫

♫Y our time is running out ♫

♫Y ou should really watch your mouth ♫

♫ Let's go, pound for pound ♫

♫We're prepared to stand our ground ♫

♫Put your swords up, put 'em up ♫

♫It's goin' down ♫

Uma's side comes back strong, rolling around and hitting their swords against the wood. Uma even taps her fingers along her sword like a person walking the plank.

♫ Oh, oh, oh, make the trade ♫

♫ Oh, oh, oh, or walk the plank ♫

♫ Oh, oh, oh, make the trade ♫

♫ Oh, oh, oh, or walk the plank ♫

Gil spreads his arms as Uma walks by, presenting her like a fashion model.

Mal turns back. *♫Ok, look, this is not a conversation♫*

♫ It's a do-or-die situation ♫

♫ If you don't give me back the king ♫

♫ I'll have no hesitation ♫

♫ I'll serve you right here ♫

♫ And I don't need a reservation ♫

♫ That way your whole "pirate crew" can have a demonstration ♫

♫ Release him now, and we can go our separate ways ♫

♫ Unless you wanna deal with me, and the VK's? ♫

But, like I expected, Uma laughs. *♫So that's your big speech, huh?♫*

♫An empty ultimatum? ♫

Harry goes forward, in all his annoying guyliner glory. ♫*All it takes is one swing, and I'll humiliate them*♫

♫*Matter of fact, make one wrong move and I'll debilitate them!* ♫

♫*And if he even starts to slip, I'll eliminate him!*♫ He points to Ben, still dangerously close to the edge.

♫*All it takes is one wrong look and I'll--*

"Harry!" Uma yells. "We get it! Chill." She pulls him back.

And they repeat the entire annoying stanza. I take back what I said before about a good soundtrack. Just kill me already, please. Uma's crew forms a clock for the *your time is running out* part. What, did they rehearse this?

And then Carlos brings out the wand. Mal grabs it and starts forward.

♫*Hey!*♫ Ben shouts. ♫*We don't have to choose*♫

♫*We don't have to light the fuse!* ♫

♫*Mal, whatever you do it's gonna be a lose-lose* ♫

♫*There's gotta be a better way!* ♫

♫*Uma, I promise, I'll give you your chance.* ♫

♫*You'll have your say!* ♫

Uma puts her sword up. ♫*Silly king!*♫

♫*You? Give me?* ♫

♫*You're! Gonna give me a chance? Well, not a chance!* ♫

Ben looks defeated, pained even. What could he possibly be thinking? Uma would never become good! Well, no, Mal did, so Uma might. But there's no way, not right now.

Hans Jr. comes over and cuts me loose. "C'mon. Harry thinks Mal's giving up too easy. We're putting you on the plank instead." Ben is shoved backward onto the deck and Hans Jr. stays behind me so he can shove me forward at any given moment. He pushes me right up to the edge, where I can see the dark blue water below. I swallow and focus on Mal and the VK's again.

Mal starts forward with the wand and Uma stops her. "Hold up. Mm. Too easy. Why don't you give it a test drive? We wanna see it work."

I note Evie turn to Carlos and say something.

"You always were quite the drama queen." Mal tells Uma.

"Oh, and nothing too big, or else they're both fish bait. Starting with princess, over there." Uma says. Hans grabs my jacket collar and leans me over the edge. If he let go, I'd drop like a stone.

Mal gives an annoyed nod and turns around. Dude! What's he doing on the Isle? "Okay." Mal clears her throat. "Although it seems absurd, turn your bark into a word." Mal waves the wand in Dude's direction.

Dude says nothing. Surprise, surprise. Why is the wand not working?

"Talk, dog!" Mal hisses.

"Does this vest make me look fat?" Dude says. I can't help it and a laugh escapes my mouth. Uma's crew starts laughing too.

"Does anyone have some bacon?" Dude asks. "Cookies?" Typical Dude, always thinking with his stomach.

Uma laughs. "Give me the wand!" She yells.

"Give me Ben and Ellie!" Mal yells back.

I'm still tipped over the side. Uma hesitates for one second. "Harry. Hans. Bring 'em over."

Hans growls. "You promised---"

"Hans. *Now.*" Uma says.

Hans growls a second time then pulls me back. I breathe a sigh of relief as the water disappears from my view. I shuffle backward on my tied-up feet and follow Ben in front of Mal. Gil breaks in front of Ben.

"Oh, and Ben, before you go. Tell your mom Gaston says hi and also tell your dad that my dad wishes he'd finished off your dad when he had the chance." Ben can't respond, because Harry shoves him down on his knees in front of Mal. Hans does the same thing with me.

"Hi Ben. Sorry I took your spot on the plank for a while." I whisper.

He gives a small smile. "No, by all means."

"Aw." Uma says. She holds out her hand for the wand and Mal holds out her hand for Ben. Yeah, I'm once again invisible.

"Cut 'em loose, Harry." Uma tells him.

He groans. "I never get to have any fun!" But he does it. Ben catches his hand with Mal's instantly. Carlos shoves his way over and grabs my hand. Mal puts the wand in Uma's hand and pulls us away quickly as the crew cellabrates.

"Mal, Carlos, wait! We can't just let them---"

"We gotta go, Ellie!" Carlos breaks in.

"Ben, *go!"* Mal yells, pushing him back.

"But---" I start.

"BY THE POWER OF THE SEA, TEAR IT DOWN AND SET US FREE!" Uma yells, pointing the wand at the sky.

"No!" I yell.

"Ellie, we have to leave!" Carlos yells.

And I understand then. Nothing's happening. That's not the real wand.

"No!" Uma yells. She breaks the wand in half. "You do *not* get to win every time!"

"Guys!" Jay knocks over a barrel and starts handing out swords. Ah, now I get Lonnie's reason for being here. I grab one just as Uma yells. "Get 'em!"

"Look out!" Carlos yells. He's holding a slingshot, and once he lets go a burst of blue smoke explodes in front of Uma. He shoots another in orange. After red, pirates start swinging from the ship towards us.

"Evie!" I yell. She notices the guy behind her and starts fighting him. I grin. The VK's just keep surprising me.

"Princess!" Hans Jr. *and* Sr. drop in front of me. "We've got unfinished business." Hans Senior tells me.

"What a random and hilarious coinky-dink! So do I!" I giggle, launching at them. I shove Hans Senior off the boardwalk and he falls screaming onto a lower one. I pout. Aw. I'd been hoping he'd make it to the water.

"Dad!" Hans Jr. yells. "You'll pay for that!" he swings his sword, me ducking limbo-style just in time to avoid it. I hear a clatter above me and look up. Jay just dropped Harry's hook into the water! And Harry's diving after it!

I explode in laughter, dodging another blow from Hans Jr's sword.

"Die already!" he snarls, swinging again.

"No thanks!" I yell back, cutting his wrist to get him to drop his sword. I kick his gut, and he falls backward. Ah, *this* one hit the water.

"Ellie!" Carlos appears next to me. "Come on, we're getting out of here!"

Two new pirates drop down next to us. "That might be a problem!" I tell him, ducking and rolling under the pirate's feet.

Carlos starts fighting the other one. "Hey, Ellie can I ask you something?" he yells between breaths.

"Uh, not really a good time, but sure! Knock yourself out!" I try aiming for this one's wrist again, but he's quick!

"Would you maybe go to Cotillion with me? If we're not dead by then?" Carlos shouts, kicking the guy in the shin.

I turn to look incredulously at him. "Are you kidding me??"

"No!"

"Then yes, you dummy!" I turn back just to see Hans Jr climbing up in front of me, soaking wet. "Ah, crap." I mutter. "Ruining the moment, Hans whichever you are!"

"There's only two!" he protests, taking a swing at me.

"Ah-ah-ah!" I grab the handle of his sword, making him lose his grip. "Still trying to have my moment."

Carlos finally knocks his opponent away and kicks Hans Jr backward. "So, that was a yes?" He checks with me.

"Definitely a yes." I tell him.

"Yes!" He cheers, hugging me. I laugh then remember where we are. I shove him away and we turn back around to stop a sword.

"Hi, old Hans." I say. "There's your son. Wanna join him?"

He snarls and mimics what I did to his son, grabbing the handle of my sword. He brings my face close to his.

I wrinkle my nose. "Ugh, what do you eat?"

"Trash, thanks to your perfect aunt!" he scowls. "Hans!"

"Her name's Anna. But maybe you weren't talking to me? Don't talk

to yourself, it's creepy." I tell him.

"Wasn't talking to me." he grins. I only have a second to realize how weird that looks on him before someone grabs my sword and shoves me against the railing. Hans Jr and Sr stand before me.

Crap. I don't have a sword.

I look behind them, but Carlos and everybody else are occupied.

"Goodbye, Princess!" Hans Sr yells. Both he and his son launch forward, grabbing me and hauling me over the railing. I scream and grab onto it with one hand, but they slam a sword on my fingers and my grip breaks.

I fall and hit the water. People always say that from up high, it feels like cement. Yup. They're right.

The dark blue envelopes me, and only then do I think to try and rip my gloves off. Losing breath fast, and struggling to get above the water line, I try and pry them off my fingers. When that doesn't work, I rip at the fabric.

The cold water meets my skin, and warmth floods back into the rest of me.

Just as I realize I can't breathe anymore. I try to breathe in, forgetting where I am. Water rushes into my lungs.

I black out.

This one is kinda shorter, but still. Hope you like! The picture at the top is the closest I could get to Ellie going under, but meh. As always, please comment and enjoy!

Letting Go, For The First Time In Forever

[image]

"*Ellie! Ellie! Ellie, come on! Please wake up!"*

What the heck? Why am I so cold? My skin feels like it's in ice! What is going on? I register that my breaths are coming in shallow gasps, and I cough. It shakes my body, rattling down my throat painfully. But my chest clears and I roll over wherever I am, spitting up salty water.

I finally clear my lungs enough to gag at the taste. "Ugh." I groan, reaching up to my head. It's pounding almost as bad as when Harry knocked me out. Someone puts a hand on my shoulder.

"Ellie? You okay?"

I crack my eyes open just enough to see I'm on the floor of a limo. Judging from now I'm lying, I *was* on the seat but I rolled off. Evie has her hand on my shoulder. I give a scratchy laugh. "Check back in a few years." I tell her, sitting up against the side of the limo.

Everyone in the limo gives a sigh of relief. Carlos takes my hand. "Are you okay?"

I wave him off. "I'm fine. Feel like someone just used my head as a drum, but other than that, just peachy!" I groan and sit up the rest of the way, grinding both hands into my forehead. "What happened?"

Everyone looks at Carlos. It's only then that I notice he and I are the only ones who are soaked.

"What happened?" I repeat.

Carlos clears his throat. "Well, um, after the Hanses threw you over,

I kinda dove in after you. Took me a minute to find you, because you sunk like a rock. But when I did find you, you had already been down there for a while. But, you, um.... Well."

"Remember the coronation?" Jay asks from the driver's seat.

"Yeah, I froze." I say.

"You did it again. Except this time, it put you in a coma." he explains.

I look down at my hand. "And let me guess, once you got me out, if wore off?"

"Yeah." Jay pulls the remote out and pulls the golden road up. We all flinch when we pass through.

"So, wait. Let me get this straight. I was in a coma sort of thing? Because I got the gloves off?"

Carlos nods. "Be glad you got those off, because I'm not sure if you would have made it otherwise."

"That's not creepy at all." Dude remarks.

"Wait, how can you talk?" I ask. "The wand was fake, right? Or did Uma just snap FG's wand in half?"

"I ate a truth gummy! It was nasty!" Dude says.

"Why did you have a truth gummy?" I question.

Carlos covers his dog's mouth. "No reason!"

Evie laughs, but Mal and Ben just stare out the windows. What happened while I was out? Did they fight again?

"Get ready guys." Jay says. "We're back."

He pulls up in front of Auradon Prep and lets us out. It's so weird being back in the bright sun and happy faces having just come back from literally almost dying. We walk across the grass and Lonnie

waves. "I'll get these back to the gym." She hoists the swords higher and walks away.

"Thanks." Jay tells her.

"See you later."

Mal is walking with her arms crossed, looking dejected. Things really didn't go her way. Or mine. Sad as it is to say, I really felt good being on the Isle. I really did.

"Ben!" Jane comes over. "There you are! Cotillion is tonight! C'mere." She shows him the stained-glass window of Mal. "Look. This is the stained glass window for Mal. Isn't it beautiful? She's gonna love it!" Jane jumps up and down in giddiness.

Ben turns to Mal. "Do you wanna cancel?" he asks her. She looks up at him in surprise.

"Huh?" Jane asks. "Um, you know what, I can come back. Uh, but like, really really soon."

"No no no. No no no." Ben assures her. "Now's fine. Um." He leans over and looks at the glass window. Then he turns back to Mal and says something to her. I elbow Jane.

"Something happened." I tell her. "Don't worry about it, okay?"

She nods, confused. Ben comes back and Evie grabs me and Mal. "We need to talk." She tells us.

"Yeah." Mal sighs.

"No!" Carlos says behind us.

Evie stops and turns around. "No?" She asks.

"You guys are always going off in a huddle, whispering your...girl talk. Stuff. And---" he looks back and forth between us. "Jay and I are tired of it!"

Jay turns to us and raises his hand. "I'm not."

Carlos gives him a *really?* look and turns back to us. "We're your family too. We've been through a lot. Together." He says. "We're not stopping that now. Okay?"

Mal gives a tiny nod. Carlos looks around. Most of us are still not convinced. "Everybody sit." he plops down on the grass.

We all stare at him.

"Come on." He tells Jay. Dude whines. "You too." Carlos tells his dog. We all sit down in a circle. For a second, Carlos just sits there. "I don't know how to start girl talk." he admits.

Jay shrugs. "What up?"

Evie gives a laugh. Mal looks ready to cry. "I'm a mess. I'm such a mess." Then she really does start crying, and Evie puts a hand on her shoulder. "I mean, six months ago, I was... you know. Stealing candy from babies, and now everybody wants me to be this Lady of the Court and I have *no* idea how to keep up the act."

"Then don't." Carlos tells her.

"Well, at least you have a place to run to, Mal!" I burst. I'm not mad at her, but I can't help it. "You're the bad girl, or you were. I mean, you---you're *Mal.* Daughter of Evil. You fit in here for a while, and you fit in effortlessly on the Isle. You're an amazing person, and I'm just..." I stare at my hands. "Nothing."

"Ellie---" Mal starts, but it's Jay that interrupts.

"Ellie, who was the one that was able to survive in the freezing spell last year and get the wand from Maleficent?"

"Me. But that was---"

"And who was able to technically breathe underwater for a bit until I got you out?" Carlos breaks in.

"Yeah, but I got captured in the first pla---"

"Be quiet, girl! They're complimenting you!" Dude says. "And if

you're nothing, why'd my buddy try so hard to ask you out? Three times!"

"What?" Evie, Mal, Jay, and I yell.

"Dude!" Carlos complains.

"What? You like her!"

"Yeah, but she didn't know I'd tried to ask her out before!"

"Wait, that was what the carrot cake thing was?" I ask. Carlos nods. I think back. Oops. The fencing court.

"Wait, what was the third time?" Evie asks.

"During the fight at the ship!" Dude pipes. "And she said yes!"

"DUDE!" Carlos yells.

"See? This was dumb." Jay says, starting to get up.

"Maybe it wasn't." Evie says. He eases back down. Evie takes Mal's hand. "We're always gonna be the kids from the Isle. Even if, technically, Ellie, you were born here." She shakes her head and gets back to the point. "I tried to forget it. I really tried. But those are our roots. And we all did what we had to do. To survive." She looks at Mal and I. "But it made us who we are. And we're never going to be like anybody else here. And that's okay. That's okay!"

"And we can't fake it." Carlos jumps in.

"No." Evie agrees.

"Yeah, I mean, especially without my spell book." Mal says sadly.

"Hey, I never had a spell book." I tell her. "And you don't need it, Mal. The real you, the fun one." I bump her shoulder. "The one who lets go! That's who we love."

"Mal, if Ben doesn't love the real you, then he's not the one." Carlos says.

"I like that." Evie says.

"Give it a chance here, guys." Carlos whispers.

Mal hesitates. I don't and hug Carlos. "Thank you."

Jay snickers, but for once I don't care.

Evie gives Mal a look. "I'm going to go make some changes to your dress. And if you're up for it--- *only* if you're up for it--- it'll be waiting for you, okay?"

Mal nods. Evie hugs her and mouths something to Carlos. Then Carlos stands up. "C'mon, buddy." he tells Dude. I stay with Mal as everyone stands up and starts to leave. I nudge Mal.

"Hey. Mal. Look at me."

She does, somewhat unwillingly.

"Come to Cotillion tonight." I tell her. "If Ben isn't smart enough to love you, and you can't stand another day, I'll steal one of the limos and drive you back myself."

She nods and gives a tiny smile. I stand up to leave. "Ellie?" She calls.

I look back. "Yeah?"

"Thank you. For everything."

I smile. "What are friends for?"

She gives a real smile then. "I mean it. Even though you got captured, and the Hanses almost killed you... I'm glad you came with me." she stands up and flicks a piece of my blue-streaked hair. "Dizzy really did an amazing job."

I laugh and shove her a little. "She did better one you. I mean, the blonde looked nice on you, but purple is definitely your color."

She laughs.

"Hey! Ellie!"

I turn around to see Lonnie, in a pink and blue fencing outfit. "Hi Lonnie."

"I never got to talk to you. Are you okay?"

"I'm fine. What about you, what were you doing on the Isle?" I ask.

She laughs. "I made Jay and Carlos take me by threatening to tell Fairy Godmother."

I grin. "Well, that'd work!"

"And you'll never guess where Jay tried to tell me they were going."

"Where?"

"Okay, so I had swords with me, and Jay said "We don't need swords at the Waffle Hut!""

I snort so hard I double over. "He *said* that?"

"Yeah!"

I laugh some more. "Oh my gosh. That's awesome."

She laughs with me. "Oh, hey, Jay asked me to stop by the practice later! Wanna come with me?"

"I thought he said---"

"He found a loophole. I'm not telling you unless you come!"

"Wait, let me get this straight. Chad will be there. You're joining the team." I repeat.

"Yep."

I link my arm through hers. "Yes! I'm comin'!"

She laughs and pulls me along. I go up on the balcony part since I'm technically not supposed to be able to interfere with practice. Lonnie doesn't come in yet.

Jay comes running into the circle. "Let's bring it in, boys! Let's bring it in. All right." He pauses and looks around. "You all know I come from the Isle, right? Things are pretty whack." He laughs. "No, but there is one thing the Isle's got in Auradon. If you're strong, we want you by our side. Girl or boy."

FINALLY!!!! I cheer inside my head. I wonder how Jay's going to get this to work?

"W-wha--Hey, hey." Chad comes up next to Jay and puts his arms around his shoulders. "Jay hold on here, we don't--ah--we don't break the rules here in Auradon. That's over on the Isle."

"Shut up, you idiot!" I say. I don't think he heard me. Aw.

Jay pulls out the rule book and opens it up. "The team shall be comprised of a Captain and eight men." Chad looks over his shoulder like, *duh.* He looks around, confused. "So, uh. Give it up for your new team captain." Jay says, moving aside. Lonnie walks into the room, to Chad's dumbfounded expression.

"Woah, what?!" He yells. Lonnie smiles up at me. Jay puts the whistle over her neck.

"Thank you." She tells him. Jay starts clapping and everyone but Chad follows the example. Then Jay bows. Again, Chad's left. He makes a *all right, whatever* motion and bows as well.

"Fine." he mutters.

Lonnie blows the whistle. "Give me ten!" She says, moving to the side. Everyone goes down in pushup form. "Come on, guys!" She slams her foot down on Chad's back. "Pick it up, Chad! Nice form, Jay!" She keeps pushing Chad down, which I find hilarious. Once the ten is up, Lonnie blows her whistle again. "Kay, practice is over. get outta here! Go get ready for Cotillion!" I leave and use the stairs this time to get down there. Lonnie's leaving with Jay. I catch her

hand.

"That was awesome!" I tell her.

She beams. "Thanks. I can't believe Chad backed down so fast!"

"I'd watch my back if I were you." I warn her.

"I don't think I'll have to. I've got Jay on my side now."

I stop. "You like him, don't you?"

"What? No! How did you get that out of that sentence?"

"You *do!"* I accuse. "Oh my gosh, this is almost as cute as Doug and Ev--"

"If you're allowed to fangirl about my crushes, I'm allowed to tease you about yours." She interrupts.

I shut up abruptly.

"Evie!" I call. "Hey, you called me?"

"Yep! I finished your crown!" She holds up a half-circle of silver that has blue gems dotting it on the tips of a white snowflake.

"It's gorgeous!" I gush. "I know I say you're an artist, Evie, but you truly have a gift."

She grins sneakily. "Actually, I didn't make this. Guess who did?"

"Who?" I run people through my head.

"Dizzy!"

"No kidding? That sweet little girl made this?"

Evie points to the snowflake in the center. "I added this, but she made the original design. Tilt it in the light."

I follow her directions and tilt it a bit in the sunlight. A beam of deep blue light bounces off. "Wow."

"I know! I wish Dizzy could come here. She'd love Auradon." Evie looks a little sad.

"Hey, I actually know someone else who I think would---"

Someone knocks on the door.

"Hold that thought." Evie says. "Come in!" She turns to her rack of dresses.

The door opens and Doug bursts in. "I have a scout badge in s'mores!" He yells.

Evie turns around in surprise.

"How could you go camping without me?" Doug exclaims.

Camping? Is that what he thinks the Isle is?

"What?" Evie asks, just as confused as I am.

"Are you seeing someone else? Are you?" Doug demands.

"No!" Evie protests.

"Is--is it Happy's son?" Doug points upstairs. "Because let me tell you. He is not as happy as his dad. Kind of a dark streak, in fact."

Evie smiles. "Doug, Ben and Ellie were captured on the Isle."

Alarm flashes in Doug's face, turning to look at me. I wave.

"We rescued them and saved Auradon." Evie continues.

Doug turns back to her. "So you're not seeing Happy's son or anyone else?"

Evie smiles and takes his hands. "Don't be Dopey." She whispers. She leans forward and kisses his cheek. Her foot pops! I can barely contain myself.

"Besides, we have dresses to deliver!" Evie says, turning away. "It is Cotillion day, after all."

Ahh, she's distracted me. "You finished mine yet?" I ask.

She nods and hands me a black bag. "Don't open it yet! Wait 'til you're back in your dorm." She turns to her desk and picks up a headband. "And you know what? I was lucky enough to have been given a chance. And...now I need to give someone else a chance, too."

"My Uncle Bashful used to say that." Doug comments.

"Did he?" Evie asks.

"Yeah!" Doug goes behind the dresses. "But really quietly."

"What would you expect, a name like Bashful?" I ask.

Evie laughs. "Let's do this." She says to Doug. They pull the long rack of dresses from the room.

"Hey! Ellie!"

I turn around, still clutching Evie's dress. "Hi, Carlos! Hey Dude."

"Got any bacon?"

"Sorry, no. What did you want?" I ask Carlos. He runs a hand through his hair.

"Well, I mean, when I asked you it was kinda sudden, and we might have been about to die, and I just wanted to ask you formally to be my girlfriend?"

I stare at him. Why do I always stare when he asks this?

"Unless you've changed your---"

"NO!" I yelp. "No! No way! I just---" I pause and smile. "You really have a gift for saying the sweetest things, you know?"

He goes red. I hug him, and he doesn't hesitate to hug me back this time.

Someone clears their throat. We jump apart to Jay's amused expression. "So, I take it, you're officially Carlie?"

"What?" We both ask.

"It's what Evie calls you guys."

"Oh, so she has time for *my* ship name but not hers!" I burst.

"Ship name?" Carlos asks.

I put a hand on his shoulder. "I shall teach you, my young padawan."

"What?"

"Oh my God, you don't know what a padawan is?"

"Nope. Should I?"

"Um. In a manner of speaking, I'd consider breaking up with you if you don't learn."

"Looking it up now!" he tears across the grass.

Eyo! So, slightly longer chapter this time. Ha. But, the next chapter will maaaaybe be the last...? Of Descendants 2, that is. I already have so many ideas for afterwards. Anyways, comment, as always, and hope you guys like! Also, shoutout to @BeautyBeastRose for the ship name!

To Cotillion, And Beyond!

[image]

The above is Ellie's Cotillion outfit!! Just imagine a white cape that reaches the backs of her knees attached to the dress! And for her hairdo, just imagine it snowy white with light blue streaks.

I get to my dorm, leaving Dude with Jay, and I'm just about to open up the bag when....

Someone knocks on my door. Typical.

I open it up, and Carlos is there, grinning. "I looked it up!" He says proudly. "It's a Star Wars thing, and I'm going to watch Star Wars soon, and now you won't have to worry!"

I laugh and set the bag down. "Carlos, you know I was kidding, right?"

"I know! But still!"

I laugh again. "Okay, but you do seriously have to watch those movies. You don't *have* to watch 1-3...but 4, 5, and 6 you definitely need to see. And 7. And 8. Once it comes out."

"How many *are* there?"

"Currently? Eight."

He groans and slaps his own face. Dude trots in. "There's someone in your room!" he shouts, barking madly between them. "GET THEM OUT! I was sleeping!"

Carlos groans again. "Chad!" He runs from the room and I follow him. Chad? What?

"AUDREY!!!" Comes a yell. Carlos is standing in his doorway, annoyed.

"Chad. Chad! This is my room, Chad!" He yells.

"Shush shush shush!" Chad yells, on the floor. He puts his phone to his ear. "Audrey? Yeah. Yeah?? Well, yeah--that's wonderful news!" He puts his hand to his phone and turns to us. "She got a flat tire in Sherwood forest and she wants *me* to go fix it!" He puts his phone back on his ear.

"Seriously?" I ask. Carlos just stands there some more. Dude growls.

"That's six hours away." Carlos says in disbelief.

"Really?" Chad turns back to us. "Only six?" Back to phone. "I'm gonna be there faster than I thought." He kisses his phone hard and hands up on her. Then he gets up to leave.

"Why are you wearing Ben's crown?" I ask incredulously.

"I---"

"My printer, my crown." Carlos interrupts. He reaches over and takes it off Chad's head.

"Oh. Yeah, about that.. I---uh---I was just---haha right!" He hits Carlos' arm and runs from the room. "I'M COMING, AUDREY!" He shrieks, his voice cracking.

"Wow." Carlos says.

"What is all this about him coming into your room?" I ask.

"He keeps using the printer!" Dude yells. "MAKE A BETTER KEY!"

"Wow, you get grumpy when you don't get sleep!" I say, rubbing his head.

"I earned it! I saved your butts on the Isle! Speaking of, can you scratch mine? I'm itchy." He wags his tail and looks expectantly at Carlos.

I gesture to Dude. "You heard him. I gotta go get Evie's dress on. Knowing her, it'll take an hour to get it on. Bye!"

"Don't leave me with him!" Carlos yells. "Ah, this is just as bad as Mal's exit!"

"BYE ELLIE!" Dude yells. "BRING ME COOKIES!"

"Will do!" I yell back, sprinting down the hallways.

"Oh, my gosh, Evie." I whisper to myself. "She's really outdone herself." I mutter. My dress is even better than coronation's. It floats around me like mist. And while I admit I don't like the sleeveless-ness, I like that she included silver fastenings to hand a white gauzy cape on my shoulders. Mixed in with the crown, I look better than ever.

I twirl in front of the mirror again. I seriously love this gown. I wonder what Evie's looks like? Or Mal's for that matter.

Well. Better get ready for another onslaught of reporters. At least they're not allowed on the boat.

"Princess, look this way!"

"Princess Elicia, what did you do to your hair?"

"Has your mother said anything yet?"

I'm up on the carpet behind Evie, and she's already pointed out Dizzy's handiwork. I can scarcely imagine what that girl must be thinking.

"You're looking gorgeous this evening, Princess!"

"Is that a crown?"

"What does it mean?"

"Are you being sent to the Isle?"

I smile and laugh. They don't really bother me anymore. "This

crown is another creation of Dizzy from the Isle. I'm wearing it because she and Evie make the best fashion pair Auradon has ever seen." I look straight at a camera and tug on my hair. "Thanks, Dizzy!"

"Did she do your hair?"

"Who did your hair?"

"PRINCESS!"

I walk away from them, entering the boat. Evie catches up with me and hugs me tight. "Jay told me that Carlos asked you out. I'm so happy!" She gushes. "He's over there, by the way." She shoves me towards him.

"Ellie!" His jaw drops. "Oh, wow."

I fight a grin. "You like it? I think Evie will never cease to impress."

He shakes his head like he's clearing it. "Yeah! I mean, you look great! I mean..." He shakes his head again. "Do you want to dance?"

"Before you embarrass yourself further? Sure."

"After you." He says.

And let me just tell you, Carlos has no shame in the way he dances. He's an amazing dancer, but he does so many tricks it's hard to keep up!

Then comes Mal's time. Horns go up, blowing hard. A spotlight goes on Lumiere.

"The future Lady Mal!" He announces.

Evie grabs Doug's hand. I grab Carlos and shove through people to get next to them, and Jay and Lonnie follow. Lumiere steps aside, and Mal comes out.

"Oh, my gosh..." I breathe. "Evie, you've really killed all other dresses."

She smiles. Mal's dress is a gorgeous blue and yellow, with a skirt that goes up around her knees and a gray cape. She's wearing a braid, something I never thought I'd see her in for some reason. Lumiere says something to her and she laughs, grinning madly.

Evie starts clapping her hands. I join quickly with the rest of the gang, whooping and cheering loudly. Mal walks down the stairs and King Adam---wait, no, just Adam now.... I guess. This is hard! Beast goes up and takes her hand. Belle and Beast talk to Mal for a minute, and whatever they tell her, it must be good. She's glowing when Evie and I step up to take her into the crowd.

"How are you?" Evie asks her.

"Uhh, I sort of feel like I'm gonna throw up." Mal says.

I laugh. "That's all right. It's nerves. We all get them, right Carlos?"

"Hey!"

"We're right here with you, okay?" Evie asks. Mal smiles and nods. Horns start playing again, this time for Ben's arrival. Evie squeals and turns towards Lumiere with Mal and I.

"King Benjamin!" Lumiere says. Everyone starts clapping as Ben comes out with a nervous smile on his face. Evie cheers and Mal joins, us all clapping. I can't believe that just this morning we were tied up in Uma's ship!

"Go get 'im." I tell Mal, nudging her towards him. She smiles and walks forward to meet Ben. He doesn't look happy, but scared. He bows to her and she, confused, bows back the same way. I giggle and Evie shushes me.

They both straighten up and Mal clasps her hands in front of herself happily. Ben doesn't join her---or our---enthusiasm.

"Mal...I wish I had time to explain." Ben starts, but the spotlight is back on the entrance, and I have an awful feeling in the pit of my stomach.

No. No. This can't be happening.

Uma walks out into the light.

Okay, so this is a shorter chapter. Sorry! Hope you enjoy it anyways! Also, I'm trying to decide if I want Ellie to get enchanted with a love spell as well as Ben... should I? I can't decide... hmmmmm...

HELP MEH.

Comment please!

How To Train Mal To Be A Dragon

[image]

None of us could have possibly guessed *that* was what Ben wished he could explain.

The entire boat gasps and Mal's is above all of them. Belle and Beast watch, along with Fairy Godmother, in horror as Ben leaves Mal behind and climbs the steps to take Uma's hand. Mal looks like she can't breathe. Carlos turns with his mouth open to stare at Mal. So does everyone else. I don't think she notices.

As Uma and Ben pass them, Belle and Beast give her surprised greetings. She smiles back nervously, an expression I never thought I'd see on that shrimp.

Once down the stairs, Ben takes Uma's hand and kisses a ring on her finger. My hand involuntarily jumps to my mouth when I realize it's *Ben's* ring. The gold one he gave Mal!

And then Ben and Uma come forward, to Mal's hurt expression. "I'm sorry." Ben says happily. "It all happened so fast. Something happened to me, while I was on the Isle with Uma."

"Yeah, it's called getting kidnapped." I mutter. What is going on?

"A connection." Ben says, looking at Uma the way he used to look at Mal. A pained almost whimper escapes Mal.

"What are you saying?" She whispers.

Ben rolls his head around, still smiling. "I'm saying---"

"It was love!" Uma interrupts, almost girlishly. "It was! I just---I realized how alike Ben and I are." She turns to look at Mal. "You know?"

"We are." Ben tells her. "You're so beautiful." He murmurs.

"Ben." Mal pleads. "Ben!"

He turns to look at her, surprised.

"Did you go back for her?" Mal asks, her voice cracking.

Ben turns more towards her, like he's realizing something, but Uma shakes her head. "He didn't have to." She tells Mal. "I dove through the barrier before it closed and I'm an excellent swimmer."

"You are!" Ben says.

"Thank you!" She giggles.

Mal is still standing with her hands in front of her, looking like the world is ending. How could Ben do this to her?

Uma moves from Ben and takes Mal's hand. "Listen. Mal." Mal flinches under Uma's touch. "I just really wanna thank you." Uma tells her. "I do! For everything." She hugs Mal, and Mal looks as disgusted as I feel. Mal looks short if breath now. I don't think she's actually breathing right anymore.

Ben moves next to Uma again. "Don't you see, Mal? You were right! You knew that we weren't meant to be together." He leans closer. "That's why you never told me that you loved me."

Is this why he's doing this? Because she never said that? Because even the Duke of Weaseltown could see right now that Mal's heart is breaking.

"Be--Ben, I---" Mal can't talk. Uma looks a bit smug as she hands her purse to a girl and starts dancing with Ben. Right in front of Mal.

I rush forward and take her arm just as Evie takes her other one. "Come on, Mal." I hear the song playing. Oh, typical. It's 'Kiss The Girl.' Evie and I pull Mal back with our group, and Carlos looks angry.

"Not too thrilled I *risked my life* for him." He says loudly. Ben doesn't

even glance away from Uma.

"I can't believe this. Look at Mal." I whisper. She doesn't hear me, but Carlos looks at her.

"I never thought I'd see Mal look scared." He mutters.

Lonnie comes up behind Mal. "We're with you, Mal."

Mal doesn't respond, watching the scene for a few more agonizing seconds. Jay comes up and takes Mal's arm. "Let's get outta here." He tells us.

"Okay." Mal says in a tiny voice.

Jane rushes past us, dashing up the stairs. I follow her path to Lumiere. What could she possibly...

The window.

The stained-glass window of Mal!

I let go of Carlos and rush after Jane. "Lumiere!" I call before she can. "Unveil the gift, they need to see it!" I yell. Jane nods.

"The window! Get it out!" She yells.

Mal talks with Beast and Belle for a few seconds, then starts up the stairs quickly. "Mal, wait!" I stop her. "Wait just one more second."

Lumiere hastens the spotlight. "And now, the unveiling of King Ben's masterpiece! Designed especially for his lady."

Mal buries her face in her gloves. I put an arm around her shoulder. "Look up, Mal. Trust me, please."

She does, just as the tarp falls off the window.

Oh my goodness.

That stained glass painting is even better in person. Mal's hair is purple, with green eyes and a purple gown, and Ben at her feet. This is how Ben sees Mal.

Everyone starts clapping, Jane and me the wildest. Lumiere puts his hand on his heart.

And Ben.

Ben stares at it, moving forward as if in a trance. He doesn't seem like he remembers making it.

"Ben did that?" Mal asks in surprise.

"Yeah, he did. He did it for you." I squeeze her shoulders.

"Ellie..." Mal steps down the stairs. "Ben's known who I was all along." Evie and I follow her down.

"He loves the real you." Evie smiles.

"A true love." Mal murmurs.

"I told you." Carlos says. I elbow him.

Uma looks at Ben's awed expression a moment longer then holds her mermaid skirt up as best she can and storms over in our direction. "Cover that back up!" She barks.

Lumiere backs up. "I will not!" He says in his french accent.

Everyone stars whisper and talking in confusion. Uma turns back to Ben. "Um... Uh, why don't you tell everyone the present you have for me, Ben?" Uma asks. Is it just me, or does she seem... nervous?

Ben turns from the picture, a hazy and confused look on his face. But he gives a tight smile. "I have an announcement!" He holds out his hand and Uma takes it. "Uma will be joining me on the court tonight as my Lady."

Beast goes forward angrily. "Son---"

"NOT NOW, DAD!" Ben roars all of the sudden. Everyone jumps, including me. What has gotten into him?

"Uh..." Ben seems to shake himself. Like he doesn't know what he's

doing...

"Uh... So, as my gift." Ben continues. "Uh, to her." Uma looks happily at him. "I'm bringing down the barrier once and for all!"

"No!" I yell. Everyone explodes into shouting and gasping. Beast looks helplessly at Fairy Godmother.

Mal looks at me and Evie. They look as shocked as I do.

Ben extends his arm to FG. "Fairy Godmother."

FG turns to him with her mouth wide open in surprise.

"Bring down the barrier." Ben tells her.

"I most certainly will not!" FG exclaims.

"I AM YOUR KING!" Ben bellows.

"Obey him!" Uma orders.

FG gasps at Uma's tone.

"Ben's been spelled." Mal whispers.

"Uma found your spellbook." Evie says.

A shock goes through me as I realize she's right. If Uma dove through the barrier, and Mal left her spellbook on the Isle...

Oh, no.

Uma spelled Ben to love her!

Uma takes Ben's hand and makes him look only at her. "Ben. Just look at me." She whispers.

Mal looks at the stained glass window once more. Then she steps forward hesitantly. "Ben!"

Uma looks at her, furious, but Mal continues. "Ben." She walks up and stops right in front of him. Next to Uma. "Look at me." She says

softly.

"No!" Uma says firmly. "Look at me! You love me, remember?"

"No you don't." Mal says, shaking her head. I clutch at Evie and find she's doing the same thing.

"Yes, you do!" Uma yells.

"Look at me." Mal tells him.

"Bring down the barrier, now!" Uma orders, turning to FG.

"I do *not* take orders from you!" FG tells her.

Uma turns back to Ben. "*Ben?"* She demands.

"Ben." Mal says, close to tears now. "I never told you that I loved you because I thought that I wasn't good enough. And I thought that it was only a matter of time before you realized that yourself! But Ben!" She points to the window. "That's *me!"* Ben turns to look at the window, still confused.

"I'm part Isle, and part Auradon!" Mal insists.

"Ben!" Uma grabs him and makes him look at her. "Eyes over here."

"And Ben, you've always known who we were and who we can be," Mal continues.

"Don't listen to her." Uma tells him.

"Ben." Mal says calmly. "I know what love feels like now." She beams. "Ben... Of course I love you! Ben I've always loved you!" She puts her hand on his shoulders and kisses him. Everyone in the crowd awww's, and Evie clasps her hands with mine.

Mal backs off, and a slow grin spreads across Ben's face. "Mal."

"True love's kiss." I whisper.

"Works every time." Evie finishes.

Everything is perfect for one second. Then Uma explodes. "UH! Gimme the wand!" She yells, lunging for FG. FG yelps and holds the wand away, people crowding in front of her.

"Guards! Seize her!" FG screams.

Uma seems to realize her situation, and runs to the edge of the boat.

"Uma!" I yell.

"No! No! No!" Mal yells, putting her arms in front of everyone. I shove to the front. "Stop! Please, stop!" Mal pleads.

"Uma, I know you." Mal tells her. "You are so much more than just a villain. And you have to believe me because I've been there. Do not let your pride get in the way of something that you really want!" Mal tells her.

Uma doesn't seem convinced. I push forward, ignoring Mal's protests. "Uma. On the Isle, you told me that you always wanted to go to Auradon when you were little. Here's your chance! You deserve so much more than what the Isle has to offer."

She looks ready to accept, but her shell necklace glows. She looks back up at me with a pained expression, then smirks. She grabs the boat and swings herself over.

"No! No! Uma!" Mal shrieks. Uma splashes into the water, and everyone crowds to the edge of the boat to see what happened to her. For a second, there's nothing but a faint glow. And then the water swirls into a whirlpool that explodes, showering us all in seawater. When I look up, Uma is laughing. She's supersized, with green tentacles instead of her lower body.

"She's doing what Ursula did!" I shout.

Everyone crowds to the edge of the boat again as Uma settles into the water. "True love's kiss won't defeat this!" She yells. "THE WORLD WILL KNOW MY NAME!"

She sends tentacles up at us, and I take careful aim at the necklace.

If I can just hit it...

But she sees me. "Not now, Princess!" A tentacle wraps around my waist and drags me overboard.

"ELLIE!" someone screams as I go underwater. I fight the fleshy thing holding me. I dig my fingers into it, feeling just as I did when the Hanses threw me over. Except this time, Carlos won't be able to reach me. I scream in frustration and kick at the tentacle, my breath leaving me and my vision going spotty.

And then, she lets go.

My eyes shoot open and I kick off the tentacle, propelling above the surface. I gasp for air, feeling the ice crusting my skin and hair. I look around to see what made her let go, and I see a purple dragon flying above me, blowing flames at Uma. I panic for a second, before I realize...

Maleficent is still a lizard.

But who...?

"*Mal?"* I yell.

So the NEXT chapter will probably maybe be the last Descendants #2 one... if I can squish it all in.

OK. One thing I'ma say: I just want to point out that I have 1.2K VIEWS NOW!!! AAAHHH!!!! SO HAPPY!!!

:D anyways, hope you guys liked this chapter!

You And Me. All The Way.

[image]

The dragon, Mal, whatever, bobs their head once at me then swoops down and sends another burst of flame at Uma. Uma ducks underwater just in time, then comes back in full force, sending a wave of water crashing backward. The wave crushes me under, slamming me against the boat. I fight my way to the surface again, clutching a stray rope on the side of the boat to keep above.

Ben's at the edge, and he lets out a pained roar before disappearing for a second. The next thing I hear is "Ben! No!" and Ben is diving off the side of the boat. I gasp and lose my hold on the rope, going under again. I love Evie, but this dress!

I fight my way up again, finding Ben in between Mal and Uma. "Mal! Uma!" He yells. "Stop! Back down!"

Uma laughs. "What'ya gonna do, Ben? Splash me?" She splashes herself.

"That's enough! This has got to stop, this isn't the answer!" Ben yells as he treads water. "The fighting has got to stop! Nobody wins this way. We have to listen. And respect each other." he looks between Mal and Uma. "It won't be easy. But let's be brave enough to try!"

Ben turns to Uma. "Uma. I know you want what's best for the Isle. Help me make a difference!" He holds his hand out to her.

I slowly paddle next to him. Uma's not buying it.

"Uma." I call. "Mal. This is never going to stop! We can't win this way! Nobody will, like Ben said!" Ben looks at me, grateful. "Uma.

Contrary to what people may think, you're not the villain."

Uma stares at us for a long moment. Mal roars once. A green tentacle reaches for Ben's hand. But she doesn't shake. She drops a piece of gold in his palm. Ben stares at it then closes his fist.

But I'm watching Uma. She gives a sad smile, and then drops below the surface. Ben looks at his closed palm for a moment longer, then turns to me. "Are you okay?"

"I just wish..." I sigh. "Let's get back up, I'm not sure this dress will stay above much longer."

Ben smiles and starts paddling towards the boat. Carlos and Jay drop a ladder down that Ben climbs up and I (much slower, curse this dress!) follow. Everyone starts clapping when Ben and I make it up. But once I'm on, Carlos grabs me and hugs tight. That makes people clap louder, and my face goes red.

"Are you okay? Did she hurt you?" Carlos asks, completely oblivious.

"I'm fine!" I assure him. "She didn't do anything, except maybe ruin my dress." I feel my head. "And I lost my crown."

"You don't need one." he tells me. "You look like royalty either way."

"Carlie is alive!" Somebody yells. I choose to ignore it and follow Ben to the foot of the stairs. I look around. Where's Mal?

I glance up to see the purple dragon touching down in front of the glass window. The dragon dissolves into purple smoke that folds in on itself and turns into Mal. But she's not in the yellow and blue dress.

"It's the window her." I whisper. Evie beams.

Mal's dress catches on fire at the waist, and she hurriedly pats it down. Once she's done, she looks at Ben and grins. She puts a hand to her mouth and waves. Then she gathers her huge skirt and curtsies low to the ground. Ben does a low bow back. Mal

straightens up laughing.

Evie nudges me and points to her. I follow her to the foot of the steps as two butlers take Mal's arms and lead her down the stairs. Everyone starts clapping, and Evie and I stand on Mal's either sides.

"So..." Mal breathes. "I did not know I could do that."

"Tell me about it, that makes three of us!" I say. Evie laughs.

"Oh!" Evie exclaims, leaning down and blowing out a stray flame.

"Thank you." Mal laughs. Evie and I hold out our hands.

"Shall we?" Evie asks, all seriousness.

"We shall." Mal says, taking our hands. We let go when she gets to Ben, and they walk towards each other.

And then Mal kisses him again. Carlos puts his hand on Ben's shoulder. "All right, all right, all right."

"Dude, did ya have to do that?" I mutter.

"What? It makes the rest of us feel bad!"

"What is that supposed to mean?"

"It means he wants to kiss you!" Dude appears.

"DUDE!" Carlos yells.

Mal and Ben laugh, and so does everyone else. Ben looks around. "I owe you guys so much.

"Yeah!" Evie tells him.

"You got that right." Carlos says, patting his shoulders.

"If there's anything that you need, or anything that I can do for you---" Ben starts, and Evie moves forward.

"Um. Actually, there is, Ben." She looks at the Isle in the distance. "I

know a girl who'd really love to come to Auradon. It's Drizella's daughter Dizzy?" She looks at Mal and smiles. "She's like a little sister to me."

"Then she should come." Ben says.

Mal puts her hand on Evie's shoulder. Evie grins. "OK great!" She starts to back away then comes back up. "Actually, um!" Everyone laughs at her enthusiasm. "Ben, there's a lot of kids who would really love it here in Auradon. Kids like us, who also deserve a second chance. Can I maybe get you a list?" She asks.

"Yes." Ben says. "Yes! Absolutely!" he laughs and smiles. "Please." Everybody claps again, and Evie smiles. I tap Ben's shoulder.

"I, for one, know someone who told me they wanted to come here." I tell him.

"Wait, what?" Carlos asks. "Who?"

"Gil. Gaston's son."

"*What?"* Pretty much everyone on the ship yells.

"Yeah, I get it, he tried to kill your dad, Ben." I look to Beast. "No offense! I'm not saying I wish he did or anything, but Gil is sweet. He's completely innocent. He told me himself he wants to come here."

Ben looks a little more pained when he says, "If he wants to come, I'll let him."

"But with a bit of extra security!" Beast chimes in. Old habits die hard, I guess. But that's enough for me.

"Wait, didn't Gil help capture you?" Carlos mutters under his breath.

"Yeah, and he also almost set me free. If Hans number one hadn't gotten involved." I mutter back.

"Lady Mal!" A butler says. He holds Mal's spellbook out. "We found

your spell book below deck. Uma had it."

Mal takes it and looks at it. "Oo. Um... You know?" She looks up. "This seems like the kind of thing that belongs in the hands of Fairy Godmother. Fairy Godmother?" She calls out.

"Yes! That's me!" FG breaks into the circle. "Thank you."

"This belongs in the museum." Mal says.

"It does, mm-hm." FG says. "Yes, and I'm gonna take it---"

"Go for it." Mal smiles. FG does take it and walks off, to everyone's laughs.

Mal looks at Ben. "I'm not gonna be needing it anymore." Ben looks at her and smiles, and her grin goes mischievous. She kicks water his way, splashing him.

She laughs and he splashes her back. She lets out a scream of laughter and everyone else starts clapping as they start to kiss again, but Mal just tilts his crown to the side. He rolls his eyes and kisses her, and I grin. Dude sits next to me, his fur soaked.

"Where can I get a fur-dryer?" He yells.

Ben holds Mal's hand and watches the rest of us. Wait, wasn't my dress longer a minute ago? What in the world?

♫*Looking back at yesterday*♫ Ben starts.

♫*I thought I gave it everything*♫

♫*But still there's so much road ahead of me*♫

Mal turns to look at him. ♫*When I looked into your eyes*♫

♫*I guess I didn't recognize* ♫

She spreads her hands. ♫*Who we are, and all that we can be*♫

Ben offers his hand and she takes it. Everyone starts dancing at once.

♫*Sometimes it's hard to find yourself* ♫

♫*But it's worth it in the end* ♫

♫*'Cuz in your heart is where it all begins*♫ Everyone bows. The music swells.

♫*We gotta be BOLD* ♫Mal and Ben dance down the people, splashing. ♫*We gotta be BRAVE we gotta be FREE*♫

♫*Hey!* ♫

♫*We gotta get loud*♫ Ben and Carlos bow to eachother ♫*makin' that change*♫

♫*Y ou gotta believe* ♫

♫*Whoa!* ♫

♫*We'll look deep inside* ♫

♫*And we'll rise up and shine* ♫

♫*We can be bold* ♫

♫*We can be brave* ♫

♫*Let everyone see* ♫

♫*It starts with you and meh!* ♫

♫*Whoa, whoa, HEY!* ♫

♫*It starts with you and meh* ♫

♫*Whoa, whoa, HEY!* ♫

♫*It starts with you and meh!* ♫

Evie, Carlos and I go off to the side. ♫*There's something special that*

I've learned♫

♫It's together, we can change the world ♫

*♫Everybody's got somethin' they can bring♫*Carlos bumps me.

Mal and Jay join us. *♫When you take a look inside yourself♫*

♫Do you wish that you were something else? ♫

♫But who you are is who you need to be ♫

We back away. *♫Sometimes it's hard to find yourself, but it's worth it in the end♫*

*♫'Cuz in your heart is where it all begins!♫*We form a circle and stomp in the water.

♫We gotta be BOLD we gotta be BRAVE we gotta be FREE ♫

♫HEY! ♫

♫We gotta get loud, makin' that change, you gotta believe ♫

♫Woah! ♫

♫We'll look deep inside ♫

♫And we'll rise up and shine ♫

♫We can be bold, we can be brave, let everyone see ♫

♫It starts with you and meh! ♫

♫Woah, woah, HEY! ♫

♫It starts with you and meh! ♫

♫Woah, woah, HEY! ♫

♫It starts with you and meh! ♫

I run up on the stairs with Evie and Mal. They grab hands with me.

♫If we all can do our part ♫

♫We know that it can be the start ♫

♫To bring about the difference that we need. Yeah! ♫

Ben comes behind us. *♫I promise we can work this out♫*

♫I promise we can see it through ♫

♫Don't you know it's up to me?♫ I look at Carlos and grab his hand.

♫It's up to me and you! ♫

He grins.

He drags me to the middle and starts dancing around, me laughing at him.

♫We gotta be BOLD we gotta be BRAVE we gotta be FREE ♫

♫Wanna be free? ♫

♫We gotta get loud♫ Carlos stomps to me and swings my arms over his shoulders, dragging me out of the circle.

♫Makin' that change, you gotta believe ♫

♫WOAH! ♫

It's Jay and Lonnie in the center now.

♫We'll look deep inside (Take you heart!) ♫

♫And we'll rise up and shine♫ Evie shoves them out of the way and offers a hand to Doug, who slides in to take it.

♫We can be bold, we can be brave, let everyone see! ♫

♫It starts with you and meh! ♫

♫Woah, woah, hey! ♫

Ben and Mal dance, and are about to kiss again when we all kick water on them.

Ben and Mal run up the stairs, Ben taking his crown off to shake his head like a dog.

Carlos leaps above a pair of girls to do the splits on the ground! I laugh and take his outstretched hand to pull him up.

I plant a kiss on his cheek.

♫It starts with you and me ♫

Okay, I'm sorry for the delay that I almost never give. Yesterday was hectic, I had to prepare for a track meet that was today. I did ok. I'm not the best runner ever, heh.

Sad to say, this is the last chapter of Descendants 2. I will be moving on to my own ideas now. I apologize ahead of time if it goes off the storyline of movie 3 when it comes out. 2019, WHOOP WHOOP!

Also, I would like to take the time to celebrate that STAR WARS THE LAST JEDI IS NOW IN MY HANDS AT THIS MOMENT!! EEK! I will be watching it with my family tonight. Can't wait!

As always, comment, and I hope you love the ending of the second movie version!

(Also, I would like to point out that I now have 1.5K view. *MENTALLY HUGS EVERYONE WHO'S READING THIS* Thanks guys so much!)

Also, just FYI, the updates will be coming a little slower now, because I don't have a script to help me along. All from my brain, now!

New VK's

[image]

"Ellie. *Ellie.* Elicia!"

I snap awake, my head popping up from its place on my elbow. Carlos grins.

"If you thought my story was boring, you could have just *told* me."

I give a yawn and straighten off the picnic table. Dude hops up in my lap. "Hi buddy. No, Carlos, I'm sorry. I just--" Big yawn. "I never get any sleep any more."

"Because of Jane?"

"Yes. She's so stressed about the tests, and the classes, and the fact that she *still* doesn't have a boyfriend, she keeps me up!"

Carlos laughs. "You could always ask to switch roommates, you know."

"I don't want a new roommate! I just want Jane to shut up sometimes!" I snap. I sigh and rub my forehead. "Sorry."

"No sorries." He says, chipper. "On the Isle, people were way grumpier than a sleepy Ellie."

"Burn!" Dude says.

"You *still* talk?" I gripe. "Wasn't the truth gummy supposed to wear off by now?"

"I keep having Mal make them." Carlos tells me. "Dude doesn't want to stop talking. He says he likes them."

"Yeah!" Dude says. He hops off my lap again. "Now I can tell people when I'm hungry! Speaking of, I'm hungry!"

"Ha-ha." Carlos says. "I just fed you like an hour ago!"

"Your point is?"

"As fun as this would be to watch," I interrupt. "Carlos, I'm sorry, I have to go. I'm kinda glad you woke me up, because--"

The bell rings.

"Crap." I mutter. "Late for class. Bye!" I kiss him on the cheek quickly and rush to science. Evie waves to me just as I sit down. Mr. Deley gives a grumpy look.

"Elicia! How nice of you to join us."

"Sorry, Mr. Deley." I tell him.

"Sorry doesn't remove the fact that this was your fifth tardy this month. Detention, Elicia. My classroom, 5:00 sharp."

I groan and put my head on my desk. Evie's hand rubs my shoulder.

"Now!" Mr. Deley says. "Tell me, class, what is the..."

"Hey." Evie whispers. "Why do you keep being late?"

I look up. "Jane. She's keeping me up at night. She has to study for this, complain about that!"

Evie smiles sympathetically. "Don't worry. She'll stop eventually."

"But until then, I have detention." I say.

She shrugs. "How bad can it be?"

"Well, fancy seeing you here."

I groan and bang my head on the desk. "Why am I not surprised that Ned of Maldonia is in detention?"

He sits down next to me. I grab my bag to move, and he latches onto my wrist. "Don't move, Ells. I just want to talk."

"You. Just want to *talk*. Funny, how you expect me to believe you."

"Listen, I just wanted to say that I really like how you're handling your permanent decision to stay in Auradon. Getting detention? Big deal!"

"Oh, ha ha." I scowl, ripping my hand away and moving chairs. He just moves next to me again. I groan and lay my head down on the table. "What do you *want*, you jerk?"

"Just to propose something. You know how magic doesn't work on you anymore, since you freeze yourself to get by it?"

My head bolts up. No one's supposed to know about that. "How did you---"

"I have my ways."

"Don't you dare think of threatening me, Ned." I warn. "You'll regret it."

"Aw, she's threatening me!" He giggles. "No, I just wanted to say, there's a couple classes I'm failing. Would be a shame if your secret got out. And I want you to help me."

I grit my teeth. Jerk. "What would I have to do, exactly?"

"Oh, nothing. Just do my homework for a few months."

"You call that *nothing?* It's cheating!"

"Good!" Ned says happily.

"You seriously think I'm just going to do that for you?"

"Unless you want your secret out..."

"You don't even know the half of it." I snarl. I don't care if there's consequences, I get up and walk from Deley's room. But of course

Ned gets up to follow me.

"I actually *do* know the half of it. And the rest, too." Ned says smugly. "I know exactly what went down on the Isle."

"You don't know anything, Nedwin." I snap. He scowls at his full name.

"But I do. I have a source from the Isle." he pulls out his phone and flashes a quick picture in my face of my frozen body. I look asleep, but Carlos is carrying me here so I assume this is when he picked me out of the water.

I glare at Ned. "I don't care if that gets out." I tell him.

He glares, but gets back his composure then. "Fine. Then I'll tell Ben."

"He already knows, dimwit."

"No. I'll tell Ben you've been going to the Isle every night."

"What?" I ask. "I don't do that."

"No." Ned agrees. "But Ben might think you do. Come on, Ells, just help me!"

"No way." I stalk away from him, leaving a trail of ice that he slips on. What could be so important that he needs me for? And what source?? How'd he find out about my powers? Well, that version of my powers. Everybody knows the normal amount.

I sigh and tug on my hair. I can't be thinking about this now, the new VK's will be coming this afternoon! Dizzy and Gil are the only ones I know, but Evie had an entire list of people she wanted here.

I grab my phone when it vibrates. Sure enough, Ned's posted the picture of me *everywhere.* I groan. This day could not possibly get worse.

"Hey, Princess!"

Nevermind.

I speed up but the hunter's son from Snow White still catches up. "Princess! How's your day?" He just doesn't seem to get it. Ever since Carlos and I started dating, Hector's been stalking me nonstop. It's really annoying.

"My day would be fine if you would just leave me alone." I tell him. "I have a date with Carlos today, and I'd rather you not ruin it like the last ten times."

Another thing with him. He seems to be able to track my every move and get there before I do. Being the hunter's kid, I'm not really surprised. And he *always* ruins my dates. Every. Single. Time.

"But you---"

"Are sick and tired of you stalking me." I snap.

"But---"

"Hector! I want you to leave me alone! What part of that do you not get?"

"I saw your picture."

"What?" He shows me the picture that Ned posted everywhere and I roll my eyes. "That's from when---"

"When Ben got captured?" Hector asks. Yeah, that story got out pretty fast. People really sympathized me and Ben then. Until, people found out that the only reason I was there was because I went voluntarily.

Hector laughs. "Well, now everybody knows just how big of a misfit you are. Your mom's already telling everybody that she had no idea her---now your--- powers could do that. This picture's been spreading like wildfire."

"Well, good thing I have ice powers then." I say. "Now, go away. Carlos is waiting, and I'd rather you not be tagging along."

He shrugs but doesn't follow when I walk away. I find Carlos waiting for me like usual with Dude sitting by. Dude runs over and jumps up into my arms. I laugh and rub his head. He licks my nose multiple times until Carlos pulls him away.

"Dude, what have I said? No licking people without their permission!" Carlos complains.

I laugh and scratch Dude again. "I don't mind all that much."

"See? You owe me a dog biscuit!" Dude says.

"You guys bet on it?"

"We bet on whether someone wouldn't mind." Carlos explains. "I think it's weird, he thinks it's perfectly normal. Anyway, where do you want to go?"

"Well where have you not been yet?" I ask.

"Um, I don't know. I haven't seen Chad's kingdom, or Audrey's, or pretty much anybody's kingdoms." He says.

"Well, I normally don't like visiting Chad's kingdom, but they have like the *best* donut shop. Cinderella's recipes are hard to beat." I loop my arm through his. "I'll show you where. ANd they have doggie donuts, too, so Dude can come."

"DOGGIE DONUTS!" Dude cheers, leaping from Carlos' arms and trotting ahead of me. I laugh and have a limo take us to Chad's kingdom. I hate it here, but seriously. The donuts are heaven.

I order a custom-made chocolate donut with frozen sprinkles, and Carlos, not listening to me, orders an old-fashioned lemon one because he says it looks good. So I laugh harder than I normally would have when he spits it out and throws the rest away. Dude won't stop nagging us until we buy an entire bag of doggie donuts.

As we're driving back, Carlos hesitantly starts talking. "Ellie, um, did you see the picture that Ned posted?"

"Yeah. He wanted me to do his homework for him so he posted it as

revenge."

"Where'd he even get it? I thought the Isle didn't have good tech." Carlos says.

"I don't think they're supposed to." I admit. "But I know for a fact that Beast put cameras up after Ben's official proclamation to bring Mal, Evie, Jay, and you here."

"He did?" Carlos asks in surprise. "Why?"

"Because he was scared, I guess." I shrug. "I only found out about it like a month or so ago."

"Wait---Ellie, what time was Dizzy and everybody supposed to get here?"

"Like 6:00. Why?"

Carlos scrambles to check his phone. "It's 5:50!" He taps the driver. "Faster, I don't wanna miss it!"

The driver gives a grumpy nod and drives a bit faster. We get there just as the other limo is pulling up. Mal smiles. "Late."

"Everyone else is early." I grumble. Evie smiles.

The limo holding the new VK's stops and the door flies open. Dizzy, in all her bubbly glory, zips out and runs straight to Evie.

"Dizzy!" Evie says, hugging her tight. "How was your drive?"

"Amazing! I tried chocolate, and I loved it! And I---" Dizzy catches sight of Mal. "Mal!" She runs and hugs her next. "Ellie!" She moves on to me and I hug her back, laughing. She pulls away and look in dismay at my hair. "What did you do to it?" She shrieks. "The dye is almost gone!"

"I know, I've been trying to find someone to re-dye it." I tell her.

"Well, look no more. I'll do it tomorrow."

Ben clears his throat. "Moving on?"

I nod and let go of Dizzy. She moves back to the few VK's. I recognize Gil, and he waves ecstatically at me. He's holding a bunch of melting chocolate eggs.

I don't recognize the rest. But I know their names. There's a girl with black hair and scarlet streaks and a arrogant attitude. Madison, Queen of Heart's daughter.

There's a boy dressed entirely in rich purple and has a face resembling that of melting wax, his nose droops. Ratcliffe's kid, Randolph.

And there's Gil and Dizzy, and last is a girl that shrinks over herself. I know for a fact that her dad is Claude Frollo. Her name is Brutta, and that means "ugly" in Italian. She's anything but, with long blonde hair and amber eyes. But she hides behind everyone else, dressed in ripped jeans and a worn purple jacket. Her hair is limp, and she tries to hide behind it.

[image]

"Welcome, all of you." Ben says. I catch Beast eyeing Gil, so I walk over and link my arm in his. He grins and hugs me tight.

"Thank you! I can't believe I'm actually here!" He cries. I laugh and hug him back, noting the guards Beast insisted on having are getting twitchy.

"Uma and Harry were so mad." Gil informs me. "But I promised they could visit. Can they?" he asks worriedly.

I hesitate. "It might be kind of hard. But I'll try."

"Yes!" He cheers. Brutta makes a noise and Gil gestures to her. "Can you get the guards to stop?" He whispers.

I turn to Ben, who has them leave. Beast doesn't look happy. Brutta gives me a small smile.

"You're Brutta, right?"

"I go by Brit." She whispers.

"Brit, I like it." I smile. Ratcliffe's kid scoffs.

"And you're Randolph." I tell him. "Right?"

"Yeah. So?"

I shrug and move to Madison. She puts her hand out abruptly. I'm not sure why I'm doing this instead of Ben. I think it was probably because I was closer at the time.

"Hi. I'm Madison, but if you call me that, then OFF WITH YOUR HEAD!" She yells, miming her mother. Then she cracks up. "Kidding, y'all. I go by Maddie."

I shake her hand. "Nice."

She flips her hair into Randolph's face, and he glares.

"So!" Ben says. "We're going to go inside, and we'll assign you guys your dorms, and then we'll leave you guys to it. Come on inside." Ben holds Mal's hand as we walk away, and I'm praying he doesn't make the statue change. Beast and Bell stay far away from Gil, choosing to talk to Dizzy. Gil looks so sad that I draw away from Carlos and bump his shoulder with mine.

"Hey. You 'k?" I ask.

He looks at me and smiles again. "I'm fine, I just really miss my crew. Brit's on it too, but I think she'd rather be here then on the Isle."

"Why is she so..."

"Jumpy? Scared?" Gil asks. "Because of her dad."

"Why? I mean, he named her ugly, but what does he do?"

He glances back nervously at Brit. "I think she should be the one to tell you that."

I look back at her again. She walks next to Dizzy, who's chattering away with Beast and Belle.

We get inside, and Doug reads off room numbers. Then he gets to, "Brit, in room 240. Okay, that's it."

"Wait, Doug. That's my room." I tell him.

He looks down at his list. "Right. Sorry. Ben moved Jane because Gil asked for Brit to be with you because Brit says she likes you and some other babbling that Gil did."

"She doesn't trust the roommate she got assigned to first." Gil explains. "Some girl named Audrey."

"Oh! If she got Audrey, I'll gladly let her move in Jane's spot." I say. She wouldn't last a day sharing a room with Audrey. "I'll just have to tell Jane why."

Doug writes something down. "Okay, so you guys can find them, right?" he asks the kids. They all nod and run off. Gil stays with Brit and I show them where my room is. I find Jane's already moved out, but Brit's face goes soft instanty. She goes to Jane's old bed and sits down, rubbing the fabric.

"This place is amazing." She whispers. Her eyes brim with tears and I feel kind of bad. What made her this way?

Gil sits down next to her. "Brit? I gotta go find my dorm, are you okay here with Ellie?"

She looks up and smiles. "Yeah. Go find your dorm."

He hugs her and leaves, waving to me. I sit down on my bed and cross my legs. "Are you okay?"

She nods. "This place is so different from the Isle." She looks over at me. "My dad's staying on the Isle, right?"

I nod, confused. "Yeah, only the kids are coming here."

She seems to melt with relief. She falls back on her bed and stares

at the ceiling. "I love it here already." She whispers.

I smile. "Wait until you meet Dude."

"Dude?"

"Carlos' dog. Well, technically, the campus dog. But he loves Carlos. And he can talk!"

Brit sits up and beams, clasping her hands under her chin. "A dog? How many wonderful things are there here?"

I laugh. "You haven't even seen the half of the good things here."

Okay, so I hope you guys like the new update! It takes a lot longer, and longer chapters too, YAY, but still. It's worth it, I love writing about Ellie.

Comment what you think about the new characters, and as always, enjoy!

(Also, I would like to acknowledge the fanfiction Oh, Darling by Poyaay. AWESOME fanfic if you need something to read. It's about Harry Hook and Peter Pan's daughter Peyton.)

Brit's Beginnings

[image]

Picture above is how I kind of imagined Brit. I know that's Willow Shields, but Prim hit so close to home I couldn't help it. (At least I think that is a picture of Willow Shields... It came up when I looked her up.)

"OH MY GOODNESS!" Brit practically screams, trying to fend back a wiggly Dude. I laugh at her delighted expression and Dude's complaints that she won't let him lick her.

She sets him down on the ground and his tail wags. Carlos smiles at Brit's expression. She turns to look at me. "If this isn't the best thing in Auradon, I'm going to be surprised." She goes back to whispering.

"Dude is probably the best you can get, but Auradon has a lot to offer." I tell her.

She beams. "Like what?"

"Like the food here, for instance." I say.

She seems to think for a moment. "How many quarter meals a day?"

"Um...what?"

"Quarter meals." She says, like it's the most obvious thing in the world. "It's what my father gave me. A quarter of a meal. Twice a day."

I glance at Carlos. He signals for me to stop asking about it, but Brit goes on. "I don't think I ever had as much food as everyone else. Everyone else bought lunch at school. I would have given anything to eat the slop everybody else ate. Gil sometimes shared with me. When the teachers weren't looking."

I kneel down. "Brit, was your dad... um, mean? Meaner than the

other villains?"

She ponders for a moment. "Well, I rang the bells. It was hard, because I'm not very big. But I never met anybody else's parents. Why?"

I stand up again and look cautiously at Carlos. He gives me a look that clearly says *shut up I will explain later.*

"No reason." I assure Brit. She beams and Dude whines.

"I'm bored! Take me for a walk! Now!"

"Dude, you literally just walked over here with me!" Carlos protests.

"So?"

Brit kneels and pull Dude into her lap. Surprisingly, he doesn't wiggle away and lets her pet his head. "Oh, I like this girl. She can walk me!"

Carlos shrugs. "If she's okay with it. Just don't put a leash on him."

For the first time, Brit looks angry. She stands and lets Dude down. "I wouldn't dream of it." She whispers firmly. Then her face goes back to the gentle smile and she opens the door to my dorm. Dude races and out Brit chases after him, laughing.

I smile. "She's sweet."

Carlos sighs. "You have no idea how different she could have turned out if she hadn't met Gil."

"Why?"

He rubs his forehead and sits down on my bed next to me. "It's kind of a long story, and it's probably her business, but you need to know which topics to avoid." He takes a deep breath in and is about to start talking again when Dizzy rushes in.

"There you are!" She exclaims. She races over to me and tugs me off the bed. "You said you wanted your hair back to gorgeous, right?

Then come on!"

I look back at Carlos. "I'll tell you later." He promises.

"Exactly, see, he's busy right now, let's go!" Dizzy says. "I already have a line of like seventy people, and boy did they get mad when I said I was doing you first." She giggles and I let her pull me out of the room. I hear Carlos leave and lock it behind him and I wave behind my shoulder.

Dizzy finally gets me to her very decorative store, and she was right. There is a long line of people. Dizzy beams and directs me towards an empty seat.

"Dizzy, how is your store already this filled with hair stuff?" I ask, letting her plop me down.

"Evie had it set up the day after Ben said I could come. I had to add my own flair, but Evie did pretty good. She's the only other person who works here." She points to a blue-haired someone doing a girl's hair. Evie looks up to wave and the customer complains. Dizzy goes over.

"Was that a complaint I heard?" She says in a bossy voice. The customer hurries to apologize. "That's what I thought. Evie, give her only like half of the treatment. I won't allow mistreatment of my staff."

She comes back to me all bubbles and pulls me down by the sink. I watch her rinse the rest of the leftover dye out and she pauses. "Do you want permanent this time? It doesn't actually stay forever, just a lot longer and more vibrant, like Mal's."

"Sure, go crazy." I tell her. "Just don't do the streaks again. I want something new."

Dizzy nods and works her magic in less than an hour this time. Honestly, how does she do this? She twists my hair around to get the water out and applies dye randomly it seems, then has me close my eyes while she blow-dries it. Then she stops.

"Ta-da! You can look."

[image]

"Wow, Dizzy." I say. "That's even better than before!"

She blushes. "I know!"

I start to dig in my pocket. "How much?"

"No charge." She tells me. "You're a personal friend. You get free hair."

The rest of the customers start shouting complaints, saying they've been waiting for hours for a supposed 200$ hair job. Dizzy turns around, blazing mad.

"Out! Out, each and every one of you!" She orders. "If you don't like my prices, you can go someplace else!"

But apparently she's already got quite the reputation, because not one single person leaves. I smile and get off the chair, hugging Dizzy then leaving. I run my hand through my now shorter hair and grin. Dizzy's a magician.

"Ellie! I love this girl!" Dude yelps, running up with Brit, who's panting but grinning.

Dude trots over to me and sits down, letting his tongue hang out. "I challenged her to a race, and she didn't say no! She also won, somehow, but still!"

"Hey, I race you sometimes." I protest.

"Yeah, but you're a snail."

"Hey!"

"Truth gummy!" Dude yelps, hiding behind Brit's legs. Brit grins and kneels down to pick Dude up, not protesting when he licks her nose once.

"This is the sweetest creature ever created by God." Brit insists.

"You haven't even met any of the other dogs!" I tell her. "Or pretty much any other animal that isn't on the Isle."

"Are you saying I'm not the best?" Dude asks in a mock hurt voice.

Brit falls for it and kisses his nose. "She didn't mean it."

I see someone sneaking up behind Brit and cough. "Brit, that's Quentin."

She whirls around and Quentin stops. "I just wanted to see if I could pet your dog." He says.

"Dog? Dog!? I am a campus mutt, thank you!" Dude says. Brit smiles and holds her arms out.

"If he's all right with it. Dude?" He nods and Quentin stretches a hesitant hand out to pat Dude on the head. Dude licks his palm and Quentin smiles. He rubs behind his ears and Dude melts.

"Quentin, you know Brit?" I ask. I'm very aware that once he figures out who she is, this could go two ways. Same with her.

Quentin shakes his head. Brit sets Dude down and holds her pale hand out. She looks a lot better with just having been here a day. Her hunch is gone and she's wearing some of my old clothes, since she hadn't packed any for some reason. I'd told her I'd take her---*shudder*--- shopping later.

Quentin shakes her hand. "I'm Quentin." He says. "My dad's one of the heroes in my story. Well, obviously. I live here." He laughs nervously and lets go, but she just smiles.

"I'm Brit." She says. "My dad's... well.... He's a villain."

"Duh." Quentin says. She laughs.

"Who's your dad?" Brit asks.

I clear my throat. "Um, Brit, that's Quasimodo's son. Quentin, that's

Claude Frollo's daughter."

Both of them go still. "What?" they say at the same time.

"But you're so nice!" Brit says. "My dad said that you dad raised his kids to kill my family!"

"What? No! I don't want to hurt anybody!" Quentin protests. "I can't even play tourney!"

I cough. "Unless you steal a wand, for example..."

He goes pale. "I'm so sorry! I really didn't know it would be you until we got there, and Chad was so nice... until I didn't do it."

"What?" Brit asks.

"Nothing." Me and Quentin say at the same time.

Brit gives a tiny smile. "Well, you're nothing like my dad said you would be." She admits.

"And you're nothing like I thought Frollo's kid would be. You're not ugly at all!" He says.

She looks at me, confused. *Is that a compliment?* she mouths. I nod and she smiles.

"Thank you!"

I pay Quentin's shoulder. "She's one of the VK's that came yesterday." I tell him.

"I know! I mean, I knew Frollo's daughter had come over, dad was freaking out about it." He says.

"OY! You people are forgetting the adorable mutt!" Dude yells, jumping on his hind legs to prop his front ones on my knees.

Brit laughs and picks him up. "Sorry! I'm going to go back to my dorm, you going to come, Ellie?"

"Yeah. I need to get the dye smell out of my hair."

"It looks amazing, by the way." She says. "Bye, Quentin!"

"Bye, Brit."

I smile. This went a lot better than expected.

_____

So... REALLY long gap. Didn't mean to. I got really sick, and busy. I'm good now tho, so UPDATES GALORE!!!

Heh.

ANY-who. This chapter's shorter because I couldn't figure out what needed to happen, but the next one will be more detailed. Promise.

Also, ACKNOWLEDGE THE FACT THAT GOD'S NOT DEAD 3 IS OUT!!! WHOOP WHOOP!!!! *Dances around room for like half an hour* SO EXCITED, BEEN WATIN' FOR THIS FOR FOREVER! WHOOP!

(If that offends anybody....sorry. I'm just really happy.)

K bye.

This Was... Unexpected

"Wait, so you introduced them, and nothing happened?"

"Yeah! I was surprised too, but they're like best friends now."

Mal shakes her head. "I can't believe Brit is okay with that guy. I know for a fact that Frollo told her some awful stuff about Quasi, Esmeralda, and Phoebus. She basically heard how horrid they were every day, since those were her version of bedtime stories as a kid."

"Why does she act the way she does?" I ask. "Gil, Carlos, now you are all talking like she's got some big story, and I'm kind of guessing at it, but what happened?"

Mal winces. "Ah. See, that's more her business to tell you."

"That's what Gil said too!" I say. "But I don't think Brit will tell me."

"She'll tell you if you ask her." Mal says. "Once she trusts a person, she'll tell you. Of course, she trusts pretty much anyone who isn't her dad."

Someone knocks on the door and Mal sighs. "Come in!"

Evie opens it up. "Nasty attitude today, M?"

"No, E. Just talking with Ellie."

"About Brit?" Evie asks.

"Yeah, how'd you know?" I ask.

"Um, because she just came here like three days ago and suddenly she's good friends with Quentin, and nobody can figure out why." Evie tells me. "But one thing I will say, Brit is happier than I've ever seen her."

"So's Quentin." I say.

Evie beams. "I know. Those two are all anyone's talking about right now. Even Chad's at a loss for words, nobody can figure out why those two like each other so much!"

"Um, maybe because they're both sweet?" I suggest.

"Yes, I realize that, but still! Both of them were raised on the fact that the other is a monster." Evie says.

Mal rolls her eyes. "Yeah, and me and you were raised to hate Auradon, E. How'd that work out?"

Evie sticks her tongue out and I laugh. Someone knocks on the door again and Mal picks a pillow up. "Come in!" She yells, holding the pillow. The second the door opens, she flings it at the person and it hits them in the face.

Ben looks down. "Bad timing?" He asks while I crack up.

Mal smiles. "That depends. What did you need?"

Ben scratches the back of his neck. "So... Gil came to me today. Again."

Mal scowls. "About Harry and Uma?"

"Yeah." Ben says.

"Gil really doesn't get that we can't bring them, does he?" I ask.

Everyone shakes their heads. Mal looks over at Ben. "Was that all?"

"No. Ellie, you saw the pictures Ned posted right?" Ben asks me.

"Um, yeah. Wait, I thought there was only one!"

He grimaces and hands me his phone. He's right, there's multiple pictures of me on the Isle, one with me laughing behind Mal on the motorcycle, and another where I'm tied up and Harry Hook is talking to me. There's also one where Hans is holding me forward over the water. I shudder and hand Ben's phone back.

"Where is he getting all these?" I groan.

Ben shrugs. "That's why I came here. I confronted him about this and said it was illegal, and he told me that he was just doing it to show everyone the truth. Not sure what the 'truth' is here, but when I asked where he got them, he just said he had a 'source'."

"That's what he told me, too!" I say. "Ugh! Ben, isn't there something you can do about this?"

He runs a hand through his hair. "I can try. But Ned's not talking, and I have no idea who the source would be."

Mal makes a noise. "This is so stupid." She gets up and starts to slip past Ben when he grabs her.

"Where are you going?"

"I'm finding this kid and I'm gonna bring him back here." She says, pulling away. I spring up.

"I'll come!"

Evie smiles and Ben looks a bit hesitant but lets us pass. Mal runs down the hall and I follow until I suddenly hear a loud yelp. I stop.

"Mal!" She stops and turns around to look at me. "Did you hear that?" I ask.

She comes back to me. "No. What?"

"Someone----" The person yells out again.

"Dizzy!" Mal says. She rushes off again, going outside right outside the entrance. I follow to find Chad and Dizzy yelling at each other. I groan and go next to Dizzy.

I put a hand on Dizzy's shoulder. "What's going on?"

Chad rolls his eyes. "I wanted to get my hair done for my date with Audrey, and she said no! After she found out my parents!"

"I did not!" Dizzy protests. "I don't care that you're a Charming, I refused because you tried to cut in front of everybody else! I have the right to refuse!"

"No you don't! Not to me!" Chad says, grinning.

Dizzy puts her hands on her hips. "Is that so? Well then, Mr. Charming, where is your contract saying so? What rule do you have over me?"

"I'm a Charming, pipsqueak." Chad says. "What I say goes."

"You idiot, Ben's King, not you!" I say. "You don't get to order *anyone* around."

"But I'm next in line!"

"So?" Dizzy says. "Even if you are, Evie told me that only the King had power over the Isle, and I'm an Isle kid. I wasn't born here!"

"So?" Chad asks.

"How do we get this through his thick skull?" Mal asks. "Chad, *you can't order Dizzy around.* Not at her own business. She can choose who she works on."

Ben comes out at that moment. He sees us all yelling and runs over. Chad sees him and runs over, clapping Ben's shoulder. "Ben! Tell them!"

"Tell them what?" Ben asks in surprise. "I thought you guys were going to find Ned."

"We got busy." I say. "Chad here has a problem with Dizzy for some reason."

"She wouldn't do my hair!"

"I couldn't do it anyway, some of your hair is fake and my products don't mix well with fake hair!" Dizzy says. I cover my mouth but still snort.

Ben presses his lips together to hold a smile back. "Um, wait, what?"

"She won't do my hair!" Chad repeats.

"That doesn't say anything." Ben says. "What exactly happened?"

"Well--" Dizzy starts, but Chad cuts her off.

"So I go into the store, and there's this huge crowd of people watching her, so I asked where the line ended, and some girl said that it ended right next to the cash register, so I walked up there and asked Dizzy here to do my hair for my date with Audrey, and she said no!"

"That's not what happened!" Dizzy protests, pushing Chad away from Ben. "Charming here waltzed into my store like he owned the place and shoved everybody out of the way. Then, when he was at the front of the line, he rang my bell until I walked away from my current client to yell at him, and he ordered me to do his hair for him!"

"That---" Chad starts, but Dizzy keeps going.

"And that's not all! When I refused and told him to wait his turn, he tried to steal money from the cash register while my back was turned!" Dizzy yells. "Then I shoved him out of my store and he cornered me here when I got back."

"Chad..." Ben sighs. "This is getting out of hand. Why do you keep telling all the villains what to do?"

"Because I can!" He says it like it's the most obvious thing in the world.

"NO, YOU CAN'T!" Mal, Dizzy and I yell.

Ben nods. "Chad, you can't just order people around. They're not your people! They're mine, and do you see me ordering people to do things?"

"No." Chad says. "But that's just because you're you and I'm..." He spreads his arms. "*Me.*"

"What's so big about that?" I ask innocently.

"Me, Ice Queen! Me! Chad Charming, the boy every girl fawns over."

Dizzy, Mal, and I all raise our hands. "Not it!"

Ben smiles. "Chad, as an order, I order *you* to stop telling people what to do! Especially the villains I bring here! Brit is not a slave!"

"Wait, what?" I ask in surprise.

"After you guys left, she asked me if Chad was my brother. When I said no, she asked where he got the power to bring her dad over here."

"Why would you bring her dad here?" I ask Chad.

"Because it was the only way to get her to listen to me." He says. "Duh."

"Hold on. Let me get this straight. You've been threatening Brit and making her do stuff for you?" I ask angrily.

He thinks about it. "Yeah."

I punch his nose.

"Hey!" Ben yells, but I'm already backing up.

"Sorry, Ben, had to do it just once." I say.

He nods and helps a moaning Chad up. "Don't you *ever* use anyone like that again." I tell Chad. He just glares at me.

"So, are we done?" Dizzy asks.

"We're done." Ben says. "I'll get something for his nose, but you guys can leave now."

"Thanks." Dizzy says. "Oh, and by the way, you're never allowed in my store again!"

"Wasn't planning on it." Chad says. "You're not even that good at hair, you're just the cheapest."

"'Scuse me?" Dizzy says.

"Dizzy happens to be the best hair person in Auradon!" Mal says.

"Yeah!" I say. "She did mine!"

"My point exactly."

"Oh, shut up, Chad." Ben says, pulling him away. I turn to Dizzy and high-five her. Mal smiles.

I glance at her. "'Hair person'?"

"Oh, shut up."

Dizzy laughs. Then she stops. "Hey, I didn't know someone new was coming today." She points. I turn to see a limo driving up towards us.

"Neither did I." Mal says in confusion.

"Wait, how would you not know?" I ask. "You're Ben's girlfriend, he tells you everything!"

"I know. And that's why I'm thinking this may not be scheduled." Mal says. We wait for the limo to get here and I roll my sleeves up. I see three people in the back seat, but I can't tell...

The driver stops and gets out. I yelp.

"You!"

TA-DA! Guess who? Heh.

So, following my statement in my last update.... I SAW GOD'S NOT DEAD 3 YESTERDAY AND IT WAS A-MAZING!!! LOVED IT!!! (I won't spoil, only that I seriously wanted to cry but I didn't.)

AH!

Ok, so for the people that maybe know about the teacher walkout happening in Oklahoma, if you live in Oklahoma, have you guys seen the protesters with signs everywhere?? Cars won't stop honking because most of the signs say "honk if you agree with us" or something like that. There was the one that cracked me up--- "This wouldn't happen at Hogwarts!"

HA!😂😂😂😂

K bye.

I Don't Believe I Ordered Shrimp, Waiter

"You!" I yell. "How did you get here, Hook?"

Harry Hook grins and opens the door to let Uma and two other people I don't recognize, brother and sister it seems. They both have the same straight black hair and red-brown eyes.

"Dizzy, go get someone." Mal says, shooing her off. Dizzy runs away fast.

Uma smiles. "Oh, of course our welcome party was you two. Well, introductions! Mal, Elicia, this is the god's Ares' kids. Sera and Arson. Guys?"

The two kids lunge forward at the same time. I swerve to avoid them, but Mal doesn't. She swipes her hands up and a green blast knocks them back. I almost smile, but she looks tired already.

"Ellie, get out of here! Go get Ben!" She yells.

"No not without you!" I swipe a hand up and a wall of ice descends to the sky, blocking us off from Uma and her goons. I grab Mal's hand and start running for the school, but my ice wall explodes and sends us flying forwards, slamming into the ground.

Next thing I know, someone's grabbing my arms and picking me off the ground. My head buzzes and my vision blurs, but I make out Mal being dragged along the same way. Back in front of the car, where Harry and the Arson kid are missing. I glance behind me and sure enough, Harry's holding Mal and the Arson kid is holding me. He grins and waves. He's only holding me with one hand!

I glance back at Uma. She smiles. "Nice run. I'll give you that. But these kids here are half-god. I'd like to see you try."

"Just did." I grunt, trying to get the three extra Umas to disappear.

The girl Sera sweeps her black hair behind her shoulders. "What're we gonna do about 'em? I know this one," She strides towards me, flicking my nose, "owes us all somethin' big."

"I don't owe anybody anything." I say, finally getting rid of the extra Umas and Seras.

"Oh, yes you do. You were one of the kids who almost got fed to the fishies, right?"

"Her and Ben." Uma says.

"Then she owes the Hanses her life, don't she?"

"Seriously, you people need to eat dictionaries." I say. "And I don't owe anybody anything. Do the math, they tried to kill me, I'm not owing them something now!"

She slaps me and Mal stares at where she hit me. I risk a glance down as much as I can, and smoke is coming off. I bite my lip hard and concentrate to pull ice out and onto the burn. How'd she burn me like that??

She blows on her hand. "Daughter of Ares, remember? And while we may not be fire people, or whatever, we can make people *hurt*."

"He-he!" The boy laughs. Arson? What kind of name is that, anyway?

"Shut up, you idiot." Sera says.

"He-he!"

"Shut up! I'll get Dad!"

He whimpers and goes back to holding me. Geez, what's wrong with this kid? Is he okay?

Uma rolls her eyes and puts her hand on Sera's shoulder. "Back to what we were saying, aren't you people wondering how we got here

in the first place?"

"Yes. I'm just more concentrated on how your nose will look if I break it." I say.

She rolls her eyes again as Arson breaks into laughter again. "Shut up, Ar. It's actually your, Mal, and Ben's fault, y'know. When I ran back to the Isle, I didn't actually go back. I tore a page out of your spellbook and used it to get Harry and these two dorks out."

"'Scuse me?" Sera snarls.

"Only meant your brother." Uma says. Sera nods and calms down.

"But my spellbook shouldn't have worked near the Isle." Mal protests.

"Key word *shouldn't* have." I mutter.

Uma smiles and takes her hand off Sera's shoulder again. "Oh, I can't believe this is happening! My two Most Wanted people on the Isle, right in my hands!"

"Actually, in Harry and Arson's..." Sera mutters. "But sure, go with yours."

"Shut up." Uma says. "Now, we gotta get back to the Isle before---"

"Before *what?"* Beast asks. He and a dozen guards appear out of nowhere with an out-of-breath Dizzy. "Uma, now that we know how you got here again, we'll be taking that spell. Fairy Godmother?"

"Bibbidi Bobbidi--"

"NO!" Uma screams, lunging for Arson. She grabs a page from his jacket pocket and fumbles fro a spell. "Back to where I need to be, with my choices three!" Aqua magic swirls around her as she grabs for Harry and Sera. Arson yelps and lets go of me to try and grab for Uma, but Uma bats him aside and latches onto my wrist instead.

"Hey!" I try and get her off me, even restorting to having icy spikes

jut off my skin, but by then the aqua around us has disappeared and we're standing in Ursula's shop. Uma lets go of me and curses and her bleeding palm.

"Why'd you do that, you witch?" She yells.

"Um, let's see, because you just *kidnapped* me!" I yell, spinning around to try and get out before someone grabs me. But it's too late, at least three people are jumping at me, pinning my arms back and holding me down against the nearest table.

Uma laughs and wipes the blood on the jacket Evie made me before the coronation. I grimace at the streak of scarlet on the blue.

"Welcome back to the Isle, princess. You'll enjoy your stay, I hope." Uma says. She walks over to Harry, who examines her hand. "At least the plan worked." She winces.

The three people holding me onto the table jerk me up and force me to walk through the shop. I plant my feet next to Uma. "It didn't work, because this time everyone watched you get me, and FG will just come here and get me out. And, by the way, put something cold on the cuts." I grin, remember what Mal told me once. The Isle only gets one kind of running water. Lukewarm.

Uma scowls and punches me gut once with her good hand. "What part of get her onto the ship do you goons not understand?" She mutters, waving them away.

Then someone yells so loud everybody covers their ears and mine are left ringing. Sera comes storming through the crowd, her eyes blazing with red light.

"YOU LEFT MY BROTHER FOR THIS GIRL!!" She screams.

"I'll get Ar back, Sera." Uma says calmly. "For now, we just need the wand to come here."

"You're an idiot." I tell Uma.

"For once, I agree with Icy over here." Sera snarls. "Why would you say that stupid spell just including three people? Arson is going to

be scared out of his wits right now, and while he may be an idiot, I will *not* let him stay there!"

"You know that's what they'll want, right?" I jump in. "To exchange me for him?"

"Shut up, you!" Sera says. "Shrimpy, you're going to get my brother back, or I'm going to go get him myself."

Uma grits her teeth at the 'shrimpy' but waves Sera away. "If you want to take your anger out, take it out on Icy. You three, take her to the ship *now!"*

The three kids holding me nod and hurry me away. Sera keeps yelling nonsense at Uma and Harry, Harry yelling back something about a hook. The three kids pull me through the Isle, past people who stop and point. I roll my eyes when one person shrieks and scrambles inside when they see me. The three kids finally march me up a wood plank onto the ship and leave me down below. I think it's the room I was in before. They shove me in so I land on my face and close the door behind them.

I push myself up and tuck my hair back out of my face. Ugh. I glance down at my hands again and practically scream when I realize they've got gloves on me again. I pull at them again, trying to shatter them like I've done before, but no go. Maybe I need to be panicked or something.

But that doesn't stop me from trying.

For three hours.

I finally stop when I try karate-chopping my hand against the wall to get them off and my hand starts throbbing. I curse at my stupid brain and hop up and down, waving my hand around. I step on something squishy and end up sprawled on my back. I yell again and scramble up, trying to find the thing.

Oh my gosh.

Gil's ball is laying on the wood.

I grab it and examine it. It has a small hole from Harry's hook, but other than that it seems fine. I sigh and settle on the ground, leaning against the wall so I face the opposite wall. Bounce, catch.

Yippee. How am I *already* bored??

Then the door opens. I throw the ball at the person like I did with Harry, but Sera just catches it inches from her face. She looks down in surprise at her hand.

"Did you throw a ball at me?" She asks in disbelief.

"Yup." I drawl. "Only you kinda ruined it by catching it."

She rolls her eyes and throws the ball back so I can catch it. "I don't have a choice. My Dad drilled fast reflexes into me and Ar, so we catch stuff before we even realize we do."

She walks over to me and sits down next to me, leaning against the wall. She holds her hand out for the ball and I give it to her. She throws it so hard it bounces back faster than I can follow, but it's suddenly in her hand.

[image]

Above is Sera's outfit---like it says, Dark red is right color, Light red is right style. :) AND IGNORE THE BRIGHT RED NAIL POLISH ON THE GLOVES---SERA DOESN'T WEAR NAIL POLISH

"I came to talk, Icy. You can relax." She mutters.

"My name's Ellie." I say.

"Well, I ain't callin' you by it. I need your help."

"Oh, sure!" I squeal. "You just kidnapped me, and now I'll follow your every command!"

"You've got quite a mouth." She actually laughs. "You're not so bad as Uma makes Auradonians out to be. But, I need you because you used to live in Auradon. You know where everything is."

"Oh, yes, Master, I can tell you everything! Sneaking around Auradon, we've got some swamps, don't follow the lights!"

She bursts into laughter. "That's a Lord of the Rings reference!"

I gape at her. "Wait, how do you know about those? You're literally the only person I know who would get that quote!"

She flips her hair, which I now notice has tiny red braids in it. "I stole my dad's move player and had the De Vil kid hack through the barrier for a bit."

"Carlos? He can do that?"

"Yeah, he and Evil Queen's kid did it once at one of Mal's stupid parties before they left." She settles down more and throws the ball again. "I don't remember much of what I watched, but Lord of the Rings was definitely my favorite." Her face softens. "Ar loved those movies. he thought Gollum was misunderstood and I didn't let him see the last movie because I didn't want him to know Gollum died."

"Sorry?"

She laughs. "Look at me, all sentimental. Point is, I'll get you off the Isle if you'll get me my brother back." She pleads. "Ar can't be by himself for long. He doesn't talk to anybody but me, and sometimes Brit, so I *need* to be there for him. Brit can barely take care of herself!"

"So... you're just going to get me out? How?" I ask. "Is this a test?"

"No, I swear." she starts to look scared now. "Please, Ellie. I need my brother back. You don't know what he's like when he's alone. He'll be terrified, and nothing good comes from a scared Arson."

I stick my hands out. "Get these off, and you've got yourself a deal."

She grins and grabs my hand slipping them off like silk. I gape. "How did you do that so easy? I literally just spent three hours---"

"You *can't* take them off, stupid. Only the person who put them on can." Sera scolds.

I glare. "So you admit you put them on?"

She shrugs. "I'm prepared. Now, c'mon. I'm supposed to be at the chip shoppe right now, and it's only a matter of time 'til they notice." She grabs my hands and pulls me up. "Oh, and by the way. Your hair is *awesome.* I want mine done like that."

"You can ask Dizzy." I say.

"Dizzy did that??" she exclaims.

"Shut up! They'll hear you!"

She rolls her eyes and pulls me out in the hallway. "Pirates are the worst lookouts. How do you think I got on?"

"Good point." I admit. "But---"

"OY! WHAT'RE YOU DOIN' WITH THUH PRISONER?" Someone yells.

"Crap!" Sera says, pulling me in front of her to face a huge guy with lip piercings. "We're... Eh, I got no excuses, Waldo. We're leavin' and tell Uma bye for me."

"Why don't you tell me yourself?" Uma's says sweetly behind us.

"Crap." Sera and I say at the same time.

Hope you like the update. C omment as always, and enjoy!

(Oh wait also I went to a MercyMe/Tenth Avenue North/Tim Timmons concert and it was AWESOME!!! My ears were ringing after, and my throat has never hurt so much in my life, but it was... really, really, REALLY fun. MercyMe is such a fun band to see in real life!)

Escape!

[image]

(Don't mind the city background, it was just the only gif I could find of the slide/path/thing) Enjoy!

"You better have a way to get us out of here, Icy." Sera hisses. "Half my plan's ridin' on you."

"I'm honored." I snap back. "Why didn't you think this through?"

"I did, you idiot, that's why I'm freein' you!"

"Enough chit chat." Uma says. "Harry, take your crew and throw 'em both back below."

"Aye." Harry moves forward with his goons and Sera straightens up.

"I dare you to try." She warns. Uma laughs and beckons Harry forward. Sera glares at me and I roll my eyes.

"Fine!" I swipe my hands towards the pirates, and a wall of ice appears between us and them. They start banging on it, and Sera laughs.

"Nice, Icy! Now, c'mon." She leaps up and punches a hole in the ceiling, crawling easily through. I stare up at her.

"I can't jump that high!" I protest. She rolls her eyes and starts to say something then disappears. A few thumps and yells follow, so I assume she's fighting somebody. Cracks start to appear in my ice walls, so I refreeze them and look down at my hands. There's got to be some way up there, that doesn't involve jumping...

Ah!

I swing my hands down, and misty blue shoots out, propelling me

upward and through the hole. I see Sera holding a guy in a chokehold. He squeaks and goes limp, and she lets go of him. She flips her braids out of her face.

"Hey. Let's go."

"Wow, no 'nice job'?" I ask, running after her.

"I'll tell you nice job when I have my brother back!" She dodges a guy and sends him flying towards me, and I encase my fist in spiky ice to punch his nose. He wails and we keep running. Once up on deck, Sera screeches to a halt.

"Dang! They've put the plank on shore!" She kicks the side of the boat and grabs me. "Hang on, I'm not sure how far I can jump with you in tow!" She crouches down and pushes off, leaping towards the dock while holding my wrist. I yelp in surprise and she laughs, but she's right, she can't make the jump.

But I might be able to...

She barely has enough time to curse when I wave my hand and a burst of ice appears like a kid's slide. We hit it hard and it carries us safely onto the dock, where a bunch of pirates are fleeing away. I hear Uma yelling nonsense on the ship and scramble up. Sera whoops.

"Nice goin'!" She grabs my hand and goes running. I stumble along behind her, shoving people out of the way as we run. She finally stops when we barge out of a huge pipe. She starts searching around, throwing tarps off of things until she comes across a huge metal box with wires sticking out everywhere. She grins.

"C'mere. You hang out with De Vil, right?" She asks. I go over.

"Yeah, he's my boyfriend." I say.

"Pfft. You're dating that nerd? Willingly?"

"Why is it your business?" I demand.

"'Cause this is one of his inventions, and Ar and I have been tryin' to

figure out it works since he left. We've never told anyone about it. I don't think De Vil even remembers it's here." She says, blowing dust off of it and pulling on some levers. "It cuts holes in the barrier. Small ones, only for a few minutes, but it works."

"Seriously?" I ask, elbowing her out of the way. I run my hands across it. It sort of resembles some of the things he's shown me. I turn a few dials and a keypad appears. I scan it and smile. Only Carlos. I press the escape button and a laser shoots out of it, straight past us and into the ocean. A hole rimmed in gold appears a ways away from us.

"Woah!" Sera says. "That's never happened before!"

"That's because you've never used the 'escape' button on the keypad." I say smugly. "Now, c'mon! We've only got a few minutes." I grab her and run. Her long legs tear up the ground, easily pulling ahead of me. At the rip, she hesitates.

"You can swim, right?" I ask her.

"Um... I live on an island?"

"Oh, shut it." I grab her and pull her through. She yelps but I wave my hand and another slide appears, sending us flailing towards the water. I hit it hard, landing on my feet on a sheet of ice. Sera wobbles next to me.

"Please don't tell me..." She sighs.

"Only way, unless you'd rather swim."

"Ugh. Fine." She grabs my hand. "Start runnin', Icy."

I kick off the frozen wave and freeze the water as we run along it, barely keeping up with Sera's pace. About halfway, I have a huge stitch in my side and Sera's making a tiny panting sound. Finally she slows.

"That's awful. I haven't run like this is forever. Can't you make the ground even?" She complains.

"I'm kinda more focused on freezing it so we don't sink!" I look back to make sure nobody's following, and that I'm melting it as I leave. Yep. Our circle is the only solid thing here. Sera waves me forward.

"We gotta keep walkin' at least. Every second Ar is in Auradon is another it could possibly explode."

"Wait, what?"

"Remember, we shattered your ice wall?"

"How did you guys do that?" I ask.

"We're kids of Ares. Off the Isle, we have some decent powers." She shrugs. "My dad's the god of war, of all things destructive."

"So... Arson could blow up Auradon if he wanted?" I ask.

"Probably not *all* of it. Just, like, most of it. If they haven't found some way to stop it." She says.

I sigh. "They probably have. FG has a bunch of stuff that subdues powers. At least she's not going to take them away."

"She can't do that!" Sera snorts. "Can she?"

"Um, yeah. If a contract is made where the person agrees to it. I almost had mine taken away because my mom made a contract when I was a baby." I start jogging again and Sera follows.

"Wait, your *mom* made a contract? Without asking you?"

"Well, I was a baby at the time. My answer probably would have been goo-goo." I say.

She glares. "Still. Your mom?"

"Elsa. Remember? Miss-shut-my-sister-out-because-of-one-scary-incident? And I get she got scared, but still."

She snorts and has me stop running so she can talk. "So, what happened? WHat did you mean when you said *almost* had yours

taken away?"

"Well, Chad and a few other Auradonian kids stole the wand the night of Ben's coronation and jumped me in my room. Held me down and would have taken my powers away if not for Carlos showing up." I shudder. That was still one of my worst memories right now.

"De Vil saved you? That nerd?" She asks.

"Stop calling him a nerd, he's done a lot for us."

"Yeah? Like pullin' you from the water when we captured you?" She teases.

"Oh! That reminds me, do you know who on the Isle---"

"Get down!" She hisses. She grabs me and pushes me down on the ice. I melt it and we sink underwater. I note Sera glaring at me, but it hides us a lot better. A limo is crossing a golden bridge right above us, heading to the Isle. I perk up.

"That must be Ben! Or somebody. Come on!" I heave her up and summon my powers, rocketing us out of the warm water on a pire of ice rising up.

Sera grabs me. "Stop! How do you know they'll let me see Ar?"

"Ben will. And if he doesn't, I will." I promise. I slow the rise of the ice until she lets go of me and nods grudgingly. By now whoever was in the limo has spotted us, and it's stopped. Someone climbs out and waves at us.

"Ellie!" Carlos' voice carries. I keep my hands pressed against the ice rising, but I'm getting tired. Why keep the road so high? But I don't stop until we reach the golden road and step off. My ice melts instantly, and I collapse against the road.

"Woah! You okay, Icy?" Sera grabs me under my arms and pulls me up. I wave her off sleepily.

"I'm fine. Jus' tired." I say. She keeps her grip on me as Carlos

bounds over and she doesn't let him get close.

"Are these the people you can trust?" She demands from me. Ben steps out from the limo too, along with FG and Mal.

I'm feeling a little less dizzy now, so I get up a bit. "Carlos, Ben, Mal, and Fairy Godmother. Yeah, I trust 'em." I point to each. Sera looks a little wary.

"Who are you?" Ben asks.

"*Sera?*" Carlos asks. "Ben, this is Arson's sister."

"Ar? Where is he?" Sera demands, letting go of me and bounding forward. She grabs Ben's shirt and about a dozen guards appear out of nowhere with a wave of FG's wand. Sera grudgingly lets go of Ben.

"Umm, Ben, this is Sera." I say. "She helped me escape on the condition that I get her brother back, and I intend to keep that." I rub my forehead. "Can we just go back, please? Without any fighting?"

Ben nods and he and Mal get in the limo. Carlos runs over to me and hugs me tight. I laugh. "What, no Dude?"

"I didn't want him to come. Plus, Brit says she wasn't coming." He lets go of me. "Are you okay, I didn't even know anything had happened until Mal told me, and by then you'd been gone for hours!"

"Carlos, I haven't even been gone an entire day, I'm fine! I promise!" I smile and he turns to get in the limo, but ends up face-to-face with Sera.

She grins. "Well, y'know, I can't call you Squirt anymore." She nudges him towards the limo. "I gotta talk to your girlfriend for a sec. Go on."

He looks at me and I nod. He glares once at Sera and gets in. I hear him and FG talking.

"What'd you want, Sera?" I ask her.

"Did you know my name is my dad's spelled backwards?" she asks.

"Um, no. I didn't put that together. Why does that matter?" I ask, glancing at the guards who are already heading back to Auradon. Were they invisible or something? Maybe. Or maybe they're just magic... mirages? Is that the word?

"Because dad always said I had more of him. And while they didn't work on the Isle, dad trained me to use all of my powers. So I'm tellin' you now, you better get Ar back for me, or I'ma destroy Auradon, startin' with you." She jabs a finger in my face.

I blow out, coating her finger with ice. "I'm not backing out of my promise. I swear. Try trusting me, Sera."

She glares for a second then dusts her finger off and smiles. "Y'know, you aren't so bad, Icy." She turns and gestures for me to get in. I do and she goes in last, shutting the door. Because of the way the limo is arranged, Mal, Ben, and FG are on one side, and Carlos, Sera, and I are on the other.

Because this ride won't be awkward...

"So how'd you get out, Ellie?" Ben asks after a minute of silence.

"I got her out." Sera says. "And you should be proud of this kid, she didn't go bezerk and try and bargain her way out. She threw a ball at a wall."

"What?" Everyone asks at once.

I roll my eyes. "Yeah, I sound like a real hero now, Sera. Gil gave me a ball last time I got captured, and they put me in the same cell this time, and I got bored."

"You got bored. While being kidnapped." Carlos repeats.

"Hey, I never said I didn't try and escape first! But those stupid gloves were back, and I couldn't get them off again." I say.

"How did you get them off the first time, anyway?" Sera asks. "You weren't supposed to be able to."

"Duh." I say. "But I really don't know. I don't remember very well. I was drowning, and I knew it, so I just... ripped them off."

"They just slid off?"

"No, I tore the fabric."

Sera seems to be lost in thought, so Ben clears his throat. "So, Arson is your brother?"

Danger! Danger!

Sera glares. "Yes, and if I find out you did anything---"

"Relax!" Mal says, holding her hands up. "He went ballistic when you left, so we had to put him in a non-magical room, but Brit calmed him down. He's fine, he just keeps wailing about wanting to see you."

Sera goes tense. "Any chance this thing can go faster?"

"One speed only." The driver says.

"Maybe you could speed up a little?" Ben suggests, watching Sera go a light pink in anger.

The driver glances back. "Fine." We speed a little, and Sera seems satisfied. She starts pigging out on the candy left here, and I see FG holding back her comments.

The drive is silent for a while, and I can tell that Carlos wants to say something but isn't. Mal won't look at me, while Ben repeatedly glances at me like I might explode sometime. Finally I sigh.

"Okay, what is so bad that everyone but Sera won't tell me?" I demand. "You're all giving me these cautious looks, and this silence is getting on my nerves."

Ben clears his throat. "Um, well..." He looks at Mal.

Mal shakes her head. "Don't put this on me!"

I look at Carlos. "Anybody?"

He sighs. "Fine. Ellie... Um..."

"Oh, out with it!" Sera says.

"Your mother heard." FG blurts. I stare at her.

"What is that supposed to mean?" I demand.

"She's waiting for you back in Auradon." Mal says. "She says she needs to talk to you before it's too late."

"Too late? Too *late?*" I yell. "Too late for what? For me to forgive her? Because it's been too late for *that* for months now!"

"Ellie, we know, but---" Carlos starts.

"But nothing!" I cross my arms over my chest to keep from punching somebody. And since the two people closest to me are my boyfriend and the daughter of the god of war... probably best. "I'm not talking to her." I say, keeping my voice as level as possible.

The car goes silent again until Sera bursts out laughing. "And you wonder why they didn't wanna tell ya!"

We pull into Auradon Prep, thankfully, and I don't see my mother. What I *do* see is a crowd of people, watching us pull up.

"I thought this was supposed to be private." Ben tells the driver.

"It was, sir, but word leaked out about Miss Elicia's capture and your rescue plan." He says.

Ben groans. "Sera, um, maybe try to be a little less..."

"Noticeable?" She asks. "Not possible." She opens up the door and slips out before Ben can stop her. I hear the chatter outside go silent.

I scramble up to follow her out. Carlos, Ben, FG, and Mal get out

too. Some people cheer, and some people start booing. I see Ned conducting a huge group of booers. A huge group of reporters lunges towards us, barking questions that I ignore because of one person I catch sight of.

She's standing near the back, wringing her hands, until she locks her identical blue eyes with me. She's wearing a deep blue gown, not a fancy one, just a walk-outside one, and her hair's done up in it's usual out-of-the-way bun.

But she still looks as terrified as she did at the coronation. At the garden party.

Mom.

_____

So this isn't a HUGE cliffhanger, but it kinda is. I mean, she basically think her MOM thinks she's a monster. Her mom is hiding this big thing she's scared about, WHY she wanted her kid's powers gone, and why she's so terrified of her DAUGHTER. And Ellie is mad, so that makes it kinda a cliffhanger. :D

ANY-way. Hope you like this update, comment and enjoy!

Pep Talk: FAIL

[image]

(**The book above is the one in this chapter)**

_____

I push through the crowd to get to the door before her. But she beats me.

"Elicia." She grabs hold of my arm. The crowd starts to disperse a little, going to Ben to question him. A few reporters are following me and Mom, so I roll my eyes and pull her inside, closing the doors in their faces.

"What, Mom? What could be so important?" I snap.

She wrings her hands. "I know I haven't exactly been a good mother lately... and I'm sorry for that."

"A *good mother?* Mom, you've been terrified of me! Do you know what that felt like?"

"I do, actually. You forget, my entire kingdom thought I was a monster." She says, rather cooly.

"I know." I sigh. "Well, what did you want?"

"Well... Elicia, do you know why I had Fairy Godmother take my powers away when you were a child?"

"No. I just assumed you got scared." I admit.

"I did it because of you. You remember I hit my sister in the head when we were children?"

"Yeah." Where could she be going with this?

"I hit you." She whispers. She hugs herself. "You'd broken Anna's

wedding gift to me, and I was so angry... I moved to strike you once and instead I used my powers on you."

"I don't remember that." I frown. "You lost your powers when I was five. I remember most of my life then."

"Trolls, Elicia. Trolls." she reminds me. "But I didn't hit your head. I hit your heart."

"But... I should have frozen! Shouldn't I?"

She shakes her head. "Elicia, tell me this. Do you remember using your powers before I lost mine?"

I think back. "No..."

"You weren't born with yours. I gave you the more dangerous part of mine." She says.

"You... what?" My brain throbs. Where could she be going with this?

"Elicia, your powers are half of mine. I chose to get rid of the rest in hopes that it would dissolve from you as well. After Anna and I defeated Hans, and we got older, I discovered my powers split equally in half. One, the more dangerous side, the one that I used to fight the Duke's henchmen with, the side that..." She seems to choke on the name. "Oh, I should get Olaf back for this... the side that Marshmallow came from, the side that created a storm that nearly swallowed Arendelle.

"And the second side, the peaceful one. The one I used to create Olaf, the one I created my castle with, the side I used for my sister's birthday."

"Mom, what are you talking about? What has this got to do with me?"

"Elicia, when I gave you that side, you got more than I thought. You have powers I would never have had, you can do things I can't! Elicia, I saw you at Ben's coronation. Just for an instant. And the garden party, my powers---now your powers---changed you! You know why I'm terrified? Why I look at you the way I do? Because

I'm scared that those powers may be affecting you in ways you may not know."

"Mom, I'm still me. I promise." I protest.

"Elicia, what happens when you get angry?" She asks.

"One, you can call me Ellie. All this 'Elicia' business is weird. Two, nothing happens. I mean, some misty stuff comes from my hands," I raise one to examine it. "But it's not like I look at myself to see the results every time."

She sighs. "And nobody has informed you that when you get angry, your eyes glow blue?"

"What?" I mean, I guess I knew that part. I kinda remember it happening. "So what?"

"Have you not read the book I gave you last christmas?" She asks, putting her hands on her hips.

"Uh, no. I didn't have time."

She sighs. "If you had, you would know that blue means a curse is in you." She goes to the scared woman again. "Ellie... if I'm right... you could be dying."

It's one thing to know that, years from now, when you're old and have lived a life, that you'll eventually die.

But it's an entirely different thing to be told that that timeline has been moved to *now.* To right in front of your face, waving it's arms, begging all your attention, leaving all your strength drained to try and focus on getting yourself prepared for something you'll never be prepared for.

And the last thing you'll realize is,

I don't want to die.

Nobody ever *really* wants to die. They may say they do. They may force it by their own hands. But life is a delicate thing, bending and breaking thousands of times a day based on your choices, your actions, and your history.

People have been raised on the fact that life is something you can control, if you're careful enough.

But nobody ever counts on change. On chance. On bad luck, in a split second that can send you life shattering to sand.

I don't want to die.

Too bad I don't have a choice.

"So, tell me again. You mom, Queen Elsa, gave you a bad side of her powers when you were a kid, and now they're somehow cursed?" Ben says slowly.

"Yes." I've been in this office for three hours at least, in the same position with my hands locked around my knees.

"And your mom thinks you're dying?"

"Right."

Ben sighs and sits down in his chair. "I don't know what to tell you. I've had servants look this up, I've asked my dad, I've asked my mom, I've consulted every possible thing I can think of!" He runs a hand down his face. "I'm so sorry. Nobody knows *anything*."

"Well... my mom said she gave me a book." I say slowly. "I'm sure I can find it."

Ben sits up fast. "Don't tell anyone about this, Ellie." he warns.

I rub my wrist as I cross my fingers behind my back. "Promise."

"All right. Go see if you can find it. I'm going to contact Peter Pan and see if he knows anything." Ben looks exhausted, and I don't

blame him. I nod and jump up, running from the room. I know I probably shouldn't, but I have to tell someone other than him or I'll go crazy. I can't keep a secret as big as this for long, especially when I don't even know how long my mom's deadline is.

I walk through the halls, my hand clutching at a chunk of my hair to keep from shaking. Is my mom right? Am I cursed somehow? *Why?* It's never hurt me. My powers have never hurt me.

I fume as I walk down the hall. How could my mother spring this on me right after I just got kidnapped? I still have to help Sera!

Oh, no. Sera.

I clap my hand against my forehead. I completely forgot to help her get Arson!

I run down the halls, listening for yells and explosions. I luckily don't hear any, but I do find Sera. I run into her. Literally.

"OY! Watch where you're goin', ya---oh! Icy!" Sera laughs and helps me up. "Was lookin' for you just now. Arson's out, Mal let 'im go just a bit ago. He wanted to meet you after he heard you'd seen Lord of the Rings."

"That's it?" I ask. "Mal just...let him go? Shouldn't Ben be the one---"

Sera waves it away. "Yeah, yeah, Benny shoulda, but Ar was freakin' out. He's fine now though. He is *loving* his new powers."

"What powers do you guys have, anyway?" I ask. "Other than blowing stuff up."

"Blowin' stuff up is the best!" Sera cackles, leading me outside. "But we can make people hurt, and our sportsy abilities are, like, timesed five now." To prove it, she scrutinzes the ceiling and leaps higher than she did on the ship, punching a huge hole in the plaster and landing hard next to me.

"Ben's going to make you pay for that." I point out.

She shrugs. "Don't care. Now, c'mon. You have to meet Ar properly."

"But I needed to find Carlos---" I start.

"Pfft. Your boyfriend's out here. You can talk to him." She tugs me along. I grudgingly follow. I'd hoped to talk to him alone in case he reacts with a yell or something. I see Arson jumping up and down fifty feet in the air and catching birds, and I almost laugh. He sees me and grins wide.

"Icy!" he yells, running and crushing my ribs in a hug.

"Hi." I squeak. Sera laughs loud.

"A'ight, Ar, put her down." She pats his massive back and he sets me down.

"Ice?" He asks eagerly.

"Icy had *better* not be my new nickname." I warn.

"Too late." Sera says sadly. "It's stuck." She grins. "But he's not saying your name, he wants to see your powers. It's all he talks about on the Isle, he thinks it's the coolest thing ever."

"Well, it *is* ice..." I say innocently.

"You know I didn't actually mean *cool!"* Sera complains. I see Carlos holding back laughter behind her, along with Mal and Evie. Evie sees me looking and waves.

"You seen Rings?" Arson asks.

I nod. "What other movies did you guys see on the Isle?"

Sera wrinkles her nose. "Uhh... I don't remember. I know we saw the first two Rings movies... and this other one with these *weird* characters, this kid named Percy and a girl named...uh... Annabell?"

"Annabeth!" I say. "Percy Jackson! Which one'd you see?"

"Uhhh..."

Ar makes a swiping motion. "KABOOM!"

"Lightning Thief?" He nods. "Have you read the books?"

"Pirates can't read!" Mal yells.

"I ain't full pirate, sweetheart!" Sera yells back. "Ar can't, but I can. Some. But, no. Never read the books."

"You're *missing out.* The movies went waaaaaay off the books." I say. "What was the other movies you saw?"

"Umm..." Sera scratches her head. "There was one that was really good. There was this guy that died. And he came back. And this drunkard killed this guy with, like, extra fingers."

"The Princess Bride!" I squeal. I've forgotten about my mom's talk in my excitement. "You guys have seen that?"

"That's the name." Sera says. "I liked that one. I think those are the only ones we watched before De Vil's signal kicked off."

Carlos shrugs. "It's a magic barrier. What do you expect?"

I roll my eyes. "That's not important. You guys have *seen* Princess Bride! You are literally the only people I know who have seen it!" I raise my hand for a high-five and, shrugging, Sera obliges. I yelp when she hits it and shake my hand around in the air.

"You have a nasty slap!" I say. I look at my palm and my heart nearly stops when I see a glowing blue cut in the center of my palm.

But Sera doesn't notice and puts her arm over her brother's shoulder. "Eh. What can I say?"

"Ellie?" Carlos asks when I continue to stare at my hand. "Are you okay?"

I look up at him. He's the only one that's noticed, Sera and Arson are talking and laughing. Evie and Mal left somewhere in between.

I press my other hand against my stomach to remind myself to

breathe. "I need to talk to you." I gasp out, grabbing him and running.

"What? Why? Ellie?" Carlos asks, but I don't stop until I get to my room and I make sure Brit and Dude aren't there. Then I shove my hand in his face.

"Look at this!" I practically scream. His eyes go wide and he stares at it.

"Wait... Blue means---"

"Cursed. Yeah, I got that already." I say.

"Wait---but, why are you---"

"Don't know. My mom just came up and told me I'm going to die!" I yell.

"Wait, what?" Carlos says. His voice cracks.

I put my hand down. "My mom told me that she gave me my powers when I was a kid, and somehow they're cursing me now, so she thinks I'm going to die." I start searching my bookshelf for the book. I know which one she's talking about at least. A big one with a golden-brown cover.

"Ellie, what are you saying?" Carlos asks, putting a hand on my shoulder and turning me back to him. I throw him off me and turn back me, and he pulls me back again more forcefully.

"*Ellie.* What is going on?" he pleads.

I almost start crying and bite down hard on my bottom lip to stop them. "My mom said it'd be in the book..." I say weakly. He lets go of me and starts rifling through the shelf.

"What's it look like?"

"Brown cover. Gold markings." I say, kneeling beside him. He pulls one off the shelf.

"This?"

"Yeah." I grab it and run my hand over the cover. *Anna's Guide To Magic and Mayhem.* "My Aunt Anna wrote this for my mom, 'cuz she wanted to know of all the available powers and what they do." I open it up and run down the chapters. *Chapter 20, Ice and Winter.*

"This should tell us..." I whisper, sinking down on the ground and leaning against the bookshelf, flipping to the page number. Carlos moves beside me.

"Here!" I put my finger on it and start reading shakily. "Of the existing powers, Ice and Winter is the one I'm most familiar with. Able to create ice, snow, and mist in solid waves, and able to freeze and contain almost anything, these powers are among the most dangerous in the wrong hands.

"Creating snowmen? Eternal winter? A castle, clothes, and a way of transportation if used right, my sister Elsa's powers is by far the most enchanting. Recognizable by it's blue or white glow, it has a few downsides. When hitting a person..." I stop and look up. "I'm going to look for the thing we need. One sec." I scan the page. "Wait. Here we go."

"When transferred to you by a curse, not born with, Ice and Winter will eventually kill its host." I glance up at Carlos, who just shakes his head. "It---It grows colder inside you, depending on how often you use them, and---and will freeze the host eventually. Signs that it may be on stage Five, Final stage, is tender skin that shines when cut, and ice appearing inside pupils.

"Once you get to stage Five, you have---" I choke and stop. "You have nearly a w-week if n-not taken c-care of b-before." I finish. I can't hold my tears now, so I slam the book shut.

Oh, no! What will happen? MWAHAHA.

I am evil.

Hope you liked this chapter, it's kind of confusing... but hope

you enjoyed!

Aftermath

"Ellie," Carlos starts yet again. "It said we had a week. We can figure this out!" he says desperately.

I point to the page again, jamming my finger on the paper. "No cure. *No cure.* Says it plain and clear. There is no cure."

"But---"

"Carlos, what's the point?" I rub the cut on my hand, smearing blue blood on my skin. "We've looked through every stinking book on curses in this library. There is *nothing* on cures."

"But we---"

"Stop it!" I snap. "There's nothing we can do."

I'm reacting very differently than I thought I would. I'm not scared. I'm angry. I'm snapping at every little thing, and just from slamming books closed too hard I've given myself three new cuts that are glowing blue. The one time I caught a glimpse of myself in a mirror, my eyes were a brilliant sapphire blue. I'm a sickly pale, and whatever makeup I had had on had been washed away when I'd splashed my face in my sink.

Carlos is reacting different than I would have expected too. He's optimistic, and terrified. He tries to hide it, though not very well. He's torn through every book and website he could find, but nothing from it.

We've been in this stupid library for four hours, and only now do I remember my promise to get Ben the book. I sigh and rub my face, getting off the ground and grabbing my Aunt Anna's book.

"Where're you going?" Carlos asks, scrambling up.

"I forgot... I have to give this to Ben." I mumble, walking to the door. It opens before I can get there, and Audrey, back from her

stupid spa trip, walks in. She stops laughing when she sees me and puts and arm out to stop her friend Poppy Pan from coming in. Audrey slowly pulls her sunglasses down to get a better look at me.

"You look like you're dying." she scoffs.

It takes all I have in me not to scream at her. Carlos comes up behind me and puts a hand on my shoulder.

"Stop it , Audrey. Contrary to what you think, the world doesn't revolve around you." Carlos says firmly.

I look up at him in surprise. Audrey's mouth drops open. Poppy looks ready to laugh but loses it as soon as Audrey glares at her. She whips her sunglasses off.

"Excuse me, who do you think you are?" She sniffs bossily.

"I'm not you, and that's enough." I snap, walking forward and deliberately hitting her shoulder with mine on my way out. But outside isn't much better.

"Hey, Ells, where're you been?" Hector appears out of nowhere and gawks at my appearance. "Woah, what happened to *you?*"

"None of your business, Hector." I say, pushing past him. Carlos catches up and walks on one side of me, Hector joining the other.

"Why do you look like that?" he asks.

"None of you business!" I repeat.

"Hector, why can't you just go away?" Carlos complains. "You always show up when we hate it most."

Hector just skips next to us with his hands in his pockets. "Because she hangs out with *you.* She shouldn't be with a villain kid, she's a hero!"

"Excuse me, *she* is right here and can hear every word!" I tell him.

He just shrugs. "So?"

"So, I can pick who I hand out with, and it's *definitely* not you!" I say. He shrugs again and notices my book.

"Hey, what's that?" He grabs it and looks at the cover.

I snatch it away. "What is your *problem?*"

"Why do you have a powers book?" he asks. "And why is their glowy blue stuff all over it?"

"Hector, seriously, why can't you just leave your nose out of other people's lives?" Carlos asks.

"I do. Just not *her* life, because she should have better!" He says.

"You do realize how stalkery that sounds, right?" I say.

"That's because it is." Carlos mutters under his breath.

"It is *not*." Hector snarls. "I've grown up here with her, and she's always been shunned and teased. I never got why but---"

"If you care so much, why'd you never even act like I existed until I started dating Carlos?" I ask angrily.

"Because this kid is trouble! Ben was so stupid, bringing everybody over from the Isle!" Hector explodes. "You tried to overthrow him at the coronation, and Uma almost got the wand because Mal was stupid enough to try and go back!"

"Hey, I went with her, remember?" I snap.

"Yeah, because she's a witch and forced you to!"

"*Excuse* me?" Mal appears in front of our group.

"Mal!" Hector says silkily. "How are you?"

"Let me see, I'm furious!" She yells. She puts her hands together and green magic bursts from her fingertips, hitting Hector so hard he blasts backward into the wall. His arm hits against my stomach on his way past, and he's wearing a watch. He slams against the bricks,

cracking them.

And I laugh.

My hand jumps to my mouth as soon as it bubbles out, but I can't stop the laughter now. Hector watches cross-eyed, and Carlos' mouth is twitching. Mal smiles, satisfied. Then she comes to me and gives me a hug. Mal? Hugging? What's happened? Ben didn't tell her, did he?

"I heard." Mal says. "I'm so sorry, Ellie."

"Who told you?" I ask.

"Ned saw Ben looking it up and told the entire school." Mal growls. "He's already paid for it, don't worry."

"So, wait... the entire school knows I'm dying?" I ask, feeling slightly faint.

"Yeah." Mal says, wincing. Then she sees the book. "Oh, God, Ellie."

"What? It's just my Aunt Anna's b---"

"No, not that." Mal says, pushing the book aside from my stomach. I stare at the enormous amount of glowing blue liquid soaking through my shirt. Quickly I glance over at Hector. Sure enough, his watch has the same glow on it.

"Ellie, how'd---" Carlos seems at a loss for words. "That--- But----"

"I don't think..." I trail off seeing the blood on my book as well. And on Mal, when she hugged me. "I..."

Now I know I'm feeling faint. I sink to my knees on the ground. "It was just a watch..." I mutter, still holding Anna's book.

"Apparently that's all it takes." Carlos says. "Come on, we have to get somebody." He helps me up but I barely notice.

Is this how I'm going to live? How is this going to *end*? Will I just freeze? Like Aunt Anna almost did? What is going *on*? Why am I

cursed? My powers have never bothered me before!

I look down at my free hand. Sera's high-five cut is still there, but it's not bleeding anymore.

It grows colder inside you, depending on how often you use them...

Using them will make it worse, but I can't help but feel like...

I summon them in my free hand. Ice coats the cut without me controlling it and melts away, leaving my palm completely normal. Carlos grabs me.

"What are you thinking?? The book said it'd make it worse!" he says.

"But look..." I hold up my hand and then bring my powers up again. My stomach goes cold for a minute then melts away like what happened to my hand.

"Ellie, stop it!"

"But I..." I rub my stomach. It doesn't feel painful anymore. My head is clearing again.

"Ellie, he's right." Mal says. "You might have made it so much worse just by doing that."

"But it doesn't feel bad." I protest. "It feels better."

"That's not the point." Mal says. "Oh, we're wasting time. We need to get this stupid book to Ben, and then you two are coming with me."

"To where?" I ask curiously.

"To the only person I think might have a chance at healing you." Mal sighs.

"Oh, no..." Carlos groans. "Tell me you're not actually thinking..."

"Who?" I demand.

"My father." A delicate voice says. We all spin and see Brit leaning against the wall.

"Yeah. Your dad." Mal says. "Please don't say you want to come too."

"I must. He is my dad. I've only been here at Auradon for a short time, not even a week... But I've learned so much." Brit says. "I can't be afraid of father anymore. Also, Ellie is my friend. I want to help."

"Brit, thanks, but I---" I start.

"And don't even *think* about leavin' the mutt behind!" Dude's voice says. I look down at my feet and sure enough, he's there, wagging his tail.

"Guys!" I yell. "You are not coming to the Isle with me?"

"What's this, Icy? You think you, a dying popsicle, have a right to go alone?" Sera says, appearing behind Brit. Arson waves.

"Did you just call me a popsicle?" I ask incredulously.

"Would you prefer an Icy pop? Or an Ellsicle?"

"Ugh." I roll my eyes. "No. Mal can come if she has to, because she knows where Frollo is, but Sera, you just got back from there!"

"You're right. And she's never going back." Someone says behind me.

A chill runs down my back, not like my powers, but a literal chill. I slowly turn around, hoping against hope, that it can't possibly be her...

"How in Hades' name did you get here, Shrimp?" Sera growls.

Uma twirls her aqua braids in her fingers. "You all are smart. Guess." Harry smiles and waves behind her, and a huge gang of pirates are behind them. A *lot* of villains.

I look over at Sera. We left her on the Isle. The hole closed right behind us! We---

Oh, God.

My grip on the book slips and it falls to the ground. "You coming here was never about getting me." I whisper.

Uma grins. "Icy figures it out first! I'm surprised!"

"She's right, ya know." Harry tells Sera, Mal, Carlos, Brit, and Arson. "We never woulda made it off the Isle if it wasn't for yer friend here." He gestures to Sera.

"Me?" She asks in surprise. "Why me?"

"Oh, use your brain!" Uma says giddily. "Icy here knows, I can tell."

"Sera, we used Carlos' invention to get off..." I say.

"Wait, what?" Carlos asks. "How'd you even know what to use?"

"The escape button." I say.

"I thought it seemed smart."

"Oh, it was." Uma says. "We couldn't figure it out. But leaving Ar behind, and Ellie knowing Auradon so well, free ticket!"

"You just followed us." I say. "You just waited until we were gone, and then you left!"

"With half the Isle, it seems." Mal mutters. Dude brushes up behind me.

"Why does this lady smell like shrimp?" Dude yells.

Every pirate, Uma and Harry included, freezes. They all stare at Dude. I can practically feel the DANGER! DANGER! DANGER! warning signs going off in my brain. Dude just keeps wagging his tail. Carlos slowly bends down and picks his dog up, backing away.

"What---did---he--just---say?" Uma snarls.

"Well, I remember smelling that when I was over there to rescue Ben and Ellie, but I assumed it was the ocean." Dude says matter-of-

factly.

"Dude, shut up!" Mal, Carlos and I say.

"That's it. We got one last surprise, and then it's bye-bye, Auradon. Wanna see?" Uma asks excitedly, though not as giddy as before.

"I'm sure we're all *dying* to see." I drawl.

"You in particular." Uma says. "Gil!"

"*Gil?"* We all repeat.

Gil comes forward with Ben, who has a black eye and has his hands tied behind his back. Gil---maybe I'm imagining it---looks a little angry.

"Ben!" Mal yells.

"Gil?" Brit asks in a tiny voice.

"Sorry, guys." He mumbles under his breath.

"Now..." Uma straightens up and smiles. "Get 'em."

The pirates all rush forward at once, yelling in triumph.

_____

We all do the natural thing and scramble backward. Mal lunges forward first, purple magic swirling around her and growing until she roars and blasts fire around in her dragon form. Carlos sets Dude down.

"Go get somebody! Get Beast, or guards!" He yells. Dude nods and runs as fast as his little legs can carry him.

Pirates swarm everywhere, grabbing at us. Brit gets grabbed first, but her skinny frame does nothing against the gigantic guy. Carlos tries to get to her and gets punched hard in the face, going unconscious. Sera crosses her arms in front of her like an X and whips them out with a roar, sending pirates flying. One pirate gets a

hand on my shoulder, but I reach back and tap his hand, ice crawling down his arm and freezing his legs in place. Arson is down now too, and Dragon Mal is covered in pirates wrestling her down. Purple and black smoke fills the air and Mal drops from the sky, seeming unconscious.

Sera and I are back-to-back with a circle and pirates jeering in our faces. I hold my hands out, wincing from the glowing cuts I've just gotten.

"You better got somethin', Icy. I'm outta ideas." She growls, crossing her arms over herself again in preparation.

"I got nothing." I say.

She groans and flings her arms out again, sending pirates flying. The rush forward before she can do it again, but with a yell at least half of them are on the ground, clutching their heads and screaming in pain.

"GET HER! GET HER!" Uma screeches. Harry draws his sword and advances on Sera. She uses her arm to block him, but it somehow doesn't cut her. I'm running to help when a sword appears inches from my neck.

"And here I was thinking I'd seen the last of your stupid family." Hans Jr. says, smiling.

I groan and grab the sword, cutting my palm again in the process. But it works, ice crawls down the metal before he wrenches it out of my grip. I yelp as the metal makes blue blood spurt from my palm. Pirates jump up and grab my arms, pulling them behind my back and clamping something boiling hot and solid over my hands, keeping them together.

Hans Jr. puts his sword back on my neck. "Is that all, Uma?"

Uma nods, looking around happily at our sad group. Sera is on the ground snarling like an animal, pirates piled on top of her to keep her down.

"That's all for now." Uma smiles. She takes her sword out and slams

the thick butt on my head.

Mwahaha!

(Okay, THAT was a fun chapter to write. 5.2K views now, I'm celebrating!)

What will happen to Auradon and our heroic team? Huuuuhhhh?? Anyone guess? MWAHAHAHA. ONLY I KNOW!

wipes happy tear

I am truly evil.

Bye!

Prisoners

"What am I supposed to do? What do you suggest? She hasn't woken up for three days!"

"I get it, Carlos, but whining won't do anything. And she's breathing, isn't that enough?"

"No! Mal, her deadline has been shaved down to four days, and she's still out of it!"

"Wait! Look!"

I feel two people on either side of me. My brain feels like it's shriveled up inside me, trying to escape the painful noises and lights creeping in. I try to groan and find my throat feels closed off. I try to breathe and can't, but cough and air floods back in. My eyes jump open by themselves and I yelp at the light. I cover my eyes with my hands and sit up fast. That was a mistake, the floor tilts and I don't even have my eyes open.

"Ellie, open your eyes slow." I hear Brit instruct softly. "It's hard to get used to but it goes away."

I do as she says and crack my eyes open as much as I dare. Slowly but surely, the blinding white goes away and I scan around to see we're in a white room with a cot that I'm on and an open door leading to an equally white hallways.

"Where are we?" I ask, rubbing my head. My hand comes away with flecks of dried blue on them and I wince. "Let me guess. Uma hit me hard?"

Carlos nods. I notice he looks a lot paler than he normally does. "We couldn't get you to stop bleeding until it stopped on its own. She knocked you out *hard.* Also, we're in Auradon's version of a prison."

"White?" I complain.

Mal nods. "Come and look." She helps me and up and hauls me over to the open door. A long white corridor with hundreds of white rooms like mine are housing just about every Auradonian.

"So the villains finally did what they said they would?" I mumble.

Mal takes me back over to my cot and sits me down next to Carlos. "Yeah. Uma and Harry are basically in charge, and Gil helps. Frollo also demanded a spot, but they didn't give him one."

I look at Brit. "Wait, Gil came with you, and so did Madison and... why are you down here too?"

"Because my father is up there." She points shakily to the ceiling. "I thought I was done being afraid of him, but I was wrong. They gave me a choice, and I said no."

"Dizzy?" I ask.

"She's with E." Mal says.

"Where's Ben?" I ask. "Is he okay?"

"We don't know. Beast, Belle, and Ben aren't down here with us." Mal says. Her voice breaks once but she tries not to show it.

"What about Fairy Godmother?"

"She's not here either."

"What about---"

"Chad is up there with them."

"Wait, really?" I gasp.

Mal snorts. "Nah. Sera told me to play a prank on you."

"Wait is Se---"

"Eh, don't lose your head, Icy." Sera leans against my doorway. "There was no way I was stayin' up there, everythin' smells like seafood."

I give a weak smile. "So what are they doing up there? Just... looting around?"

Carlos sighs. "I don't think they know *what* to do. They've been dreaming of freedom so long, and now that they have it, they don't have any idea what to do with it."

"Harry and Uma? They say anything?"

Everyone in the room exchanges a *look*. I glare. "Okay, that was not well hidden." I say. "What'd they say?"

They all *look* again then Brit pulls a piece of paper that's folded and taped out of her pocket. "Harry gave me this, said it was for you. He used Fairy Godmother's wand to make sure only you opened it."

I reach out and take the paper from her like it's a bomb. "Did any of you try to open it?"

They all look at eachother then nod. "Yeah."

"Sneaks." I mutter. I pry the tape off trying not to rip the paper and open it up to find three words inside.

Told ya so.

"So?" Sera asks impatiently.

"It just says 'told ya so.'" I say, confused.

"Told ya so? What is that supposed to mean?" Sera demands.

I look up at her. "I have no idea." I admit.

Brit bites her thumbnail. "Had he mentioned to you that he was going to take over Auradon?"

"Well, yeah, he and Uma talked about it pretty often when they kidnapped me, remember?" I remind her.

She tilts her head to the side. "I remember. But I also remember Harry mentioning that you'd challenged him to do something, he

seemed to think it was funny."

"Challenged him?" Carlos asks.

"I didn't challenge him, that's---" I stop abruptly.

"What?" everyone asks at my suddenly horrified expression.

"I did sort of challenge him." I say slowly. "He said something about Ben's job being easy, and I told him to try it and see how long he lasted. It was just me being stupid, I wasn't serious! But he said 'challenge accepted' afterward."

"So... this is your fault." Sera says pointedly.

"Hey! He was planning to do it anyway!" Carlos says.

"I was kidding, De Vil. I like your girlfriend, I'm not accusing her." Sera says.

"You don't like *anybody*." Mal points out.

"Well, she at least hasn't done anything to make me *dis*like her." Sera shrugs.

"Ooh, Ellie, you got her to like you!" Brit cheers. "There are currently only two others on that list! Me and Ar!"

"And you're close to being off." Sera grumbles.

Dizzy pokes her head in. "Hey! You're finally up!" she says, coming in and hugging me. She yells down the hallway. "Evie! She's up!"

"What?" Evie comes in and sees me. "Ellie!" She runs over and hugs me like Dizzy did. "Are you okay?"

"Yeah, I'm fine, other than a killer headache and annoyed at Uma and Harry." I tell her.

She rolls her eyes. "I know. I can't believe Gil would go back to them. And leave Brit!" she whispers the last part.

I look over at Brit. They did seem to be good friends.

"Meanwhile..." Evie smacks my arm.

"Ow!"

"*That's* for not telling me you were dying!" She says savagely. Then she leans forward and hugs me again. "And that's because... you know."

"Yeah." I hug her back then let go. "Where's the way in and out of here?"

Evie sighs. "There's one door, but it isn't what you think. They used the wand, we can't get within five feet of it. Neither can whatever powers any of us have."

I try to get up and the room swirls. I sit back down hard, clutchung my head. "Ugh. I've gotta get Uma back for this." I mutter.

"Yeah, there's already a line." Sera says matter-of-factly. "To make sure I didn't use my destruct-O powers, she's keeping Ar up there. She told me if I used them she'd kill him. And Vice-versa so he doesn't use his powers."

"Yikes." I say. "Yeah, you get first place."

"Hey, don't forget me." Mal says angrily. "She still has Ben, too."

"Right. Twue wuv, and all." Sera says.

"Oh, shut up." Mal says.

"So you're sure there's no way out of here?" I check.

"Positive. Ben told me about this place once." Mal says. "There isn't supposed to be any way in or out but for the gate leading up there. Even if we broke through this," She raps the white wall, "It would let in a ton of dirt until you found a way to stop it. Or, it would eventually stop by itself."

"Perfect. Just perfect." I grumble. "I'm going to spend the last days of my life inside a blindingly white prison while Uma pillages Auradon."

"Well, this place ain't as bad as Uma's ship." Sera says. "This place has something that the ship didn't."

"What's that?" I ask dully.

Sera spreads her arms wide. "We don't have to listen to Uma's whiny voice down here." She says blissfully.

And we can't help it. We all crack up laughing.

So this one was shorter, because I crammed a bit too much detail in and went back to change it. Hope you enjoy, next chapter will be longer!

Also, I just published the first few chapters of a new book, YES A NEW BOOK AGAIN, called Starlight, Starbright. It's not a fanfiction, it's something I made up all on my own and I've spent the last year working hard on.

Take a look if you're bored waiting for this to update!

Breakout

My days ticked slowly down.

First it was four.

Then three.

Then two.

At midnight on the day before my last day, I was still working on getting out. Everybody'd been helping as much as they could, half of Auradon is down here!

But no way out.

Sera groans as she punches the space near the gate again. The two pirates guarding it snicker at her attempts. We'd gone around, even asked Jane to use what powers she had, but nothing worked.

I'd offered to try and use mine, but everybody had yelped and forbidden it.

"You can't see what we see, Icy." Sera promised me. "If you could see yourself, you'd see why we don't want ya to use 'em."

So I'm stuck, watching them fight for a way out.

So, that night, at midnight, when everybody else had gone to sleep in sheer exhaustion, I'd stayed awake. Staring at the ceiling in the dark.

If I'd hoped for a solution to pop in, I'd been disappointed so far.

"C'mon, brain." I mutter to myself.

Nothing.

I screw my eyes shut and breathe in deep. Then breathe in sharp

instead, my hand jumping to an excruciating pain in my side. These had been happening since yesterday, and my room lights a bit as my glowing blue blood runs down my veins painfully.

I wince in the dark, breathing shallowly until it passes and my room falls in darkness again.

There has *got* to be a way out of here.

I sit up and get off my cot silently. I creep out of my cell/room/whatever and tiptoe along the hallway, careful not to wake anybody up. The only one who I know would catch me is Dude, and I have yet to find him down here. Carlos doesn't like bringing him up because nobody knows where Dude is. Brit bursts into tears every time somebody mentions him, and Quentin looks like he wants to.

I go up to the gate. No pirates. That's odd. I reach my hand out until I feel the barrier. I lay my palm flat against the cool surface.

I close my eyes.

This may be the only way out, I remind myself.

I take a breath in.

And as I breathe out, I summon all the ice I have.

My eyes burst open as I feel the power rushing through me, making me feel more alive than I have in months, singing in my bones and out of my palm, light blazing through my eyes and my veins, until finally---

The spell guarding the gate shatters.

Shards of magical glass rips through my skin, my palm still outstretched and my power still buzzing through me, and it doesn't leave until all the magical glass is around me, glowing a dangerous scarlet.

I slowly put my hand down.

I did it.

But did I?

I look down at myself. Then back at the hall. Nobody's coming. I look down at me again. Blue blood drips down my skin, onto the glass shards that are gleaming in unison, lighting the room up with shadows that point directly to me.

And I snap awake, gasping for breath.

I lay panting on my cot, clutching a painful stitch in my side, staring at the ceiling. The powerful feeling is gone, replaced with the weak, sick nausea I've been having for the past couple days.

That was a dream?

Something in me awakens, needing that feeling again. That power. That feeling that, despite what people are telling me, I can break through magic. I can't let this stupid curse stop me!

So I get off the cot. I try to stand and the room swims in my vision, making me stumble against the wall. I close my eyes tight and press my hands against my temples.

I have to do this. I can *do this. I'm the only one.*

Don't ask me how I know. It's not something I can describe, it's... this feeling. Not a good feeling, but more a... *presence.* Like I know, somehow, I can break out of here, curse or no curse.

I open my eyes again to walk. Using the wall to help keep myself up, I slowly make my way out of my room and down the hallway. I'm loud. I know I am. But nobody comes, but for a snore here and there.

I close my eyes again halfway. My vision is spinning. I can't keep going... I just need to lie down... go back to sleep... I've only got a day left, anyway...

No!

I snap my eyes back open. I can't give up, I'm the only one who can get out!

I push off the wall again and march down the hallway, tripping sometimes but making it to the magical gate. I lay my palm flat against it like I did in the dream. I lay my other hand against it as well, feeling the magic moving underneath me, swirling with strength.

I close my eyes and just breathe for a minute. Ignoring the headache. Ignoring the side stitch. Ignoring the fact that I will die today, since it's past midnight, or tomorrow.

I breathe out.

I open my eyes, abandoning my dream, and slowly let my focus slide off the magic and into myself, searching for myself. My hands grow cold and my power spreads from my palms, slowly making a crackling sound as it freezes the barrier. I don't remove my hands until I can see the entire magical wall covered in a layer of frost.

I close my eyes.

Love melts ice. Every time. *Every time.* So why can't it melt what's already frozen?

I pull images of all my friends, my mother, Dude, Carlos, and my adventures with them. I pull memories of all my dates, of bashing Hector into a wall, and an image of what Auradon will be when we stop Uma.

I open my eyes and smile, for in front of me is not a frozen barrier.

A melted pool of what looks like liquid gold is on the ground. I kneel down, still slightly dizzy, and try to touch the gold. Wherever my finger descends, the gold slides away from. I stand back up, my head spinning and my veins giving a blue glow off on the walls.

"GUYS!" I yell. "C'mere!"

Sera pops her head out instantly and sees me. "ICY!" she roars. She bounds over to me and catches me just as I fall. "What the HECK

were you thinkin'?!"

"I wasn't." I mumble. Carlos comes out next and has about the same reaction.

"ELLIE!" about half of the prison is yelling. Only after everybody's done getting angry with me does everybody notice.

"HEY! The magic's gone!" Sera so wisely notices.

"Dummies." I mutter, still supported by her. Sera looks around incredulously.

"Well, are we gettin' out or are we gettin' out? Let's go, y'all!" She pushes me off her and bounds out quick. Carlos catches me at the last second.

"Thanks." I mumble. He smiles.

"At least you're punishing yourself for using them. Just don't use them again, okay?"

"No promises." I say faintly. Mal smirks and runs out as well. Without Ben, we spend around an hour trying to find our way through the maze of prisons. By then we're hearing shouts of pirate guards finding most of us gone, and the people in the back, and the slower ones get re-captured.

"We. Are. Not. Stopping." Sera snarls when I open my mouth. Our huge group is cut into about half now, with me, Sera, Brit, Mal, Evie, Jay, and Carlos in the lead. We finally break out into sunlight and leave the stupid white blocks behind. Mal looks over at the castle in the distance.

"We could..."

"No!" Sera barks. "We are getting our butts out of this area, where we can discuss a *plan* to get in and save everybody! De Vil, you okay with Icy?"

Carlos nods.

"I'm fine, I can walk now." I protest.

"Okay." Carlos says, pushing me away. I promptly start to fall again and he catches me. "You were saying?"

"Shut up."

"A'ight, we're running... NOW!" She sprints across the field quickly, into the woods nearby. What's left of us hasten to follow. I glance back. Pirates are right on our tail, Uma herself looking murderous in the lead.

"GET BACK HERE, YOU SCUM!" She yells, waving her sword at our retreating backs.

Ignoring whatever anyone else says, I push off Carlos and stand my ground in front of her. With a wave of my hands, ice breaks from the ground and forms a wall in either direction as far as I can see.

And then I collapse. Again.

Carlos mutters something like "Hopeless" under his breath as he picks me up.

"Thanks." I mutter. He gives a smile and hauls me past the tree line. I look at our pitiful group. Brit, Quentin, Evie, Dizzy, Mal, Jay, Carlos, Sera, Jane, Lonnie, me, and (somehow) Audrey are the only ones who made it out.

Sera claps her hands together once we're far out in the trees. "A'ight. Let's run over some stuff. Us, stuck in a forest with Icy, a few villains and Auradonians, and a brat." She nods to Audrey, whose jaw has dropped.

"Excuse me?" She snaps.

Sera nods. "You're excused. Now," She continues to Audrey's furios expression. "We gotta get back in there, right?" she points to the distant castle. "So we can get back Auradon."

"But all the villains came here already." Jane says nervously.

"Nah, they haven't." Sera scoffs. "Uma likes being in control. She'll let 'em out if they're useful."

"Like with you and Arson?" Evie asks.

Sera nods. "So, as of right now, they outnumber us. Big time."

"That's an understatement." Mal mutters.

"*But,"* Sera continues with a nasty look at Mal, "I know where we can find more people."

"Where?" Jay asks.

"We could always ask my mom." Lonnie suggests. "Uma's only gotten Auradon, right? Because she caught us by surprise. But by now, every other kingdom will know about it. My mom would totally come and help if I asked her."

Sera grins. "Finally someone gets it! Yeah, the other kingdoms! Neverland, China, Wonderland, etcetera." She waves her hand. "Anyone know any kingdoms you could run to help for?"

"Well... I could always go ask my aunt Anna." I say slowly. "I know Marshmallow would help if I asked."

"Nuh-uh." Sera scolds. "You only have one day left, Icy. Sometime tonight or tomorrow, you're gone. We gotta get you help first."

"But---" I protest.

"NO!" Everyone but Audrey yells. Even Jane looks angry. Brit stalks over and grabs me from Carlos dragging me more into the woods.

"You will go and see my father if it's the last thing I do!" She yells. Sera looks like she's trying to stop laughing. I glare at her.

"Guys, this is way more important than me, it's everyone in Aurad---"

"NOPE!" Sera bellows. "No way! Icy, I don't think you get it. We don't want you to die, you idiot!"

I blink in surprise. "Um, yeah, I got that, but---"

"No buts." Carlos interrupts.

"Yeah!" Dizzy chimes in.

"Ellie, we can do both." Evie says. "We can save Auradon *and* you."

"But---"

"Oh, shut up, will you?" Audrey snaps. Everyone looks at her and stares. "Ugh, I'm not pretending I care about Ice Queen here, but I do care about Auradon. It's my home."

We continue to stare. She waves us off angrily. "The plan?" She asks.

Sera shakes her head. "Right. So, Brit, Eve, Dizzy, you take Icy here to find *somebody* who can lift the curse. Everyone else, we gotta get to every kingdom here to---"

"Um." Jane says quietly. "I might be able to help. With Ellie." She clarifies.

Everyone looks at her. "How?" I ask.

She flushes pink. "Well... my mom's wand."

"You think that... but your mom destroyed the contract." I say.

She shakes her head, smiling a little. "Not that. I remember my mom telling me... I can stop curses. Your sick power thing *is* a curse, right?"

I nod. "I'm still kind of confused on details, but yeah. My mom gave it to me, it's a curse. Sort of, I don't know."

Jane beams then. "Then if I can get the wand, I can slow it by at least another week or two."

Mal's eyes flash green. "The spell. Ellie, the spell I used on my mom!"

I nod, the wheels turning in my head. "Jane, you can call the wand to you!"

"I can?"

"Yes! Mal used it against her mom, and since it's your mom's wand it should come to you faster!" Carlos says, getting excited. "Mal, what was the spell you used?"

"And now I command, wand to my hand." She recites.

Jane gulps. "Okay. And now I command, wand to my hand!" She closes her eyes and snaps her fingers, gold magic sparking fast. For a moment, nothing happens. Then something streaks across the sky, diving towards Jane, who shrieks for a second then catches it mid-air.

"You got it!" Lonnie cheers, wrapping Jane in a hug.

"And now we know what Uma's doing." Sera says smugly.

"Wait, how?" Brit asks.

"We know she's throwing a fit!"

I start to laugh but a sudden pain rips through my chest and I groan. Jane goes pale.

"Um..." She clears her throat. "Bibbidi Bobbidi boo!" She waves the wand and a warm, soothing feeling washes over me. Everyone gasps as it travels down my body, into the tips of my toes. I let go of Brit and stand up easily. Looking down at my skin, the blue veins sink away, and the sapphire night-light glow does too.

"Jane, you did it!" I yell, running and hugging her. I let go of her, turning back to Auradon castle. And now, without the threat of death hanging over my head...

There's a certain pirate who needs to be taught a lesson. You *never* mess with Auradon prep kids.

So, I realize this took a while to update, and it's not my best chapter... but whatever. 7K views! WHOOP WHOOP! Anyway, I really hope I didn't disappoint, I've been busy with other stuff lately. I'll be updating again soon!

Finding Friends

(**Gonna say beforehand--- China, Paris, all those places are real... Auradon is not... so just pretend Auradon is in the world somewhere.**)

"Lonnie, you, Jay, and Audrey go to China. Brit, you and Quentin go to Paris for Quasi and Phoebus and their family. Icy, you, me, and De Vil'll go to Arendelle." Sera says, gesturing to various spots on the map. "Mal, you and Eve'll go to Neverland, I remember Ben sayin' somethin' 'bout Peter Pan wanting to meet you guys. And tha' leaves---"

"Dizzy and Jane." Evie says. "Dizzy, are you okay with that?"

"Yeah." Dizzy says. "I met Jane a bit ago. We had cells next to each other."

Jane smiles a bit. "I'm cool with it if she is. Where are we going?"

Sera taps her chin, gazing at the map on the forest floor. "Well... Scotland would be ideal... but I remember Gothel talking about how slippery Flynn is... and then there's also Agrabah, because a former Street Rat would be good as well..." Sera looks up. "What d'you guys think?"

"Well..." Dizzy stops. "I think Corona would be best. Gothel always complained, like you said, that Flynn was too sneaky for his own good, plus it's closest."

Sera nods. "A'ight. Everyone knows how we're going to get to said destinations?"

Jane sighs. "Please don't say..."

"Bingo."

"Drat. Fine. Who wants first?" Jane asks, raising the wand.

"You don't mean---" Lonnie says slowly. "The wand can do that?"

"Short-distance." Jane says. "Hopefully."

"Why does that not make me feel better?" I mutter.

"I'll go first." Jay says.

'I'm fine with it." Lonnie says. "Just make sure you don't try and get us over the Great Wall. It repels magic, all kinds."

"Ah, man, so we gotta climb it somehow?" Jay complains.

"I AM NOT CLIMBING ANYTHING!" Audrey screeches.

"Yes you will!" Lonnie snaps. "Auradon is under siege, and you will *not* stand by and watch it all happen!"

"But---"

Sera fingers a particularly sharp knife she somehow has. "Hkm-hkm!"

Audrey goes slightly pale. "Fine." she mutters.

"'Kay, so everyone knows where they're goin'?" Sera asks. Everybody nods. "Okay, Jan, take 'er away."

Jane nods and raises the wand. "Bibbidi Bobbidi Boo!" She swirls it in Jay, Lonnie, and Audrey's direction. Gold sparkles surround them and they disappear with a *pop!* Group by group, Jane sends everybody to their designated destinations. Brit gives a cheerful wave before she disappears, but Mal doesn't take her eyes off the castle when she gets transported. Finally, there's just Carlos, Sera, Dizzy and I left.

"Arendelle, right?" Jane checks.

"Yeah. But don't send us too close!" I warn. "China isn't the only kingdom with protection."

Jane nods and waves her wand. "Bibbidi Bobbidi Boo!"

This time, it's us that are swarmed with gold shimmers, wrapping around us. I reach out blindly and grab Carlos' hand right before the world turns upside-down and all the breath is knocked out of me. The world swirls into focus again and I find we actually are upside-down, hovering right above a lot of water.

Sera yelps just as we fall, making a record splash. I let go of Carlos to swim back to the surface, spitting water from my mouth as I watch Carlos and Sera surface, Sera flailing around.

"*HELP!*" She barks before going under again.

"Oh!" I dive back under and drag her up, creating an ice block that I shove her on. She spits salt water out angrily.

"I am going to *kill* that girl when we get back!" she growls.

I roll my eyes. "Let's just get to shore." I look past her and confirm that Arendelle is close. We're just off the docks. "Carlos, since *she* can't swim... wait, how can you swim?"

He goes red. "Melody taught me. I hated not knowing how."

"Melody? Ariel's daughter?"

"Yeah."

"Ha! I can't believe she said yes." I giggle and can't help it. "She must have a crush on you."

"What?" Carlos yelps. "No, she doesn't!"

"Yes, she does! Swimming lessons are her way of trying to get alone with a guy!" I laugh, bobbing up and down in the water. "She's too shy to do anything else!"

He goes, if possible, redder. "Ugh, let's just get to shore."

"I agree with that. We need your aunt, Icy." Sera says, scowling. "And your stupid ice is melting."

I look over. Sure enough, it's slowly melting. I reach out and get

more for her. Then I climb on next to her. "Carlos, c'mon up. I can make it go fast."

He climbs up next to me, Sera making faces at him when he asks her to move. I smile and wait until he's on before cracking my knuckles in preparation.

"Okay, this is gonna go fast. Hold on!" I place my hands on the ice block and handholds appear for them. They barely have time to grab hold before magic shoots from my hands, catapulting us towards the shore.

"YIPE! ICY, COULDA WARNED US!" Sera yells.

I laugh. "That's no fun!" We bounce on the water surface. Within seconds, we're underneath a dock. Sera jumps high, landing easily on the dock. She pokes her head down.

"Slowpokes!"

I look at Carlos, who gestures for me to go first. I grab hold of the tall pillar and inch my way up, using my powers to create handholds for myself. Carlos is close behind me, until we finally heave ourselves up onto the wood with a grinning Sera.

"Took ya long enough." She says joyfully. "C'mon, castle's through town, and I don' feel like walkin' any longer than we gotta." She leans down and helps me up, leaving Carlos.

"Thanks." I pant. "But we need to take it slow. My aunt has the best security system."

"How's that?"

"She has M---" **ROOOOOOOOOAAAAAR!**

Carlos jumps and we all look up just in time to see a gigantic snowman bearing down on us.

So, short chapter. But it's MAY THE FOURTH! I had to.

MAY THE FOURTH BE WITH YOU ALL!

snickers and giggles so hard I roll over

I am a nerd.

Hope you enjoyed, and as always, please comment what you think!

Arendelle

"Marshmallow!" I yell, throwing my hands up in surprise. "Stop! It's me!"

Marshmallow stops his foot mid-air. "EL?" he grunts.

"Yes! It's me, Ellie!" I call up. He puts his foot down, making us jump up from the force.

"WHO DEY." he points to Carlos and Sera, who are both as still as stones.

"That's Sera, daughter of Ares, and that's Carlos De Vil, Cruella De Vil's son." I point to each of them. Carlos offers a small wave.

"GOOD?"

"Yes, they're good! They're my friends!"

"HMPH." He plops down in front of me, putting his face in front of mine. "YOU SICK!"

"What? Uh, yeah, it's a long story... how can you tell?"

"YOU SICK."

"Er... what's with two-word snowball, here?" Sera asks.

"He's Marshmallow," I scold. "And he's the security system I told you about. Nobody can get through him."

"I thought he was in your mom's ice castle? With all the itty-bitty ones?"

"Well yeah, but Mom gave him to Aunt Anna a while back because all the little snowballs were driving him crazy. She had to replace the floors so many times..." I clear my throat. "Nevermind. Um, Marshmallow, can you take us to my Aunt Anna? We need to talk to

her, it's really important."

"ANNA? WE GO." He reaches down a snowy hand and scoops us all up. Both Carlos and Sera let out yelps, but I just laugh.

"Relax, guys. He won't hurt you. Unless you throw a snowball at him, he's very touchy about that."

Sera and Carlos look at me like I'm crazy. I can't say I blame them. Marshmallow carries us through Arendelle, people calling out occasionally to me. I wave to them, and finally Marshmallow sets us down in front of the castle gates.

"TOO BIG." He complains. "YOU GO."

I reach up and pat his ankle, the highest point I can reach. "Thanks, big guy!"

"YOU SICK. GET BETTER."

"Thanks, Marshmallow." I sigh. He turns and stomps back towards the docks. I walk right through the gates, guards practically falling over themselves to welcome me in.

"Thank you, but I need to see my Aunt Anna right away. It's really important. Where is she?"

"Oh, she'll be in the nursery." a maid says, coming outside. "Kristoff is up there too, with your cousins."

"Thank you! C'mon, guys." I gesture for Sera and Carlos to follow me. I run around the castle for a few minutes, trying to find my Aunt, until---

"ELLIE! YOU'RE BACK!" A cold body slams into me and gives me a hug with tiny arms. "When did you get back?" Olaf asks, dancing around me with happiness. Then he stops. "Who's the grouchy one?"

"Uh, that's Sera."

"Uh-huh. And who's---"

"Okay, you're not messing it up again. THAT is Sera, and THAT is Carlos," I laugh, pointing.

Olaf beams, pushing his carrot nose up his face. "Why are you back? Shouldn't you be at school? Wait. Are you *skipping?"* His face starts to melt a tiny bit. "You should be at school!"

"Olaf, you being a parent to all those tiny snowmen is not suiting you. Where's Anna and Kristoff?"

"Oh, they're this way. I'll show you!" All happy again, he grabs my hand and pulls me along behind him, Sera and Carlos following.

"Is this guy always so... bubblies?" Sera asks.

"Yeah, pretty much. He loves summer, though, so don't mention it around him."

"Wait, what?" She lets out something that resembles a pig's snort. "A snowman likes summer?"

"Yes, I do, and I have my own personal flurry to help me!" Olaf says, still pulling me along. "Come on, we're almost there." He lets go of me and opens up the doors to the nursery, where my Aunt Anna is playing with my three cousins.

Cousin Eloise has blonde hair that reaches her elbows in a long braid, and a bossy, pinched-up face with brown eyes. She's the oldest, ten years old.

Then there are the twins. Troublemakers out to get just about everyone but their mother. Krystine and Andy both have straight orange hair and grinning blue/green eyes. They're both seven years old, and can come up with a prank within seconds. The only difference between the two is that Krystine (she goes by Krissy) has a brown streak in her right eye for some reason.

Andy and Krissy see me instantly. "ELLIE!" they both scream. They run towards me, hugging my legs and chattering away about a prank they played on their father yesterday, something about vinegar in his shampoo. I laugh and gently get away from them, going to Aunt Anna.

"Elicia!" Anna stands up and hugs me tight. "How are you? I'd heard about what happened in Auradon..." She glances at me reproachfully. "I don't really understand why you went to the Isle, but I'm glad you're all right."

I hug her back. "Thanks. But Aunt Anna, I'm not here for a visit. Auradon is under attack."

"What?" Aunt Anna looks surprised. "How?"

I swallow and go back to my accidental/on purpose kidnap. Then I explain about Sera, and her brother, and Uma getting onto the Isle. Then I tell her about my curse.

Her face goes void of color. "Oh, no. I feared this... oh... I *told* her to be careful..." She seems lost in thought for a moment. "This has to do with her father, I expect..."

"My dad?" I ask. Anna blushes red when she realizes everyone in the room is staring at her. "You know who my dad is?" I ask.

"Well---I---"

"Aunt Anna, do you know who my dad is!" I demand.

"Woah, Icy, calm down." Sera says. She points to the floor, where a thin sheet of ice is frosting the ground around my shoes.

Anna sighs. "Yes, I know who your father is. He's the reason of this curse."

"What? Why?"

"Because his power should never have mixed with your mother's." Anna says. "It was accidental, I promise. But he left after you got your powers... because he couldn't stand thinking it was his fault."

"Who is it?"

"Ellie, I can't---He doesn't want you to know."

"Why not!" I practically scream. I was told my father was dead!

"*Who was he?"*

Anna takes a deep breath in. "He was----"

BOOM.

We all jump, turning towards the distance. I watch through the window as Marshmallow stomps his foot repeatedly on scattering groups of people.

"Pirates!" Sera curses. "Shrimp is here!"

"Who?" Krissy says. "Can we prank 'em?"

"No! Krissy, Andy, Ella, get out of the castle and onto your escape boat!" I yell. "You too, Aunt Anna! WHere's Uncle Kristoff?"

"He's visiting Neverland." Anna says faintly. "They wanted a shipment of our magical, non-melting ice."

I curse under my breath and Krissy and Andy suddenly appear. "What'd ya say?" they both chorus.

"Nothing, guys. Look, we need to get out of here. Can you guys distract them for a bit?"

They both stare at me like they can't believe it. Then they grin like the evil devils they are. "ABSOLUTELY!" they scamper off and Aunt Anna smiles.

I take hold of her arm. "You are still telling me who my dad is later."

"I expected nothing less." She replies.

"Carlos, get my Aunt Anna down to the boat, and Ella." Eloise takes Aunt Anna's hand and follows her and Carlos down to the boats. "Sera, you go help Krissy and Andy, make sure they don't get caught."

"My genuine pleasure." she says. "What're you doin'?"

"I'm going to try and find Uma. If I can get her, we can maybe stop all this bef---"

"Well! I must say, didn't expect to see you here, lassie!"

I groan and Sera's mouth twitches.

"Harry, why can't you just stay in a hole somewhere?" I ask.

"Well darlin', I prefer to be out and about." he grins, holding his sword up. "And you two are comin' with me now."

"Fat chance." Sera growls, unsheathing two thin knives.

"Where did you get those?" I ask, bewildered.

"When I have the magic, I can summon weapons." She says nonchalantly. "Harry, we ain't goin' nowhere but back to Auradon to kick your fat butts."

"Ah, but that's where yer wrong." Harry wags his finger. "Ya---"

"NOW!" Krissy yells above our heads. A huge bucket of slimy seafood drops from nowhere, drenching Harry from head to toe. Sera grins.

"You're related to these squirts?" She asks. "I like 'em."

"Thanks!" Andy says, dropping down next to us. "But we should probably go before the insta-cement wears off."

"Insta-ceme---? You know what? Don't care. You guys are awesome." I say. "Now get down to the boats!" I grab both their hands and run down deeper into the castle, Sera right on my heels. On my way past a window, I see pirates scrambling over a wailing Marshmallow, tying him down on the ground. Krissy has me stop. She opens the window and calls out, "COMMAND SEQUENCE SAVE ARENDELLE! ACTIVATE! PASSWORD KRISSY AND ANDY ARE ELLIE'S FAVORITE COUSINS!"

"Hey!" I protest. "I don't have favorites."

"Says every parent ever." Andy snorts. "But we all know mama and daddy love us best."

"What was that supposed to do?" Sera asks.

"Wait... wait.... there!" Krissy points to what looks like dozens of clotheslines stretching from the castle over the pirates, dropping sharp arrows and boxing gloves made of metal. They scream and scatter, leaving Marshmallow to get up. He slouches over to us and plops next to the window.

"GO. THANK 'OO. GO. I STAY." he thunders.

"Bye, Marshy!" Krissy yells, kissing his snowy nose through the window. "We'll be back! With more pranks!" She gives and evil giggle and runs off again, Andy, Sera and I chasing after her. We finally get down under the castle where the escape boats are kept. Aunt Anna gestures for me and the other three to get on then we push off, barely making it out of Arendelle with Uma's whiny scream leaving behind us. I breathe easier once we're out of view.

"Well, *that* didn't go as planned." Sera complains. "We didn't even get anybody to help! OW!" She yelps as twin boxing gloves appear out of nowhere.

"WE'RE GONNA HELP!" the twins chorus.

Sera lets out a bark of laughter. "A'ight, so we got some useful midgets! But we're gonna need more to get Uma off'a Auradon."

"WE ARE NOT MIDGETS!"

"Yes, you are." I point out. They both pout.

Sera rolls her eyes. "I say we go to Scotland next. Since Merida would be a good asset."

"Merida?" Aunt Anna says suddenly. "But---"

"What's wrong with Merida?" I ask.

"Nothing, but that's where *he's* staying, and---" She goes pale and

shuts her mouth promptly.

"Where who's staying, Aunt Anna?"

"Your father." She whispers, so I barely heard her.

"He's *there*?"

She nods, just a bit. I slowly realize everyone in the boat is staring at me. I clear my throat. "Um. Who---who is h-he?"

Anna opens her mouth then closes it again. Then repeats the action.

"*Please,* Aunt Anna! You complained about being kept in the dark when you were a kid!"

Her eyebrows furrowed together. "Hm. Point taken. Well, Ellie..." She sighs. "There's not right way to say this... Your father is---"

CRASH.

ARE YOU KIDDING ME? I scream in my head as I run to the side of the boat to see that we've run up against a ginormous rock. And sitting there, looking up at us in surprise, is a girl with flowing dark brown hair and wide brown eyes. She smiles after a second.

"Well. Looks like you all are in trouble."

So not the BIGGEST cliffhanger... but I couldn't think of anythin else.

Can anybody guess who her dad is? Hmmmm? Hint: He has to have magical powers, because his powers and Elsa's didn't mix well together, and that's what cursed her. Anybody who guesses right will... will... hmm.... make up a new character that I will add in this? I'll tag you? Idk.

As always, please comment what I can do to make it better (or just scream how evil I am) and enjoy!

Mahina

[image]

(**For the people who originally read my last chapter where I cliffhangered on a mermaid--- @SpringStar186 (Who also won the guess-Ellie's-dad thingy) came up with the idea to add a new character in the story, and I liked the idea, so I went back and changed it to a girl with dark hair and eyes, okay? Just FYI. SHE IS NO LONGER A MERMAID!!**)

(**Also, imagine the picture up there with darker hair and different clothes, and greenish-brown eyes pleeeease?)**

_____

"Who are you supposed to be?" Sera asks, like talking to someone on a rock in the middle of our shipwreck is completely normal.

The girl stands up and grabs what looks like an oar, leaping off the rock up to our ship with a burst of wind that seems to appear just to help her. She lands on our deck, standing easily like she just jumped off a curb.

"I'm Mahina." Her vibrant green-brown eyes survey us. "Who are *you*, trespassing on New Motinui?" Her curly brown hair waves in the wind with her handmade clothes. Her dark skin nearly blends with the light wood of her oar.

[image]

"Motinui? You don't mean..." It clicks in my head. "Are you Moana's daughter?"

Mahina nods, her bright green-brown eyes sparkling. "And you just crashed your boat onto my relaxing spot."

"Wait, so there's an island around here?" Carlos asks.

Mahina points to a black speck in the distance.

"How'd you get out here, then?" Carlos asks.

Mahina smiles and stands up on the rail of the boat, spreading her arms and letting herself fall backward. We all yelp and rush forward, but she's already soaring up again, landing gently next to us.

"How are you doing that?" Carlos demands.

"The Ocean and the Wind help me." she says simply. "It helped my mother, it will help me when I have need of it."

My Aunt Anna fidgets, "Well, d'you think you can help us?"

Mahina turns her bright eyes to my aunt. "That depends. What do you need my help with?"

Sera gestures around. "Well, for one thing, *notice the freakin' boat!* Another, we need to get to Scotland. Auradon is under attack, and we're trying to gather peoples to come 'n help us fight the Shrimp."

Mahina blinks calmly and touches her necklace, which I recognize to be the one Moana wore on her journey. "We can help."

"No offense, Island Princess, but I don't see how you can help." Sera says.

Mahina just keeps smiling. "We can help. New Motunui can help. My mother and father can help."

"Stop saying help or I swear I'm going to hit you." Sera grumbles.

Mahina laughs, jumping up on the side of the boat again and sitting there, still holding her oar. "We can man a boat. We have a few fighters to help keep invaders out. And Te Fiti is on our side. Always. So long as a descendant of my mother is alive, she'll help them in times of great need. If you let me come with you, you will see."

Carlos coughs. "Well, we do need a new ship... or at least another way of getting to Scotland."

Mahini smiles wider and stands up on the rim again. "Who is coming?"

"You don't expect us to... jump, do you?" Eloise asks nervously.

Andy and Krissy grin. "DIBS!" They run towards the edge and almost fling themselves off when Aunt Anna catches their arms.

"Ah-ah-ah! No jumping just yet."

"Aw....."

Mahina reaches a hand down and hoists Krissy and Andy up next to her. "Anyone who is coming, stand up here next to me," she commands. EVeryone but Sara climbs up.

"I am *not* jumping to my watery death!" she growls, white as a sheet.

I roll my eyes and hold my hand out. "C'mon, Sera. We have to get to Scotland so we can get back to Auradon."

Sera hesitates for a second, then she ship unexpectedly tilts to the side with an almighty groan. Everyone but Mahina pitches to the side. She keeps her iron grip on Krissy, who's attached to Andy, who has Aunt Anna's hand, then Eloise, Carlos, me, and Sera still stubbornly scared of swimming.

"Sera, c'mon!" I yell. "This ship's going to capsize soon!"

"Uuuuuuggggggghhhhhhh fine!" She grabs my hand and Mahina does her trust-fall thing again instantly. Krissy and Andy barely have time to whoop at the top of their lungs before a huge aqua wave surges upward, wrapping around us and sending us cresting towards the island. Krissy and Andy are yelling happily, while Sera has her eyes closed and is still white.

Mahina smiles faintly as we get close to the shore. The wave lets us go, leaving us soaking wet on the soft sand. Krissy and Andy let go of who they're holding hands with fast, whooping at the top of their lungs and running forward.

"Kriss! Andy! GET BACK HERE RIGHT NOW!" Anna yells sternly. They both stop sadly and trot back to their mother. Mahina opens her mouth and a weird sound like a whistle and a "caw" comes out. She does it again and a few people appear in the tree line.

"Who are *they*?" asks one in a nasally voice. His suspicious black eyes scan us all and his hand doesn't slacken his grip on his spear.

"They are friends." Mahina says. "Not enemies. Relax."

Eloise hides behind her mother, and the only girl other than Mahina sees. "Why are they here? We were told we could live here in peace, remember?"

"Auradon is under attack," I blurt out. "We just escaped from Arendelle, which is under siege too, and we're trying to get to Scotland to get Merida and her family on our side."

The young girl's eyebrows jump up. She looks a bit like Mahina in dark skin, eyes, and hair, but she holds herself in a way that says she's a bit soft spoken. Her hair isn't silky curls like Mahina's, hers is thick and bushy, and her eyes are a deep gray. She sweeps her thick hair behind her shoulders and kneels down a few feet from Eloise.

[image]

"Your kingdom was attacked?" she asks gently.

Eloise nods, a single tear sliding down her cheek. Anna runs her hand through Ella's hair. The girl kneeling in front of her smiles.

"We could help. We're more powerful than you think, daughter of Ares." The girl looks up at Sera, who turns speechless.

"How'd you---"

The girl laughs. "Carlos De Vil, correct?" She runs her hand over the damp sand from the water that just dumped us. "I'm good friends with the Ocean. It speaks to me." she murmurs.

Mahina is grinning, while the other villagers are gazing at her uncomfortably. Then the girl looks up at me and her dreamy look

turns to that of horror. She stands in an instant and backs away from me.

"Mahina! Why would you bring *his* presence here?" she demands.

"Kalia, she isn't *him*." Mahina scolds.

"Him who?" I ask. "Why are you looking at me like that?"

They both look at eachother. "You don't know who we're talking about?" Mahina finally says.

Carlos makes a *time-out* signal with his hands. "Stop. What are you guys talking about?"

Mahina hesitates for a moment. "Are you her relative?" She asks Anna.

My aunt nods.

"Are you okay if we tell her? Does she know?"

Anna shakes her head. "No, she doesn't know. But she should. You're welcome to tell her."

"Stop talking like I'm not here!" I say. "What are you all talking about?"

Mahina sits down in the sand. So does Kalia. "Sit. It's a long story." Mahina invites. We all sit down, Krissy throwing a bit of sand at her brother while doing it.

So, new characters! YAY! @SpringStar186 mentioned that not a lot of animated characters (recent ones) showed up in the movies, and recommended Moana, so I went along with it. Kalia was kind of me just having fun with Hawaiian names. Sorry!

Next chapter I PROMISE I'll tell Ellie's entire backstory, why she has her curse, and who her dad is. No more stalling for me!

As always, I really hope you liked it, and please comment what you think!

(Also, I looked up what 'Pua' meant, it said it meant flower! Flower the pig! Ha!)

My Dad Will Never Have A Bring-Your-Kid-To-Work-Day

"So... My dad?" I prompt when both girls are silent.

Mahina sighs first. Kalia seems to interested in scooting away from me. "Well..." Mahina rubs the necklace around her neck. "So..."

"*What*?" I demand.

Kalia scowls. "There's no right way to say it, Sister." She says to Mahina. "Elicia, you father is the god of Death, Hades."

I stare at them in shock. "W-what?"

Anna visibly winces and I turn to her. "You knew my *father* is the god of *death?* How did that even happen? I thought Hades was on the Isle!"

"He was. " Kalia acknowledges. "But he earned his way back. Years ago, your mother went to visit the Isle to see if she could get Hans to repent after she heard he had a child. But he refused, and so she went to a few other villains. All of them laughed in her face until Hades, who thought her proposal sounded like a way to get off the Isle, so he accepted with the intent to betray her as soon as he got out of the barrier."

"But he didn't?" I guess.

"Nope!" Kalia and Mahina chorus.

"He fell in love with her." Kalia says.

"The god of Death. Fell in love with my mom. The Snow Queen."

They both nod.

"The god of freaking *Death.* With blue flamey hair."

They nod again. "Although his hair went out years ago, now he has real hair." Kalia says, like that changes everything.

"Okay." I clear my throat. "Um, so, why am I cursed?"

"Not finished!" Kalia says. "So your father came to Auradon, with the full intent of being a good guy, and your mother trusted him, but then..." she coughs. "When Elsa got pregnant..."

"Everyone thought Hades had... erm..." Mahina squirms, glancing at Ella, Krissy, and Andy, none of whom appear to be listening until they feel everyone's eyes on them.

"What?" Andy asks, running a hand through his hair. "Do I got a spider?"

"We get it, Mahina." I say quickly. "Just, um, skip that part."

"Yeah. Well, everyone chased Hades away, and Elsa tried to stop them, but the only people who came to her aid was Princess Merida and your Aunt."

Anna smiles slightly. "I offered to hide him in Arendelle, but he said he'd always wanted to go to Scotland. And he's been there ever since, far as I know."

Kalia nods. "And when *you* were born, he tried to come back. He tried to visit your mother in the North Mountain, but..."

"People were waiting for him to who up. And..." Mahina stops.

"Enough hesitatin'!" Sera snaps. "Just spit out all of the story, ya snails!"

Mahina and Kalia share sad looks. "Well... because he tried to visit you... a bunch of Auradonians attacked him."

"To protect my mom?" I ask.

"To protect themselves. The lord of the dead scared them. They just didn't want to admit it." Kalia explains.

"So what happened to King Zombie?" Sera asks. Carlos elbows her. "What?"

"He turned part human." Mahina said sadly. "He had to use an enormous amount of power to get out of there, and it drained him. That's why his fire hair is gone... and why he never came to see you again, Elicia."

"Okay, seriously, call me Ellie." I say. "This 'Elicia' business is killing me."

Everyone goes silent.

"Bad timing." I decide.

Everyone nods. I notice Aunt Anna is white as snow.

Mahina clears her throat again. "Um, yes, well, Ellie, your dad's powers, as you know, are death-y and dark. So... Are you really sure you want to know why you're cursed?"

"*Yes!*" I say.

"Your parents' powers do not mix well." Kalia says slowly. "You know that. But can you guess *why*?"

"Um, because his head can catch on fire?" I guess, knowing full well I got it wrong.

"No. What else is Hades the god of?"

"Uhh...."

"Fear!" Carlos jumps in. Everyone looks at him. "What? I read a greek mythology book once."

Kalia nods, smiling. "Yes, fear. He has a helm of darkness that lets him send out fear, and when mixed with your mom's powers...."

"Wait, why is fear and ice bad.... ooohhhhh...." I say, finally getting it.

"Oh what?" Sera demands. "I still don't get it!"

"Remember what makes my mom's---and now my--- powers worse?" I ask. "What emotion...?"

"Y'all are makin ' no sense---ohhhhhh..."

"Fear was the worst thing she could feel whenever she used her powers. Like when she held the scepter when she was coronated? But what does that have to do with the curse?"

"When you mom accidentally sent a bit of her powers into you, she molded your father's powers with hers. Death is inside you, quite literally." Kalia says.

I hold up my hand and summon some of my familiar ice. "But I've never felt anything like that."

"Tell me, what does your powers do when you get scared or angry?" Mahina asks.

"And what happens when you're in a situation that's life-threatening?" Kalia chimes in.

"I freeze."

They both look smug. "*That's* your father's side effects. When you need it most, you can't die."

"But... the curse is killing me." I say.

Mahina looks a bit concerned. "Not totally. It's draining you, which is an entirely different thing."

"But is there a way to stop it? Completely?" Carlos asks.

They both look at each other. "Yes."

"*How*?" Sera snaps when they don't elaborate.

"Your powers. They don't hurt to use, do they?" Mahina asks.

"Uh, no."

"Then I need you to go into the water."

"Wait, why?" I ask as she and Kalia both stand up.

"We need you to try and drown yourself."

"WHAT?" Sera yells. "Are you crazy, she could die!"

Kalia rolls her eyes. "Uh, yes, that's the point."

I stand up with everyone else. I see Krissy, Andy, and Ella playing off on the shore away from here with those other two guys that were with Kalia.

"HOW exactly would dying help my curse?" I ask.

Mahina answers first. "Your powers freeze you when you need it correct? So the last time you froze, where were you?"

"On the Isle."

"The Isle's magic-prohibiting barrier messed with it, and your fear that you must have felt when you were dying may have slowed it as well... but in any case, you being on the Isle and almost dying made the fear soak into your ice part of yourself, sort of like an unwanted disease."

"Still not getting how drowning would help."

"Silly, you obviously need to reverse the effects!" Kalia scolds. "You need to feel no fear this time, and when you freeze again it should force the curse out!"

"But she could *die*." Carlos so wisely points out. "Aren't you worried this might not work?"

They both automatically shake their heads. "We're positive. We could stab her, but there would be a chance she might not survive that. She needs to willingly try to kill herself." Kalia says.

Sera sighs. "You're *sure* this is the only way to get 'er back to normal?"

They nod.

Everyone turns to me.

"So... I just have to drown myself without getting scared?" I ask slowly.

"And no one can help you." Mahina instructs.

I nod. "Because that wouldn't be any fun," I mutter under my breath, turning back to the ocean. I can practically hear everybody tense up and hold their breath as I walk towards the water.

I turn back. "Um, I don't think it's possible to breathe in underwater. Like, isn't there some thing that's in someone's head that physically won't let you?"

Mahina raises her oar. "We could always knock you out."

"Won't that fall under *not helping me?"*

"Technically, it would be the oar helping you."

"Fine. Just don't give me a concussion, oka---" Mahina whacks my head and the world turns black as she shoves me into the water.

Okay, so for the people that read the FIRST version where she breathed in, someone pointed out that that can't happen, so I hope this one is more realistic.

Hope you liked this chapter!! If some stuff about her dad or her curse doesn't make sense, PLEASE comment! It makes sense to me, but that's probably only because I'm the one writing it. Comment if you need something explained better, and I'll go back an fix it!

As always though, I hope you enjoyed!

Also, anyone else happy that I finally got rid of Ellie's stupid death thingy? Eh?

Maira The Brave---Plus A Bonus Dad!

[image]

(**Picture above is Merida's kid... Just so you know.**)

"Ellie! Hey! Ellie! It worked!" I hear.

I sit up fast, my head complaining with the sudden movement. "Ugh. It worked?" I ask.

Sera, Aunt Anna, Mahina, Carlos, and Kalia all nod. "It's been a few hours, but yeah." Carlos says, looking happy.

Kalia, however, looks a bit uncomfortable. "It worked... but with side effects."

"Side effects?" I ask, groaning.

Kalia nods. "Um, try and use your powers. Not the ice ones."

"Not the... you mean...?"

She and Mahina nod.

I stand up shakily and search inside myself like I normally do for my mom's powers. To my ultimate surprise, a warm, dark feeling has joined the bright cold one inside me. I try to grab at it like my icy powers, and it responds faster than normal.

Praying this works the way I want, I thrust my hand out and a spiral of black mist-like substance shoots from my palm, hitting a spot on the beach we're on and shriveling it to black dust. For a moment, everyone stares.

Then they erupt into a jumble of applause, shouts, and cheers. I notice Carlos is hugging me, which I'm sure Sera will tease him about later, and that Mahina and Kalia are talking to each other

very fast.

"Hey! Guys! As happy as I am, too..." I shrug everybody off me smiling. "We still have to try to get back to Auradon, remember?"

"First Scotland!" Sera says. "I seriously think Merida can help. And Fergus."

"We will come, too." Kalia volunteers. "We can take a ship."

"How many?" Sera asks.

"Just me and my sister." Mahina says, laughing. "Nobody else wanted to come."

"Seriously?" Carlos asks.

"Yeah. They think if they leave Shrimpette alone she'll leave us alone." Kalia says. Sera snorts so badly she doubles over.

"S-sh-shrimp-p-pette??" she gasps. She slaps her knee in laughter, cackling until I kick her shin and she straightens up, fighting a grin.

Kalia and Mahina both smile. "You still need a boat, correct? Well, we can supply one." The gesture towards a huge boat, complete with a sail with the swirl on it, sitting in the ocean.

"It will take us to where you want to go." Kalia assures us. "It's safe, and the Ocean and Wind will help us!"

"Uh, you're sure about this?" Sera says, looking warily at the teal waves. I keep forgetting about her hatred of swimming.

I loop my arm through hers and smile at her. "Aw, loosen up! We'll be fine, don't worry."

"You seem pretty happy for a person who just came pretty close to drowning," Sera grumbles. But she tosses her black-and-red hair out of her face and struts towards the boat. Kalia and Mahina follow her, but Carlos pulls me back when I start too.

"Hey, are you *really* okay?" He asks.

"I'm fine. I promise." I say, adding a smile to try and convince him. He still looks worried, but he lets me go and follows me to the boat. Sera is grinning at me in a way that makes me glad she can't tease me in front of everyone else. Well, she probably could, but she doesn't seem like she could do it *well* right now, gripping the mast like a lifeline.

"You're sure you can get us to Scotland?" My Aunt asks, holding onto Ella in the center of the boat. Kalia goes to the back and sits down, grabbing the ropes.

"Very sure. " She tells us.

And so, somehow, five days later, we're finally seeing land in the distance. As it turns out, Kalia and Mahina didn't need to actually steer the boat, because wind and water kept pushing us even when they let go. But they said they prefered being ready should something happen.

"Finally." Sera grumbles, her green face(has been green since New Motinui disappeared from view) going slightly less so as we near the emerald hills.

Andy and Krissy peer towards the land. "Can we get there faster? Pleeeeease?"

Kalia leans down and trails her hand through the water. "We're fine. You can wait."

"Aaahhhhhhhhh..." Krissy groans, rubbing her face. "I'ma die if I can't play a prank soon."

"I thought you could make a prank out of anything?" Carlos asks.

"Yeah, but we used it all up." Andy says.

"One thing I will say, you'll most likely get along with Merida's brothers. They're triplets." I tell Andy and Krissy.

They perk up. "Everything's better when there's multiples!" they yell, giggling. None of the rest of us get it, but Kalia shouts out,

"Watch out!" The ship pitches a bit to avoid a few rocks until we're right up against a huge cliff. Mahina points around the cliff.

"The dock should be over there. Can you---"

"Got it!" Kalia says, gritting her teeth against the dark blue waves knocking the boat against the stone. The waves shift to something softer and push our boat away.

"Why don't they just carry us around instead of leaving you to do it?" Sera spits her red braids out of her mouth.

"Because we still have to do things ourselves, they just help sometimes." Mahina says.

"That's stupid." The words have barely left her mouth when she's drenched in water. "Agh!"

Krissy giggles up in the sail, holding a bucket over Sera's head. She high-fives her brother, who has a similar tipped bucket. I smirk and shake my head. She and her brother are hopeless.

Carlos looks ready to smile too, but then we scrape up against a dock. Three boys with wild red hair are there already, loading something onto boat, talking fast. They look up at us as we get off our boat and Kalia ties it up.

"Who're you?" One of them asks. I can't even tell who is who! Those must be Merida's youngest brothers. Hamish, Hubert, and Harris. I think those are their names.

Kalia sweeps into a low bow that she comes up from smiling. "I'm Kalia, and this is my sister Mahina. We're from New Motunui, and this is Queen Anna of Arendelle, and Princesses Elicia, Eloise, and Krystine. And that's Prince Andy. And that's Carlos De Vil and Sera, the daughter of Ares."

One of their eyebrows jump up at Sera's name. "Daughter of Ares? Another god?"

The middle one elbows that one. "Shut it! He said not to say he was here, remember?"

"Oh, right."

"You mean Hades?" I pipe up. All three of them suddenly look guilty and won't meet our eyes.

"No." The three say at the same time.

"YES!" Andy and Krissy say. "YOU LIARS LIARS, PANTS..." They stop and see the kilts. "Eh. SKIRTS ON FIRE!"

They all grin. "Ha!" says one. The other two elbow him.

I step forward. "Hades is my dad. It's not a secret he's here."

The middle one gapes at me. "*You're* his daughter?"

"Uh, we better get Sis for this." mutters one.

"Merida? Yeah, probably."

"What other sister do we have?"

"What about mom?"

"Uh-uh. She'd be mad we gave his spot away."

"But---"

"Nuh-uh!"

"Excuse me!" Kalia yells. "Can we see Merida? It's important."

They all stop. "Okay." They shrug. "Follow me!" Says one.Then they start arguing over who we should follow, but they're still walking towards the castle so we follow all three of them through the gates and into the throne room, where a woman with bright red hair like the brothers is talking to what looks like a miniature version of her.

"Maira, I'm trusting you with this. I'm not sure he wants to---" Merida shuts up when she sees us. "Hamish? Hubert? Who are

they?"

"Uh..." The three talk at once, saying our names, and somehow Merida understands. I notice she's still wearing her quiver even as Queen. Her daughter (I'm guessing it's her daughter) has frizzy hair like her but is choosing to wear beige shorts and a T-shirt with a green sweatshirt wrapped around her waist. Instead of a quiver and bow, she just has a dark brown satchel thrown over her shoulder.

"So, you're H's daughter?" Maira asks, strutting towards me with one hand holding her bag's strap.

"H?"

"Hades." She clarifies.

"Then yeah. I'm his daughter."

She gives me a once-over. "Thought you'd look less...white."

"Elsa's my mom."

"Ah. Yeah. Forgot 'bout that."

Merida clears her throat. "Is that why you're here, or is it because of Auradon?"

Sera nods. "Yup. Shrimpette took over."

"Shrim..." Merida shakes her head. "Nevermind. Am I right in guessing you're here to get backup?"

"Yeah." Carlos says.

Merida sighs. "All right. We'll come. But Maira... could you go get Hades?"

My stomach swoops. "Wait, right now?"

"It's been years." Maira says. "We should at least *tell* him you're here."

I swallow my response and Maira leaves. Carlos keeps glancing at

me sidelong until I catch his eye and he stops. We sit in awkward silence for a minute until Merida speaks up.

"Hamish, could you go spread the word? Go get Mum and Dad too. Dad'll murder this wee beast if we let 'im."

The three triplets exchange evil glances before running off.

"AND NO PRANKING HIM TO COME OUT!" Merida roars as they leave. They all laugh and keep running.

Eloise coughs and Merida's focus jumps back to us. She opens her mouth to speak when the door booms open and Maira and a man come in. He has dark brown hair that looks like it'd be handsome if it wasn't windblown currently. He's wearing a black suit and a blue tie, weirdly paired with what looks like black hiking boots. He has electric blue eyes that swoop around the room and land on me.

I find I can barely move my mouth.

"Dad?"

Mwahahahaha. ANOTHER new character... Plus Ellie's Dad!

I'm not updating as much lately because I've been busy with the end of school coming up. I'm working as fast as I can, so updates are still comin' I promise.

Also, just gonna say, writing Merida and the triplets as grown-ups is MADDENING. So is writing Anna grown up. It's hard!

Anyway, as always, comment and I hope you liked!

(Also, acknowledge the fact that I now have like 14.5K VIEWS. Thanks to everybody who reads this! *Mentally throws candy and chocolate cake and other good stuffs*)

Back To Auradon

My dad stands there, blinking in surprise with his mouth wide open.

"Lissy?" He asks. That name snaps a jumble of memories in the back of my brain I hadn't even known I had. Memories of someone I'd thought was my mother holding me as a baby but I now realize this person is much too warm, and memories of someone laughing while holding me, I'm feeling safe, of whispering stories to me of all the gods before King Adam was picked...

And a name.

Lissy.

I'd thought that was a name I'd made up, for a doll maybe that I'd forgotten about.

"That name... that was *you*?" I ask.

I notice he's wringing his hands, so I walk over and grab his hands to stop it. He goes completely still, not even blinking as he stares at my hands. Then his eyes slide up to my face and he smiles just a tiny bit.

"I see you got your mother's looks, not mine." he whispers. I can't help myself and I laugh even though there's nothing funny in this situation.

"I mean, I'd been seeing pictures and things... that people have been putting out..." he mumbles. "I'm sorry."

"For what?" I ask, quite forgetting everything I've learned about my dad. I can't believe he's *here.* My father is right in front of me! I WAS TOLD HE WAS DEAD. My brain can't begin to follow...

"For not being there for you." He sighs and pulls his slender hands from mine. "I should have... I shouldn't have cared that..."

"People were scared." Mahina says. "It's not your fault for running."

He looks over at my oddball group. "Er... I may be behind the times. Sera? Is that you?"

She pretends to tip a hat. "Yep. You're technically---*technically*---sort of my uncle, right? Ish?"

He see-saws his hand back and forth. "Of sorts. Zeus, your grandad, is my brother."

"Eh." Sera says. "Then I'd be related to Icy here. That wouldn't be so bad. But if we counted *all* of the god-ish stuff... I'd be related to some pretty annoying people. I'm fine with just Ar."

I press a hand against where my heart is. "I'm *wounded*." I say in a sad voice.

Sera gives a bark of laughter. "A'ight, I'll take you and only you, Icy. But there is *no way* I am being related to Afro's kids."

"Afro?" Hades asks suspiciously.

"Aphrodite." Sera clarifies. "I thought her name was Afro- Dite. Not Ap-fro-dite-ee."

Hades' lip quivers for a second before he bursts into snorty guffaws. He leans over and slaps his leg a few times before straightening up, wiping a tear away. "Aphrodite's going to love you for that."

Sera looks surprised. "She is?"

"Oh, gods no. She'll hate you forever and try to have you fall in love with a lamppost or a dumpster. She always says the afro stage was an awful moment in time."

Sera grins then. "Too bad that stuff ain't ever worked on me."

"Vocabulary apparently hasn't either." Hades mutters. Sera just grins wider.

Merida walks over. "Had, Auradon is under attack."

Hades' face goes red. "From who? Is Elsa all right? Lissy--er, Elicia, is your mom all right?"

I wave the name away. "You can call me Lissy for all I care. But yeah, mom should be okay, I think she was back in her castle by the time Uma got there."

Hades visibly relaxes. "Good. Well, is this everybody that you could get to help?" He gestures to our sad group.

Mahina leans on the oar I hadn't noticed she'd brought. "Motunui was assured we could live in complete peace, so we had the option to stay if we wanted. Arendelle is under attack, so we came here before we go back to Auradon."

Hades nods. "I should have known there was something else underneath my daughter's sudden visit..." He glances sidelong at me and clears his throat. "Er, who is coming back to help?"

Maira shoulders her bag. "Me, mum, and my uncles. No need to make everybody else panic." She gives me a cold look before turning her back to me and stalking away.

Hades glances at me again and tries to straighten his suit. "Er, I'll go get dressed better... We'll meet at the dock in say, thirty minutes, Mer?"(**Pronounced MARE, just so ya know...**)

Merida nods. "And I'll contact..." She leans close to his ear and whispers something. He smiles weakly and walks off.

"Anyone else think that was *very* weird?" Sera asks.

Everyone turns to stare at her, including Merida.

"What? Icy here sees her dad, her dad sees her, and Maira is all 'this is stupid', and Hades is all 'gotta go, nice seein' ya, kid' and we're all just *okay* with storming Auradon with like twenty people?" Sera says.

Cue the continued staring.

Carlos clears his throat. "Uh, maybe we should just go down to the

dock and wait for everybody."

"That'd probably be smart." Merida says. "My dad should be down there soon, but I know mum won't want to come. You all go down there, we'll be along soon."

We all nod and drag Sera's complaining-ness from the hall and back outside in the misty, cool air. We're waiting by Mahina and Kalia's ship when a man in a kilt and with a huge brown mustache comes up.

"Lady Merida says you's be taking a larger veesel." He says in a whiny voice. He points to a bigger ship and then trots off.

"So... all aboard, I guess?" Andy says. Krissy grins and runs up the plank onto the big ship, spreading her arms wide when she gets in the middle.

"I could live in this place." She says happily. Aunt Anna smiles and climbs on too, closely followed by Andy and Ella. Sera shrugs and gets on, followed by Mahina and Kalia. Carlos waits for me to get on before climbing up after me. He offers me his hand when we get on and I take it gratefully. This has been a hectic day.

"By the way," my dad appears in a poof of black smoke, making everyone but Kalia and Mahina scream in fright, "Carlos De Vil, right?"

Carlos looks confused. "Uh, yes."

"Just checking." He disappears with another poof.

"Uh... weird." Krissy says. "I WANNA LEARN HOW TO DO THAT!"

Anna runs her hand through Krissy's hair. "I don't think you can, sweetheart."

"Aw, yella-snow!"

"What?"

"Nothing!"

"Ha!" Sera says. "I like these midgets."

POOF. "Are we all ready to go?" Hades asks, looking around. He's no longer wearing the suit but looks *very* out of place in jeans and a leather jacket with his hiking boots. His hair is slicked back now.

"Almost." My Aunt says. "We're just waiting for Merida's family and then we'll leave for Auradon."

Maira comes up the dock with her uncles and her mom. "M'kay, we're leaving now. Anyone still out on shore, 'cuz we'll be leaving their butts behind if they're still there."

"No, I think they won't mind not being on the same boat as ya." Sera tells her.

I hold back a laugh. "Everybody's here." I tell Maira. She rolls her eyes and pulls the plank back onto the ship. The three triplets snap their fingers simultaneously and the ropes on the ship bounce about.

"How'd you do--ACK!" Sera ducks as a wood pole swings over her head. "How'd you do that? I thought magic didn't exist anymore!"

"Auradon chose to leave it be." Maira says, rolling her eyes again. "We chose not to."

"Mai!" Merida scolds. "Stop it."

"What?"

I decide I don't particularly like Merida's daughter. She sticks her tongue out at me and my friends when her mom's back is turned. The triplets snicker and poke each other at that.

The boat starts to sail by itself and Merida's dad yells from the dock. "OI! Wait fer me!"

The boat screeches to a halt a foot away from the dock and Merida's dad throws himself on. "Leavin' without me?"

"No, Dad." Merida says, rolling her eyes just like her daughter.

"Mum's staying, then?"

"Aye, you know how she gets." He winks at her. Then he turns to Hades. "I heard yer daughter's here... which one's she?" He turns to our group and surveys us. I have to fight every instinct in me to not slouch down and hope he doesn't see me.

His gaze lands on me and he grins. "Aaaah, it'll be you, then?"

I nod. He yells out and runs over, hugging me so hard he lifts me off the ground.

"Uh...hi?" I squeak. He drops me, grinning. I notice Maira is fuming behind his back. My dad is smiling slightly too as I back up next to Carlos again. He puts his arm around me, but even he's laughing a bit.

"Waaaaaaaaaaaaait." Maira grins at Carlos and I. "You two are a thing?"

"Mai!"

But Hades is the next one to speak. "What?" His gaze zeroes in on Carlos' arm around me and his eyes spark blue.

This. Can. Not. Be. Happening.

I literally met him *half an hour ago!*

Hades glares at Carlos, who goes pale and drops his arm.

"You're... dating?" Hades asks. He plays with his fingertips.

Carlos takes a giant step away from me at the same time I step away from him. Andy and Krissy look equally as evil as Maira.

Sera battles a grin. "Yep! They've been dating since like a couple months ago, when he asked her while she was fighting the Hanses."

"Shut up, Sera!" I hiss. But Hades just keeps playing with his fingers.

"Sooooo..." He keeps playing. "So...."

"Er, Had, maybe this isn't a good time..." Merida says.

Maira nods. "Nope, this is a very good time!"

I hate that girl.

I risk a glance at Carlos and see his face is as red as the non-black/white parts of his clothes.

Merida's dad Fergus clears his throat. "Well... Had... Eh..."

"Aaaand..." Hades seems to get the situation and stuffs his hands in his pockets. "Hmp."

I glare at Maira. I suddenly find myself *really* hoping she gets captured by Uma's crew when we get back to Auradon.

Ok, soooooooo.....

I found out something about Descendants 3 that MAY complicate things.

I don't know if it's official or not, but it looks like Hades will be joining the Descendants cast... AS A VILLAIN.

Whoops!

I'll think of something.

Anyways, I also have some other stuffs. I found out three new FOR SURE characters about Descendants 3.

First: Celia, daughter of Dr. Facilier.

Second: The twin sons of Smee: Squirmy and Squeaky. Ha!

EEEEEE! Can't wait for D3 to come out!!!

Anyway, hope whoever is reading this right now enjoyed the

chapter! Kinda short, but meh. I'm feelin' lazy with finals coming up.

As always, comment and enjoy!

(Also PS if ur bored go read mah other book...Starlight, Starbright. Just sayin'. I like feedback.)

Ok bye.

Mist. (Not The Percy Jackson Kind. Sorta.)

[image]

I'll give Merida this. Her ships go *fast.*

And it's not just the magic, either. Fergus can be seen waving his fists at the sails, yelling at them like it'll help. It'd be enough for me to laugh if Maira wasn't sending me dirty looks every time I came above deck.

It's not all good, though. No matter where I go, it seems my dad is stalking me. He seems to be determined to make sure I'm nowhere within five feet of Carlos.

I'm leaning on the front of the ship, watching the horizon impatiently for Auradon to appear, when someone taps me on the back and I turn around.

"Hi Sera."

"Hey, Icy. How ya doin'?"

"I'm fine."

"*Don't* say yer fine, Icy. I know yer not."

"I'm fine, Sera. Really."

She gives me a look that clearly says she knows I'm lying. "Icy, what's wrong with ya? Yer dad is here, yer probably freakin' out!"

"Oh, I'm freaking out all right." I tell her. "My dad just came back after what, seventeen years now? And he's determined to keep my boyfriend away from me, and Maira hates me for some reason, and we're on our way back to Auradon where Ben and Dude and Arson is still missing, and Gil betrayed us, and we have no idea if Mal and everybody are still okay wherever *they* are, and---" I force myself to

stop talking and swallow. "I'm fine."

"That, Icy, is the very *definition* of not fine." Sera scolds.

"Fine!" I snap. "So I'm not okay, but Auradon---"

"Can wait for one more minute. Holdin' in yer..." She shudders. "Feelings. *Blegh.* Will not make it come faster. Plus, I'm bored. Talk to me, Icy." She smiles, leaning against the boat.

I stare at her. "You're telling me you're not the least bit worried about Arson?"

Her gaze turns hard. "No. I'm more worried for whoever's face is guarding him, and that he has a good dentist." She rubs her right fist and I can't help but laugh. She grins.

"Well, look a' that! I got ya to laugh, Icy. I must be doin' *somethin'* right."

"Sera, you---"

"OI!" Maira yells from up high. "If you two are done, look at that!" She points.

I roll my eyes and look where she's pointing, expecting to see the Loch Ness Monster of something of the sort. But it's a hazy shape that looks achingly familiar.

"Auradope!" Krissy yells.

"AURADON!" Anna shouts back. Krissy slips next to me and whispers, "Auradope."

I smile and muss her hair, which is done in pigtails today. She giggles and runs off with what looks like my wallet. There's no money in there anyway, so I let her take it.

Kalia leaps off the boat holding a rope connected up high to skim her hand through the water. When she comes back up she shakes her head. "It's Auradon, all right. But we need to stop. They have patrols everywhere."

Merida goes pale and snaps her fingers quickly. The ship stops out of nowhere, even the sails winding themselves up and tucking away. Maira slides down a rope next to her mom.

"Now what?" She asks.

Carlos comes up from below deck and stands next to me. Hades doesn't seem to be anywhere for the moment at least. "Ellie, can you make mist from your ice powers?" Carlos asks.

Maira gives me a frigid glare.

"Um, I'm not sure. I think I can."

"I have a far better solution." Hades comes up from below deck and Carlos jumps away from me like he's been shocked. "My daughter can still help, but she's the only one."

Maira's glare turns scathing.

"Um, why me?" I ask.

"Because with your and my powers combined, we can make a far better distraction." He smiles almost coldly. "Have you summoned any Mist yet?"

"No she hasn't!" Maira snaps.

"How do you know?" Carlos shoots back.

"Well, *has* she?"

"Um... No..." He flushes and looks down.

Maira looks undeniably smug. "So I thought."

I glare at her. "I just got these like *maybe* a few days ago."

"So?"

"My point is," Hades interrupts. "Is that Mist can hide anything. Makes you see what you want to see, not what's actually there."

"And Mist will help *how*...?" Sera sneers.

"Mist can hide us, idiot." Maira sneers right back. "It will let us slip by your stupid pirate friends unnoticed."

"Mai!" Merida snaps.

"What? It's true, they're all useless, brainless hunks of nothing."

"Call me brainless one more time, you---" Sera snarls.

"OKAY!" I interrupt, literally holding my friend back. "I think we can all agree that we need to stop arguing. And how do you propose I summon Mist, Hade---uh, Dad?"

"Liss, it's the same way you summon ice. You reach down into yourself, your core," Hades mimics it and opens his palm, "And you'll just *know*." His palm floods with a blue fire that crackles merrily, sending blue-gray fog into the sky.

I try, I really do, but it's only after the twenty-ninth time that I produce a tiny blue flame on the tip of my finger. It crackles a little sadly, until my dad wraps his flaming hand around mine. My flame grows, spreading down my finger and surrounding my hand.

"Liss, you're scared of it. You can't be." Hades commands, tightening his grip on my hand. I refuse to look up at my friends but concentrate on the little blue light. If I look long enough, it looks like my ice powers. Not much difference, since they're both missing any heat. I wonder if Mom ever had something like this.

And suddenly, thinking of my mom, I remember what she always used to tell me. *Love melts ice. Every time.*

So I hold my breath and think of my friends. My boyfriend. My sudden-appearing dad, and my nervous wreck of my mom. My sweet cousins and my overprotective Aunt.

And the blue flame explodes, growing bigger than a beach ball and sending greenish-gray smoke blanketing over the boat and the ocean waves.

Kalia grins. "Nice! Now just keep it here while we sail up to Auradon."

I do my best to not let go of the blossoming feeling in my chest, and Dad lets go of me to make his own fire again. The smoke doesn't affect us, just feeling like a slightly chilly rainfall. But as we get closer to shore, the pirates start yelling to each other.

"Oi, you feelin' this weird fog?"

"I feelin' it. This is weird."

"Should we tell Uma?"

"Naw, I's sayin' we're enough to protect our Queen from a li'l fog." The second one laughs stupidly. We glide right past them unnoticed.

"Er, anyone else notice his use of Queen?" Maira points out.

I nod. "I noticed."

Sera growls. "Well, that Shrimp best hope that---"

"Shut it!" Maira snaps. "We're almost to shore."

Sera glowers at her. We bump up against a dock and the ship works by itself, tying up against the dock and banging the plank against the docks at the same time.

Maira bows sarcastically, gesturing for us all to go first. "Aura-idiots first, by all means."

"MAI!" Merida snaps.

"What?"

Fergus rolls his eyes. "Ah, let 'er have some spirit, Merida!"

"Dad! Not helping!"

Hades drifts off the boat, glancing back. "Er, Anna, maybe it's best if you stayed behind with Ella."

"I will do no such thing," Anna protests, marching off the boat. "Krissy and Andy are coming whether I want them to or not, and I'll not be safely on a boat while they're out here!"

"We can't just storm the castle yet, remember?" Sera says. "We need to wait for---ACK!" A storm of gold sparkles interrupts her, swirling on the docks and dropping Jane and Dizzy from the sky.

"OW! Jane, I thought you said we would land softer this time!" Dizzy complains, patting her hair to make sure it's intact.

"Well, we didn't go upside-down this time, did we?" Jane says. Then she sees us and grins. "Hi!"

Dizzy runs over and hugs me. "I'm so glad you guys are okay? Is Evie back yet? Is Mal?"

"No, we haven't seen them." Sera tells her.

"Woah, what's with midget and miss magic, here?" Maira says.

"What?" Jane asks, confused.

I sigh. "Jane, Diz, this is Maira, Merida, Fergus, my Aunt Anna, my cousins Krissy, Andy, and Ella, Mahina and Kalia, kids of Moana, and---"

"Is that *Hades?*" Jane asks, pointing to my dad.

"Uh, yeah. That's Hades. He's also kinda my dad."

"WHAT?" Dizzy and Jane exclaim. I rub my forehead.

"Long story. One we don't have time for. Jane, is there any way to get everybody back here fast? And wait, didn't you guys go to Corona?"

Jane nods. "Rapunzel and Eugene and their kids should be along any minute now. Rapunzel's kid's hair takes a *long* time to transport."

Sure enough, gold sparkles surround us once again and dump four

people onto the ground: Rapunzel, looking noticeably ready for a ball instead of pirates in a light purple dress with no shoes, Eugene wearing his trademark blue/green vest, and two kids. One with a *lot* of dark brown hair twisted up on her head in a blue T-shirt and jeans, and another girl with short blonde hair in a petal-y looking skirt and a purple shirt.

"Um, *ow!*" The long-long-haired one complains.

The blonde giggles. "That was fun!"

Rapunzel rolls her eyes and helps her kids up. The dark-haired one looks to be maybe fourteen or thirteen, while the blonde one looks Krissy and Andy's age.

"There they are." Jane says.

Rapunzel smiles at us. "Hi!" When none of her family says hi too, she elbows her husband.

"Oh! Right, uh, hey there." Eugene says, flashing a smile.

Their blonde kid holds back a giggle and curtsies in her flowery skirt. "Hi! I'm Princess Evangeline. I go by Lily, though."

The dark haired one pulls a bunch of pins out of her hair and lets it fall down past her ankles. "I'm Princess Rania. Nice to meet everybody. Now, where's this stupid little pirate who thinks they can mess with---"

She catches sight of Hades and stops abruptly.

"Oh, dear." Hades mumbles grumpily. "I forgot. I'm hated."

"You?!" Eugene practically squeals. "But---"

Whatever he was going to say was interrupted by a burst of green sparks. I grin when I recognize Mal's magic. Hers, however, doesn't dump it's occupants. Mal, Evie, Peter Pan, and a miniature Peter Pan drift to the ground with a small army of fairies. Mal grins.

"Hey!" Then she sees our group. "Oh. Uh... So you *didn't* just hit

Arendelle, did you?"

"Nope." Carlos, Sera, and I chorus. Mal's eyes scan over everybody but is interrupted by Dizzy running over all squealy and hugging her and Evie.

Evie grins and hugs Dizzy back. "Where's everybody else?"

"I expect they'll be along soon." Kalia says. "In fact... Frollo's daughter and Quasimodo's son should be back... Now."

POOF.

"SERIOUSLY?!" Brit screams, stomping her foot. Quentin sees us and waves. They're soon joined by more poofs followed by Quasimodo, Phoebus, and Esmeralda dropping from the sky, along with a goat.

"Hello!" Esmeralda waves, tossing her black hair behind herself. Phoebus, complete in full gold armor, doesn't wave. Quasi does.

"How did you get here?" I ask. None of them have magic, as far as I'm concerned...

Esmeralda sweeps into a dramatic bow. "A trick of the Gypsies. An easy getaway."

"And we needed it." Brit complains, tucking her (for some reason) wet blonde hair behind her ears. "Uma's crew was already there when we arrived." She looks around, hugging herself. "Is this everybody?"

"Not quite yet." Jane says nervously. "We still need Lonnie, Jay, and Audrey."

"Never thought there'd be a day where the words *need* and *Audrey* were used in the same sentence." I mutter. Someone hits the back of my head. "Ow!" I turn and see Krissy grinning at me, on top of her brother's shoulders.

"You haven't met Audrey yet," I warn her. She shrugs and hops down from Andy, who sticks his tongue out at me and runs over to Lily, who grins at them both. Rania rolls her eyes and starts

braiding her hair into tiny ones. Rapunzel sees me looking and explains she can use them like rope if needed.

"Does she have magic hair, too?"

"Technically. Don't look directly at her, just near her."

I do what she says and can kind of see it. Even though her hair is dark brown, I can pinpoint a few golden glimmers.

"She can't heal anyone but herself when she sings, for some reason." Rapunzel smiles. I notice Eugene is still staring at my dad, so I go over to him.

"He's not evil, you know." I tell him.

"How can you say that? You probably just met him!"

"He's my dad. And he got my mom to love him, and that's saying something." Then I turn to leave, right as Jane yelps.

"Woah, that's weird! Lonnie just used some old Chinese thing, I'm not sure what it is, to say to bring her and Jay back. Uma's *there,* right now! Well, not Uma I don't think. But Harry Hook is, and they got Audrey."

She raises her wand.

"Wait! Does that mean they didn't get anybody?" I ask.

"They got one person. Shang. Lonnie's dad." Jane says.

I sigh. "Bring them here. Then I guess we'll start getting Auradon back."

"Bibbidi-Bobbidi-boo!" Jane waves her wand and gold sparkles fill the air one last time, dropping Lonnie, Jay, and a Chinese man in armor onto the ground.

"Ouch." Lonnie rubs her head and looks around. "Hi."

I run over and help her up. I look around our group in dismay.

Jane, Dizzy, Rapunzel, Eugene, Rania, Lily, Mal, Evie, Peter Pan, fairies, Peter Pan's son, (At least it's not his daughters) Lonnie, Jay, Shang, Sera, Me, Carlos, Fergus, Mahina, Kalia, Merida, Dad, Krissy and Andy, Ella, Anna, Maira, Brit, Quasi, Quentin, Phoebus, Esmeralda... This is not a lot of people. (**If anybody reading this knows I'm forgetting somebody... PLEASE COMMENT IF ANYBODY KNOWS I'M MISSING SOMEBODY!!! Cuz I really feel like I'm missing somebody...**)

I sigh. "We need to find Uma. We get her, we get Auradon."

Someone makes a horrified squeaky noise. Everybody turns to see a snow-white pale Ella standing on a hill a dozen meters away from the docks, staring off towards the castle. Everyone scrambles up on the hill next to her.

And I almost make a squeaky noise as well.

Uma can be seen by her aqua-gray-black-white braids this time glittering with golden beads. She's standing on a high wooden platform surrounded by yelling pirates and a few recognizable villains. On the platform with her is Gil, who's holding a rope wrapped around a guy's wrists kneeling down next to Uma. Uma grins and raises her hands, yelling something unintelligible.

Mal actually does squeak. "Ben!"

Mwahaha.

Now---TO FELLOW KEEPER OF THE LOST CITIES FANS---(if any are reading this)--- IT IS NOW OFFICIAL!! SHANNON MESSENGER CONFIRMED IT!!!

FLASHBACK---Book #7---Will NOT be the last one! There is a confirmed numbers 8 and 9 on the way, and a MAYBE number 10!! AAAAAH!!!

Anyway, for the people who AREN'T Keeper fans.... I pity you.

Ok, back to being serious. I just saw Solo: A Star Wars Story on

this past Sunday. Two things on my mind since I came out of the theater. Actually, three.

1: Good movie! Not, y'know, the BEST. But decent! (Not STAR WARS worthy... But eh.)

2: Who the heck is Kira?

3: HOW THE HECK IS DARTH MAUL STILL ALIVE WHEN HAN CAME YEARS AFTER PHANTOM MENACE BECAUSE OBI-WAN IS REALLY OLD IN NEW HOPE AND HAN ISN'T MUCH OLDER THAN LUKE AND AAAAAAAAH THE STUPID TIMELINE MAKES NO SENSE!!!!!

I looked up the explanation for Darth Maul's unexpected visit to the land of the living, and it said the explanation was in the TV SERIES. The TV series have nothing to do with the movies!!!!!!!!!!!! ARGH! HE WAS FREAKING CUT IN HALF HOW IS HE STILL ALIVE HE CAN NOT BE ALIVE IT MAKES NO SENSE WHATSOEVER!!!!!

One more thing, and for anyone who has actually read this far, CONGRATS. Good for you! My final thingy: Hades has now (sort of) been confirmed that he's Mal's DAD. This will complicate things. IMMENSELY.

Ok I'm done.

Hope whatever bored person is reading this liked my chapter, please comment and enjoy!

Storming The Castle

[image]

(**For the gif above...what can I say? I'm a PB nerd at heart.**)

Practically everyone gasps at the same time when we realize Mal is right. Ben's face is practically unrecognizable, covered in bruises and cuts and a swollen eye. His normally immaculate blue suit is full of tears and what I *really* hope is ketchup.

"Oh my God." Maira whispers. I notice Krissy, Andy, and Lily hiding their faces.

"What is she doing?" Mahina asks. "Is she wearing...?" Mahina's dark skin goes pale. "She's wearing his crown!"

I look closer and see that she's right, Ben's gold crown is resting lopsided on her braids. When Mal sees that her eyes spark green and it takes the combined effort of Carlos, Sera and I to hold her back.

"Mal! We have to get closer if we're going to do anything," I hiss through my teeth. I drag her back down behind the hill and she calms down a bit.

"Fine. But we are getting down there. *Now.*" She commands. I nod.

"Everyone coming?" I ask our group. Every single person nods, though Ella a bit reluctantly.

"OY! WHO'RE YOU LOT?" Someone yells behind us, making all of us jump in surprise and let out some very undignified noises. I turn around to see the two pirate guards staring at us, my Mist long gone.

"Whoops." I mutter.

"You lot, come wif us!" One of the pirates says, holding his sword out.

"Not a chance." I say, raising my hand to throw my ice, but Maira beats me to it. Her hand plunges into her bag and whips out a blue sphere.

"EAT WISP!" She yells, throwing it hard between the two. It explodes on the ground with a blue explosion that swarms angrily around the pirates. They both scream and start trying to bat the sparkly blue balls away and then they run off, right into the water. I think they're trying to get rid of them by getting underwater.

I look over at Maira, impressed. "Where'd you get that?"

She just glares again. "It's not real wisps. It's images. A little bit of magic Hade---You dad taught me."

"Uh, guys?" Rania gestures back over the hill. "We've got a problem."

I run up next to her and my heart drops. Every single pirate is turned towards us. And *none* of them look very happy.

"Whoops." Maira says sarcastically.

"You couldn'ta found a *quieter* way of gettin' 'em?" Sera snarls, her eyes sparking red.

"*No,* I *definitely* didn't have a different solution I could have pulled out." Maira snaps.

"Shut up, you two!" Mal snaps.

And suddenly, the pirates and villains all yell at once and start running for us, waving their swords and weapons around joyfully. Uma alone remains still, glaring at us with Gil still holding Ben's rope around his wrists. Ben's head moves slowly towards us and sees us on the hill.

"BEN!" Mal yells. "We're coming!" She starts running again but Jane waves her wand and we disappear in a flurry of sparkles. We reappear on the platform with Uma, Gil and Ben, and all of the pirates still galloping the other way. Mal lunges for Uma before the pirate can react and punches her in the face. Uma stumbles

backward but stays upright.

"GIL! GET 'EM!"

But Gil's gone oddly still. He's still holding Ben, but he's looking back and forth from Uma to Brit, Uma to Brit.

"Well?" Uma demands.

Gil's jaw sets. "No." He lets go of Ben's rope and helps him up. "I'm sick of you ordering me around. And hurting people. And hurting Brit!"

Uma scoffs. "Oh, like your girlfriend actually knows you exist."

Gil goes pink but doesn't move. "She cares about me more than you do."

If she was any madder, I expect Uma would explode.

"You...Are...NOT...Betraying...*Me.*" She hisses.

Gil looks confused. "Um, yes? I would have thought that'd be obvious."

Uma lets out a guttural scream and lunges for him, but in a poof of smoke she's wrapped in inky black tendrils like ropes. I look at my dad, but he shakes his head.

"Uh..." Carlos points to my hands. Gray magic floats off the tips of my fingers, feeding Uma's bonds. I realize that *I'm* the one who tied her up. But I didn't even try!

"Nice job, Icy, but we got a bigger problem." Sera points to the huge crowd of pirates and villains now staring at us. I reach down and grab Uma, flinging my hands downward so a burst of dark magic flies down from my hands, pushing me into the air. I keep sending bursts until I'm on top of the castle.

"Stay." I order Uma. I connect her ropes to the roof and pat her head. She looks ready to murder me. Her necklace is glowing, so I rip it off her. "Nice try. Be right back."

I jump off the roof and fling my hands down to spark magic again to slow my descent. My friends (and Maira) have already engaged with the mob of pirates, but I catch Mal in dragon-mode flying through the air with Ben on her back with Ella holding onto him. Mal roars and sends a burst of flames into the pirates, making them scatter.

"THA'S THE BEST YOU GOT?" One of the villains yells.

Mal roars again and this time it's an explosion from the ground that sends a bunch of them flying. I catch Sera in the center, grinning with her fist on the concrete.

"Nice one!" I yell, mimicking her and slamming my fist on the ground. Mine isn't nearly as extravagant, a dome of ice exploding into existence over me and shattering into daggers that target the villains solely around me.

Krissy appears in front of me. "Would you mind doing that one more time?" she asks. I do as she asks, but this time she grabs them from the air and holds a fistful in each hand, grinning evilly. "Thank you!" Then she cackles and runs off, using them to poke people's shins and legs. I notice her handing some to Andy to use, too. Lily helps, but she only uses one, and she has a canister of lemon juice with her. I grin.

While punching a few villain faces, I look around my group. Carlos can be seen helping Jay whack a cowering pirate over the head with tourney spoons, while Lonnie and Evie are stealing swords from unaware pirates. Shang and Eugene are up on a balcony, snickering while they drop bricks on villains below. Rania, Kalia, Mahina, and my Aunt are running around holding Rania's hair as a trip wire. Rapunzel and Peter Pan and his son are next to Maira and Merida, the latter two using their entire arsenal (enchanted by fairies nearby) against the crowd. Quentin and the gang from Paris (except Brit, I don't see her) are making pirates step into poofs of smoke from Esmeralda and reappearing in the air, screaming as they fall. Jane is waving her wand, changing people's hair colors while Dizzy instructs her which colors would look worst.

But it's when I finally see Brit that my heart swells with pride. Brit

is grinning her head off, punching a guy in a long black robe with a funky triangle hat.

"GO, BRIT!" I yell. She catches sight of me and grins wider, pointing a ways away while her dad tries to gather himself. I follow where her finger leads and see Gil fighting another pirate.

And then villain appears in front of me. Not one I recognize, someone with frizzy black hair and black eyes. They grin and try to punch me, but I duck easily and use my leg to sweep them off their feet. I'm celebrating for a second when a familiar face appears in front of me. Or, should I say, *two* familiar faces.

I groan aloud. "Hello, Hanses."

So... sad to say, this will be the last update for a bit. My finals start tomorrow, so I really need to focus, and my summer starts this Friday, and my computer time away from school is... pretty scarce.

Sorry to leave the readers I am so happy read this on this cliff-hanger (not my BEST one, but ya know.. it's decent as far as cliff-hangers go. :P)

But I'll be on as often as possible, trying to write fast enough to keep up with the crazy comments people leave!

That's another thingy.

Thank you to each and every person who reads this! Currently I'm at like 20.5K views, and I never expected this to get over 50! *sends candy THAT IS NOT TWIX (@BeautyBeastRose)*

Also, a shoutout to @readstoomuch53546 for the AWESOME KOTLC/Robin Hood fanfic with an amazing amount of Princess Bride stuff.

Also, I NOW HAVE A REAL COVER!!! Still same picture, but NOW IT HAS WORDS!!!!

OK. Goodbye until next time!

(P.S. please still comment. I love reading feedback. Don't hate me!)

I Officially Hate Sera's Dad

[image]

(**Okaaaay... so I know I said I was busy with finals... BUT I NEEDED A BREAK. Enjoy!**)

_____

Hans Jr. sweeps into a dramatic bow while still holding his sword. Hans Sr. just grins at me. I notice they're both in sharp gray suits with knee-high boots.

"Raided a mall, did you?" I ask.

Hans Jr. smooths his hair back even though there's not a hair out of place. "Least we look better than you. When was the last time you actually looked in a mirror?"

I run my hand over my hair. I bet it's still got traces of dried blue blood from my near-death experience.

"Let's face it, a jail and on the run around the world isn't the best place to become a fashionista." I say.

Hans Sr. takes that moment to lunge forward with his sword, but I duck and a long, thin icicle appears in my hand to strike back. His sword meets with mine, a grin playing on my lips.

"*So* nice to see you've gotten rusty." I snicker, grabbing his blade with a black rope I conjure and yanking it away. I slide my fingers through the grip and study it. "Nice blade. Mine now."

Hans Jr. seethes and lunges as well, but anger doesn't kelp his balance. I dance away and kick his back when he stumbles, sending him face-planting into the ground. Hans Sr. helps him back up and, with murderous glares on their faces, they run.

I wave at their backs. "Bye bye, boys! Have fun trying to run!"

Sera appears next to me. "Think it'll work?"

I laugh. "It'd take a miracle."

She nods. "Thought so. OI! MAL!" Mal the dragon turns and, upon seeing the two fleeing, flies down and grabs them in her claws, dropping them next to us. Sera snickers and runs off. I tie them up quickly with dark ropes and shoo them along with the rest of the prisoners our group has gotten. I look around our group of tied-up or knocked-out pirates and villains. I catch a few I recognize, like Brit's dad and one of the pirates from my time (s) on Uma's ship.

Dizzy runs past me with another and shoves him into the crowd that's being guarded by Jane and Mal the dragon currently. I catch Dizzy's arm as she runs off again, giggling.

"Diz. You seen Arson?"

She shakes her head. "Nope. But he's probably inside the castle somewhere."

I nod and let her go, running around freezing villain's feet to the ground until I find Sera again, her explosive-ness helping. I grab her hand in the middle of the groaning and screaming and overall loudness.

"SERA!" I yell in her ear. "I'm going to find Arson!"

Her eyes flash red. "No way in Hades you're goin' without me."

"Wasn't planning on it." I say. I let go her and start running back towards the school, Sera close on my heels. I grab her wrist this time and fling my hands down at the same time she jumps. We land on the roof next to a still-chained Uma. I kneel down next to her and release her mouth only.

"Where is Arson?" I ask.

Uma just smirks. "Not tellin'."

"Lemme rephrase that." I say pleasantly. I light my finger with my blue flames and hold it just under her nose. "Where. Is. Arson."

Sera whistles. "Wooooooooow. If I'd known ya were *this* brutal, I woulda been yer friend way sooner."

Uma gulps, going cross-eyed to watch the flames twinkle happily, almost like they want me to hold my finger closer to Uma. "You need to take me with you. Only I can get him out." Uma commands, sounding surprisingly calm. Her voice cracks once but otherwise remains steady.

I stand up, extinguishing my fire. "What do you think?" I ask Sera.

She shrugs. "I dunno, honestly. But... I need Ar. Get 'er up."

I roll my eyes and grab Uma's elbow to pull her up. "All right, Shrimp." She scowls. "Where's Arson?"

Uma grins. "Glad you saw reason. All right. Take me down to the ground."

I let out a huff of air and grab onto Sera again, slowing our descent again. We stand in front of the doors in the midst of the now-dying-out fight. Most villains are either captured or fleeing. Uma's gaze darkens at that but she doesn't protest as she directs us throughout the castle.

"Any particular reason we're going to Ben's office?" I ask.

"Ben's office is currently magic-free." Uma tells me sweetly.

"No-magic spells don't work on me." I say. *Except those idiotic gloves...*

"All right. I need my necklace back." Uma says when we reach Ben's door.

"Not a chance." I snort. Sera seems to find it incredibly funny.

"Then no Arson." Uma shrugs, flipping her braids. I notice she's still wearing Ben's crown and I take it off her. She glares.

"Sera?" I sigh.

"Icy..." She looks calm but for the twitch in her lips.

"Fine!" I snap, pulling the seashell necklace out of my pocket and slipping it over Uma's neck. I snap my fingers and every rope on her but the ones holding her hands behind her back disappear. "Get us in there. *Now*."

"With pleasure." Uma says sweetly, going up to the door. A small slot opens up and aqua light fills the hall. "Lady Tremaine's Curl Up and Dye." Uma says into it. Her necklace glows and I flinch. But the door opens up slightly.

"Curl up and Dye?" Sera asks, raising her eyebrows.

Uma shrugs. "Easy to remember, and easily the weakest shopkeepers on the Isle."

I grab her necklace again and keep a hold on her elbow as I push the door open. "Dizzy's twice as brave as you are. And certainly not as stupid."

But Uma doesn't even react. She doesn't look angry. And walking into the room, I know why.

Ben's office is blinding white, just like the prisons, but here there's a pressing presence, like it's trying and failing to mute my powers. There's two people inside. One, a beefy, tanned-skin man with a leather jacket and jeans, with a gun holster strapped to his thigh. And---

"Ar!" Sera whimpers.

Arson is being held in a chokehold by the muscle-y guy, who's wearing sunglasses that make his fingerless gloves and buzz-cut look extra stupid.

Arson squeaks and takes a hand off the guys arm around his neck to wave. The guy rolls his eyes and takes his gun out and holds it against Arson's head. "A'ight. Step away real quick, now. From Uma." he takes the gun off Arson to flick it towards us. "Real fast, now."

My grip on Uma's elbow tightens for just a second, then the guy squeezes the trigger just a bit and I drop Uma like I've been shocked. Sera jumps away just as fast, her eyes losing their red glow to shine black and scared. Her fists squeeze so hard her knuckles are white.

The guy laughs a harsh, scratchy laugh. "An' let 'er outta that mag---" He stops abruptly. In one swift movement, his gun is back in the holster and he's whisking his sunglasses off, staring at Uma's black bonds.

He's completely silent for a moment.

Then---

"Where is he?" The guy snarls. "HADES!"

Sera chews on her lip. "He's not here. He didn't make those."

The guy zeroes in on her and she flinches. His eyes, I notice, glow a dangerous fiery orange. "Who's are they? Cuz they sure as Hades ain't yers, *daughter*."

She flinches again and my jaw drops. "That's your *dad*?" Why is he threatening to kill Arson, then?

Sera shakes her head, her arms hugging herself. I swear she's going paler by the second. "He doesn't care about us, Icy." Then her face turns horrified. But her dad grins.

"So! Yer ol' Hell's kid, ain't ya?" He laughs. "An' Snow Queen's. So this'll be yer tricks, ain't it?"

I feel my head bob up and down.

"Then release 'er. *Now*." His gun is back beside Ar's head in an instant. So, shaking like mad, I snap my fingers and the last of Uma's bonds poof away. She grins and saunters over to stand next to Ares.

"Necklace, now... *Elicia*." Ares says. I grind my teeth together but fish the necklace back out, making sure I crust it over in ice before

tossing it across the room.

"Now. Arson." I demand, since Sera seems to have gone mute. Ares grins and looses his chokehold, shoving Arson across the room. He falls into Sera's arm, his body shaking as he cries.

"Great. Now, what was that supposed to do?" I ask, summoning a mixture of sapphire flames and icicles in my palms, stepping in front of my friends.

Ares just grins and puts an arm around Uma, like she's his daughter. "I've got Uma. You've got Arson. And we're leaving."

"Like heck." Sera snarls, though admittedly a bit less Sera-y as normal. She eases Arson to the ground and steps next to me, her eyes blazing as much as her hands.

He just grins and holds Uma tighter. Sera's eyes widen. "Icy, freeze him! He's gonna---"

"TOO LATE!" Ares cackles, throwing his hand into the air. Flames descend from the sky, breaking through the ceiling and wrapping around Uma and Ares in a tornado of fire that twists through the air and flies away like an annoying bug. The last thing I see is Uma's triumphant smirk.

"NO!" Sera screams, flinging her fireball across the room and burning multiple holes in the wall before sinking to her knees, banging her hand weakly on the ground. "No..."

Arson is still on the ground, shaking. Both of them start paling even more than before and Arson's eyes roll up to his head before he goes limp. Sera clutches her stomach and keels over, falling on the ground at the same time I lunge for her, just barely keeping her head from cracking against the floor. She doesn't move at all as I basically cradle her.

"Sera? Sera! What's going on? What'd he do?" I yelp.

Her eyes are glazed and flickering weakly. "Fire... portal...drains...his....kids..."

"Is there anything I can do? Will you be okay?" I demand. "Sera!"

"I'm fine..." she says, her voice slurred. "Just... gonna sleep... fr'while..." Her eyes roll like Arson's and she doesn't move again.

Okay so like I said up there I said on my last update that I'd not be updating for a long time... but I was so freaking tensed up with studying I needed to calm down somehow and relax. So, I let myself write ONE chapter. I swear this is the last update you guys are gettin' for a while. My last finals are tomorrow and I NEED to focus and SUMMER AFTER THAT, WHOOP WHOOP!

Hope the peoples reading this enjoyed! Comment and vote and hey, tell your friends about it! S'long as I'm not gonna be here, I may as well come back and find hey, look, I got like a million more views over the summer... *makes puppy-dog eyes*

JK.

Ok, hope you guys enjoyed and I hope you guys's summers are awesome! Thanks so much for reading Ellie's story!

(That made it sound like I was quitting... I PROMISE I'M NOT!)

Comatose: Adj. When Sera And Arson Fall Asleep And WON'T WAKE UP!

[image]

(Finally found someone for Sera! Kaya Scodelario! Just... Imagine DARK red braids twisted in, and her eyes flash red sometimes. And not wearing that shirt. :D)

I sit with my head tucked in between my knees, my legs folded up against my chest on the chair I haven't moved from in two hours since I brought Sera and Arson to the hospital. Footsteps reach my ears and my head snaps up yet again, but the person walking by me passes without glancing my way. Sagging with a mixture of embarrassment and frustration, I tuck my head down again.

No news.

Again.

The doctors promised they'd tell me what was going on with my friends, but so far nobody has shown up. I haven't even left to tell my friends where I am. What happened. I still don't even know if we won or not, but the few doctors left here had barricaded themselves in before the pirates came here so they'd let me in without question.

Footsteps come down the hall again and my head bolts up. Again. This time I'm met not with a doctor or a random patient, but Carlos running down the hallway looking out of breath and scared. He sees me and runs faster. I get up out of the chair just in time for him to basically ram into me in what I guess he thinks is a hug but I feel as a stranglehold.

He spins me around one time before putting me down, grinning hugely. "We won! Ellie, we did it! What are you doing here, you've

been freaking everybody out! You need to come back to the castle, and Sera---" he looks around. "Where's---?"

I press my lips together silently and shake my head.

His face falls. "Sera...?"

"She---" I press a hand against my stomach to try and keep down my breakfast. "She and Arson are in twin comas right now. Their dad did something, called down this fire thing, and they both just collapsed. She told me that it drained her and Ar. Right before she---" I choke and stop talking.

Carlos looks crestfallen. "But... we *won.* This shouldn't... after... we..."

I shake my head again. "We may have had a victory today, Carlos, but we didn't win. Ares and Uma got away."

"But... They're not on the Isle." Carlos says.

"How do you know?"

"Oh! Right, you left early, I guess. Well, Jane and Dizzy went through the castle looking for everybody, they freed everybody from the prisons and found Beast, Belle, and Fairy Godmother. It was all over after that, when Jane gave her mom's wand back. FG magicked everybody we captured and everybody trying to get away to the Isle, then did some weird spell where *nobody* can get out or in without a limo. Then she checked that every villain was there. Uma and Ares were the only ones missing."

I curse under my breath. "So they could be anywhere right now!"

Carlos nods and opens his mouth to say something then someone clears their throat behind us and we jump apart. I swivel around to see who it was, and find a very red doctor standing by Sera's door.

"I can come back." he mutters, his eyes on the floor.

"No---we weren't---" I clear my throat. "Is she okay?"

"We can't tell. That's what took us so long. They're both basically bodies right now. No breath, no movement, none of our treatments are working, and yet they both still have faint heartbeats." The doctor glances at Carlos once before plowing on. "Their eyes are rolled back no matter what we do, neither have any body heat, and respond to nothing." He shrugs helplessly. "In short, there's nothing we can do but wait."

"How long will that take?" I ask, dreading his answer.

"Anywhere from a week to a few months to a few years. As I said, we really don't know what is going on. Could you explain how it happened, again?"

I scrunch my eyebrows together and rub my aching forehead. "We cornered Ares and he grabbed Uma in return for Arson, then he sort of threw his hands up in the air and this tornado-looking fireball came down and sucked him and Uma up. Arson collapsed first, then Sera, right after she told me it drained Ares' kids when he did that."

The doctor looks troubled. "Their father did it knowingly?"

Carlos snorts. "Believe me, Ares didn't feel love for either of them. He basically saw Sera as a bodyguard, and saw Arson as an annoying pet he couldn't return."

The doctor gives him another glancing look. Carlos flushes just barely and ducks his head down.

I clear my throat. "You're absolutely sure there's nothing we can do?"

He takes a deep breath and rubs his eyes, looking tired.

"Nothing."

"Ellie! Thank God you're okay!" Mal notices me and glares. "Why did you run off in the middle of everything?"

I press my lips together before I start crying again. I'd found out

quickly that my tears set things either on fire or freeze them now. (Remind me to pay for the burned carpet in Ben's office later... If he finds out it was me.)

Carlos puts his arm around my shoulder consolingly. "Sera and Arson are in the hospital." he explains. I wrap my arms around my stomach to keep the cold guilt from crawling up my spine.

Brit appears in an instant, along with Gil. "What?" Brit asks, her voice a few octaves higher than considered human. "S-sera? Arson?"

Gil's right eye twitches. "What happened?"

I look down at the concrete underneath us. Carlos explains the gist of it, the fire/tornado/thing and Ares getting Uma out first and foremost, even willing to sacrifice his son.

Gil's bottom lip trembles. "This is my fault."

"What? How?" Mal demands.

"Gil, you couldn't have seen this coming." I say, though my voice cracking probably doesn't help my case.

"But I---I helped Uma and Harry invade. I helped everybody come here. I helped them capture you and nearly kill you!"

"CRYBABY!" Maira yells, startling Gil so much he freezes up. "No use cryin' right now, aye? Hades, did you sense Sera and whatever-his-name-is death's?"

My dad pops up and Carlos instantly removes his arm from around my shoulders. Hades gives him a death glare (He gives really really good ones, no surprise) and then shakes his head. "No. I did not." He glances at me. "And since you were right there with them and didn't feel anything, they should be all right."

Maira goes pink at him talking to me again, but she puts her hand on her hip. "There. You see? If Hades didn't feel anything, then they're nowhere near death."

"Somehow, that doesn't help." I say through my clenched jaw.

Maira just rolls her eyes and flips her bushy hair. She stalks away and Brit puts a hand on my forearm. "You're sure? You saw it happen? Ares called down---*that*?"

I nod. "Why? Do you know what it is?"

Shakily, Brit nods. "It's a form of transportation that all the gods can use on occasion. They summon their powers from their offspring. That's why it's not used very often. It's the one brand of magic that can't be dampened or put out. You are basically powerless once he process starts, and depending on how far the god or goddess travels using it, their children will suffer more and more."

"Why only their kids?" Evie asks.

"Because when the gods first figured it out, they tampered with it. They molded it, sort of, so that they couldn't be harmed by it." Brit says.

I look over at my dad, who has his arms crossed somewhat guiltily. "What can I say? We were young and stupid. We didn't have any kids then, didn't think we'd ever have any that we'd care about. We didn't think ahead to how having kids could actually make us love them."

"Nice save." I mumble.

Brit has the ghost of a smile on her lips. But it disappears as soon as Evie asks, "How long will they be asleep?"

Brit shrugs helplessly. "Judging on what you told us.... It could be anywhere from a month to a year."

Hope you enjoyed this (rushed) chapter! My next update will not be a real one, it will be the cast list for everybody, K? I think it's about time I make visuals for all my characters.

Also, anybody seen Evie, Mal, Jay, and Carlos' new D3 outfits? Disney posted an Evie video, and I gotta say I love her new outfit. Could use a little more BLUE less RED, but otherwise it's

awesome!

Cast List!

Dur. Danielle Panabaker as Elicia. Elicia always wears the dark blue leather jacket Evie made in the first part, along with jeans and a white or light-blue-streaked-with-white T-shirt. Combat boots are normally a big part too, tho sometimes converse or other tennis shoes. She wears part of her hair braided back sometimes, but unless it says otherwise, her hair is just down and hanging loose.

[image]

Willow Shields still Brit. But like, SKINNY. Kay? This picture is after she's sort of broken free from her dad. Still kinda hunches over at times, and can be quiet, but she doesn't hide behind her hair anymore. She wears ripped-up jeans and a purple jacket (kinda like Scarlet's red hoodie from the Lunar Chronicles, it's her safety blanket.) She still will wear her hair down, but she twists just part of it back to keep it away from her face.

[image]

I chose Francesca Capaldi for my image of Maira. The face in the picture below just kinda went with Maira's snappy attitude. Maira can always be seen with a leather bag slung over her shoulders (to hold her mysterious weapons/prank stock) with her fiery red hair either pulled back in a poofy ponytail or hanging loose. She prefers jean shorts and comfy T-shirts with sneakers.

[image]

As said on my last update, I picked Kaya Scodelario for Sera. But this picture looked better, because I mentioned Sera wore braids. Imagine her hair streaked with red, and DARK BROWN EYES that flash red every so often. The leather jacket works too, but imagine jeans with the strips of leather like Mal's jeans are like in the first movie, but black jeans with red leather. Under the jacket, a dark brown/red tank top.

[image]

Just because he's going to be playing Hades in D3, I chose Cheyenne Jackson for Hades. He actually neared the image I had, so eh. :)

[image]

Teilor Grubbs for Kalia. I've never seen her in anything, but I found her on the internet and she hit pretty close to home for Kalia. Just imagine her hair UBER bushy and a kinda weird smile on her face. Home-made clothes like in Moana, but Kalia's clothes have specific aqua-teal colors sewn in for her love of the ocean.

[image]

Auli'i Cravalho for Mahina. I KNOW she played Moana's voice, but that's not why I picked her. She just LOOKED liked Mahina in my brain. Put Moana's necklace on her, and maker her eyes green, and you got Mahina. (Also put the home-made clothes on her. THEN you got Mahina.) ANother feature of Mahina is that I ALWAYS imagine her with wind-blown hair.

[image]

Originally I picked Dylan O'Brien for Arson. He just looked like it!

key word---LOOKED.

But, Arson developed more, so I am correcting this mistake.

I have now picked Tyson, Percy Jackson's brother the Cyclops---(uh, but Arson---he's not a Cylcops. Don't think that.)---for Arson's character.

Just make him look kinda sweet in the face and way stockier. Basically same as Sera for clothes, red, brown, and black Isle-of-the-lost clothes.

This WAS Arson:

[image]

yeah. Bye, Dylan! (picture won't let me delete, for some reason... WATTPAD WHY)

And then the rest of the characters are obvious. Dove Cameron, Sofia Carson, Cameron Boyce, Booboo Stewart, Mitchell Hope, China Anne McClain, etc.

Hope you enjoyed this and that it helps imagining the characters!

(Also, comment if you know which of MY characters I forgot... I KNOW I'M FORGETTIN' SOMEONE!)

Dad's Revenge---Though A Little Late.

"*A YEAR*?" Everyone yells except Maira and Hades. Brit winces.

"Yes. Maybe more, depending on where Ares went." She brushes a tear from her cheek before it can fall.

"But---there's a way to wake them up, isn't there?" I ask desperately. "There's got to be something."

Brit starts shaking her head before I'm even done talking. "We---"

"CARLOS!" someone yells, then a ball of fur flings it's way into Carlos' arms. Carlos catches Dude in surprise and then laughs at Dude's desperate attempts to lick every inch of exposed skin.

"Hey, Dude!" Carlos says. "Where were you?"

"Where were *you*?" Dude demands, hopping back down. "I was runnin' around Auradon, being annoying to all those ruffians, and I couldn't find you guys anywhere! All I could find was the seafood girl!"

Brit's mouth twitches. "I love this dog."

Hades looks at Dude with interest. "Why does he talk?"

"Oh, because---" Evie starts, but Carlos' eyes widen behind Hades and he waves his hands in alarm.

"Um, because..." Evie trails off.

"Because I ate the truth gummy that Carlos wanted to use to ask Ellie out!" Dude says proudly.

Everyone stares at him, except Carlos, who groans and puts his face in his hands.

"When was this?" Hades asks. Suddenly my mother appears in a flurry of snowflakes and brushes her hair aside.

"Am I too late? I only just heard about---" she goes dead silent, her eyes bulging from her head when she sees Hades. "Hade?" she squeaks.

My dad flushes blue. Weird. "Elsa. Erm. Hello?"

Everyone starts to back away as silently as possible. But I want to see my mom's reaction when she realize I had to get two strangers to tell me who my father was.

She sees me and her eyes pop out more. "Ellie!"

"Hi."

"Uh, I'm gonna..." Carlos tears down the lawn away from me and my parents. Traitor.

"So..." Hades runs a hand through his hair. "I didn't expect this... to happen now."

Mom glances at him, some of the pop-eye fading. "How'd you get here?"

"Lissa found me when she went to Scotland to get Merida. She already knew then."

"Mahina and Kalia told me." I break in, crossing my arms over my chest, not bothering to soften my anger at her. She winces and laces her pale fingers together.

"Ellie, I..."

"No excuses. Why would you not tell me who my father was?" I demand. "You said he was dead!"

Hades coughs. "Can't really deny that one, since I'm the god of, you know..."

"Yes, but *you're* not dead, are you?" I snap.

His gaze turns skyward for a moment. "Point taken."

"See?"

"Elsa, I do believe she gets this snappish tone from you."

My mom's eyebrows jump up and she puts a hand on her hip. "Excuse me? Who's the one who spends all his free time conversing with dead people?"

"Says the girl who grew up alone in her room wearing gloves."

"I had an excuse!"

"So do I."

"Yours is a job. Mine is a curse!"

"You call snowy powers a curse? You know how rare those are?"

"Rarer than you, at least."

"I'm the only me!"

"Not according to the dozens of different myths."

"Excuse me!" I wave my arms to interrupt their fight. "Fight later, explain now?"

"Sorry." They mutter in unison. I roll my eyes. If they keep this up, Evie'll have a new ship.

I shudder. I can't believe I just though that.

"Mom, *why* would you tell me my father was dead?" I ask.

"Because I didn't want word to spread. I was able to get Fairy Godmother to enchant everyone's memories of me and your father to... die down, of sorts. They're not gone, if they see Hades they'll come back instantly. But I didn't want people to bully you."

"Too late for *that*." I mutter.

"She does have a point, Liss. If people remembered I was your dad they'd've basically banished you socially."

"Again, a little late for that." I say. "I was *hated* because of my refusal to give up my powers. So much that some people actually went as far to steal FG's wand and try to magic my powers away forcefully."

My mom's eyes bug again and a vein pops out on my dad's forehead. "*Eh?!*" Hades growls.

"I should not have told you that." I mutter.

"Nah. You did good." Dude says at my feet, not-so-quietly. "Now we get to watch 'em beat up Chad and his goon Ned!"

My dad starts cracking his knuckles. "Chad... Charming's son?"

"Yep!" Dude chirps.

"Be back." Dad stalks off, his hands blazing with blue fire. Mom just crosses her arms over the outfit I now notice is covered in a layer of ice that looks almost like armor.

"Mom, what are you wearing?" I almost laugh. She gives me something close to a glare.

"Well, I expected to come to a fight, didn't I?"

"No, I mean, how'd you get it covered in ice like that?"

She flushes red. "I made this before I hit you. All my clothes are still intact, I just don't use them often."

I grin. "It looks nice."

She flushes pink, this time happily. "Oh! Thank you."

"LISS! Is this him?" My dad comes back into view, dragging a squealing Chad by his ear. My grin grows.

"Yep."

Dad shakes Chad. "*Apologize.*"

Chad's eyes dart back and forth. "Why is---ow!---*He* here? Ellie, help me!"

I snort. "Not on my life."

"*APOLOGIZE!*"

"Fine! I'm sorry! I have no idea what I did wrong, but I'm sorry!"

"YOU DON'T KNOW??" My dad roars. "YOU TRIED TO FORCE MY DAUGHTER'S POWERS AWAY!!!"

"Your *daughter??"*

"Oh, come on. Tell me you're not surprised." I say, squatting down in front of him while my dad keeps a grip on his ear.

"YOU TRIED TO TAKE HER POWERS!" Dad bellows so loud even my ears ring. "SAY SORRY!"

"Ok, I'm sorry!" Chad squeals. "I won't do it again."

"No duh, my powers aren't connected to FG's wand anymore." I say. "You can let him go now, Dad."

Dad grunts and lets CHad go, who scrambles up and tears away from my father. "Where's the other boy this dog mentioned?" Dad asks.

"NEDWIN!" Dude yells. "He's the guy in the stupid green sweater over there."

"Dude! That's rude! It's hideous, not stupid. Stupid doesn't gather the ugly enough." I chide.

Dad stomps off towards Ned, who sees him coming and lets out a high-pitched scream and starts running. Dad starts jogging leisurely after him.

I turn to Mom. "Was he always like that?"

She sighs. "If by that you mean overprotective, quick-tempered, and yet surprisingly sweet, then yes."

_____

Ways To Be Wicked mistake that made it into the video:

In the Ways OFFICIAL video, not the movie version, starting at 2:22, when Evie says "show her, pass every test" and it shows Mal next to Evie. WATCH MAL. She scratches her cheek, not at all in character! Ha!

Also, below are two links that show Mal, Carlos, Evie, Jay, Uma, Gil, and Harry's new outfits. The first one has Uma's live thing and a glimpse of Harry and Gil with her. The second link is kinda long, but somewhere in the middle-ish has a picture of Mal and the gang in the new looks. Mal's new hair is AWESOME.

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=7s_lBzl0GdM

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ASNUcYlBWRc

Anyway, hope you guys enjoyed this chapter!

PS who else has seen the trailer for How To Train Your Dragon 3? Eh? SO GOOD LOOKING!

Stalkers

After Ned's rather embarrassing attempt to escape my parents, (Mom joined in halfway through, looking ten times scarier than Dad did when I told her about him posting the picture of me throwing an icicle at Chad that spurred my decision to go to the Isle) I wander through the school grounds while everything stays sunshiny and sparkles.

And I almost smile thinking how much Sera would have complained.

Will. Not would have. She's not *gone.*

Just... Asleep.

I sigh and tuck my hair behind my ears. We gathered people. We won. We *won.* But why does it feel like everything is worse than ever before?

If I could *just* get Shrimpy back. Back to the Isle. Back to where that stinking girl belongs.

Though I guess I'm being unfair. Uma seemed to struggle with her choice when she was cornered on the boat during Cotillion. But then her necklace had glowed and she'd jumped.

I shudder, remembering how she'd dragged me under the water.

When will this be *over?* When do we win?

I lean against the nearest tree and drag my hands down my face. I need... I need to find out what I can do about Sera. But Brit said there was nothing...

Uma. And Ares. I can get them.

I push off the tree, stalking across the yard, and in my anger I don't even notice the flash of red that I should have seen in the corner of my eye.

~Uma's view~ (**This is new for me. Bear with meh!**)

I glare at Ares. "You're sure this was the right choice to make, Ares?"

He glares right back. "Sure. We needed a fast getaway, righ'?"

I turn back to watch that stupid white-haired freak stomp across the lawn. "Oh, I don't care 'bout *that* choice. I meant comin' back here."

"Trust me. Ice Pop there'll come lookin' fer us. I want her powers."

"Why *hers?"*

"Do you got any idear how rare snow powers are? Ever since that bloody stupi' goddess Khione drew back her blessings, less an' less people have 'em." He pushes a branch aside from the bush we're hiding in to watch Ellie open the castle door and slip inside.

I almost snort thinking back to that near-fight scene I'd seen with Queen Elsa, Hades, and that idiot Ned. I can't believe I trusted him to keep the pictures of Elicia hidden for leverage. I'm just glad nobody found out it was me and Harry giving him the pictures of Elicia's tour on the Isle.

"So we're just following her around until.... what?" I demand.

"Until she's alone."

"She was alone a minute ago, you moron!" I almost yell. But I dial my voice back a bit. "Why didn't we get her *then?* And what difference will her powers make, anyway?"

He glares at me again. "You're kiddin', right?"

"Nope."

He points to the doors Icy disappeared behind. "She has no idea what her powers are capable of. If my uncle is her dad, mixed with Elsa's power, she's virtually unstoppable if she would use 'em right. She has more capabilities than she realizes."

"Like what?"

"Well, fer instance, she can track specific souls. So, if she could figure that out, she could find us like," he snaps, "that. Heat signatures, too, so nobody can ever sneak up on her."

I nod, appreciative. "I'd sure like to have those powers."

He grunts. "Gotta jump again."

I groan. 'Jumping' is when he folds himself into nothing to zip near Elicia. But I let him grab my wrist and twist my stomach into nothing, appearing behind a pillar big enough for both of us. Icy's voice floats towards us.

"...have to find Uma and Ares. They might have *some* way to get Sera and Arson back."

"How are you going to convince them to do that? Ares obviously doesn't care about his kids!" Carlos says.

"I don't know. But I have to try, Carlos." Stupid girl sounds close to tears. How pathetic.

"Let me come with you! Maybe I can help!"

"No, I---"

"Why *did* you sacrifice your kids to get away?" I whisper.

Ares glances at me sideways. "Well, fer one, I never wanted kids. I thought I could turn 'em into my personal bodyguards or somethin', but my boy's too stupid. And my girl's too snappish. Won't follow orders. Now shut up, or the girl'll hear us."

I glare at him. "She's ten feet away and we're not exactly quiet. I don't think she'll notice if she hasn't by now."

He rolls his eyes and gestures back to Carlos and Elicia.

"Carlos, seriously, I'm not letting anybody come. I need to find Uma. And Ares. They're the only ones who might know what's wrong with Sera and Arson."

"I get that Ellie, but... What if they get *you* instead?"

I watch her take a deep breath and hold her hand up. Her palm flickers for a moment the blazes with blue flames and bright white sparks. "They won't." she promises her stupid boyfriend. I see him hug her and then walk away slightly hunched. Then Elicia sighs and turns to our hiding spot, her hands on her hips.

"Okay. You can come out now. I know you're there, *Shrimp*."

~Back to Ellie's view~

I'd heard them talking while I was arguing with Carlos. I have no idea why they're following me, but I'm glad I don't have to go find them.

They appear from behind the pillar. I can't believe the honestly thought I wouldn't hear or see them. I keep my hands on my hips as I glare at them. Uma looks slightly angry, while Ares is just grinning.

"Can't imagine why you felt the need to become my personal stalkers." I drawl.

Ares chuckles. "Well, ya see, we felt the need to get back at the little prick in our sides that ruined Auradon's takeover."

"I didn't ruin anything," I say sweetly. "I just recruited some guys

who did."

"oh please." Uma rolls her eyes. "Ares, just get on with it. I can't stand when this girl opens her mouth."

"Aw, then I'm doing it right!" I say.

"Oh, shut *up!* Ares??" Uma demands.

I glance over at Ares, but he's not there anymore. I hear a tiny *pop* behind me and spin around, twisting my body in a way I probably shouldn't be able to in order to avoid Ares' grabbing hands. He growls and reaches with his meaty paws again, but I throw both hands out and a burst of frost streaks off and at his feet, sticking him to the floor.

I whirl around to catch Uma's wrist as she tries to punch the back of my neck. I tighten my grip and crust her wrist in spiky icicles. She yelps and jerks her hand back, her free hand jumping up to her neck, her eyes filled with hatred as her seashell necklace starts to glow.

"Nuh-uh!" I yell, lunging for her necklace before she does her freaky octopus transformation again. Not that it'd do her much good here, since we're in the middle of a corridor.

But someone grabs me around my waist and jerks me back. I let out an involuntary yell and dig my hands into Ares' meaty arms. I twist around, getting my hair stuck in my mouth as I try to get out of his sweaty grip.

(How is it that in movies, when girls fight, they always still have amazing hair? It's not realistic.)

I hear footsteps coming our way. "Ares, hurry up!" Uma dashes across the room and knocks down a heavy marble statue in front of the door. Someone starts banging on the other side, and Uma throws herself against it. "HURRY!"

"I'm tryin', but it ain't easy!" He spits back, squeezing me harder so that black spots dance in front of my vision. I dig my nails further into his skin and his grip loosens ever so much. I breathe as much in

I can and then when I breathe out, I expel my powers as well. A burst of blue fire and white snow explodes from me, blasting Uma and Ares backward, against the door and at Mal's feet. I land on the ground, having to throw my arms out to keep my balance. I blink the spots from my eyes.

"Well! Fancy seeing you two here." Mal says casually to Ares and Uma.

"ARES!" Uma yells, trying to get up but swaying so badly she topples again.

"GIMME A SEC!" He blindly waves his hands around until he catches Mal's ankle. She kicks at him but he pulls back fast, dragging her down. I start running for them, but he lets go and scrambles for Uma, catching her wrist and blinking away in a flash of red light.

"SERIOUSLY?" Mal yells, rubbing the back of her neck. I reach her and help her up.

"Don't sweat it." I tell her. "We'll get 'em back next time. I just can't believe I forgot to make sure Ares was out of it instead of just stuck."

She waves me away. "Ellie, what the heck were you doing? Why were they here?"

"I don't know. They were following me. I was *going* to go look for them. make them tell me what I can do for Sera..." I feel my face flush red as I admit it. It sounds ridiculous now. Based on my fight just now, there's no way I would have been able to do anything, anyway.

"Sera? Oh!" Mal brightens. "I forgot! That's what I came here for!"

I feel my back straighten like I've been shocked. "What about her? Is she awake?"

Mal clears her throat. "Not Sera. Arson. He woke up about ten minutes ago. He's asking for you."

---

hey, so I haven't updated in a while.... BUT. I hope you guys liked my new (most likely failed) attempt at Uma's point of view!

Also! I watched a video that said the new name of Descendants 3. Guess what it is! guess!

THE BIG SLEEP.

It's from a channel called The Things, and I don't know if its ACTUALLY the new title... but wouldn't it be cool? It also had some theories that MOR'DU is Mal's dad... NOT Hades. Wouldn't that be fun!??!

(Also, it would solve my Ellie's-Dad-is-also-Hades-problem...)

Also, I went to Boston a few weeks ago, and I have some things I'd like to address.

ONE: Leo Martin, National Monument of our Forefathers. AMAZING session, and a great tourgiude! Leo Martin and his wife Nancy run a fully-by-themselves business called Jenney Museum, where they tell the TRUTH about how our country came to be. They have a book, too, can't remember what it's called. But look them up! They're an sweet couple, and it was my favorite part of my trip.

Ok. I'm done now. Hope you guys enjoyed this chapter, sorry that they're coming slow now, (I'm required to do this stupid online class for summer school to fill my actual school schedule for better subjects. It's really boring and takes up a LOT of time.)

OK. Bye!

NOT AN UPDATE

As you could most likely tell by the title, THIS IS NOT AN UPDATE. Feel free to skip this one if you want, but it does have some interesting things I'm gonna mention.

So, as I've been writing Ellie, I've been coming across funny moments, mess-ups, and I'VE personally just had a lot of fun with Ellie.

So, starting tomorrow... I'm going to make a book (bear with me) about everything Ellie.

Like, I'll show you guys what storylines COULD have happened before I changed them...

Some things I came up with then decided was stupid...

And fun facts about Ellie!

Ok, so I didn't do a good job of describing. BUT! I'm going to have fun with it. It's going to be called Elicia's Mix-ups and Fun Facts. I'm posting it TOMORROW, so don't bother looking it up now. However, if the person reading this is one that came late, AFTER I've already started EMUFF (jeez, I need a better short version...) Then by all means, go look!

Ok. Bye!

Arson's Tale

All the breath gets knocked out of me. "He's awake? But it hasn't even been a day!" I say.

Mal nods. "I know. It's got everybody confused, but he won't say anything except "Talk to Icy." We even got Brit in there, that made him real happy, but he still wouldn't answer any questions."

"Why me?"

"Well, how would I know?" Mal smirks. "C'mon." She grabs my wrist and starts running, dragging me along behind her. We get to the hospital to find it in chaos.

"GET A MONITOR!"

"NO, GET HIM SOME FOOD!"

"HE'S ONLY BEEN OUT FOR A FEW HOURS!"

I tap a doctor on the shoulder. "Um, can we see him?"

"No, no, he's not taking visitors." The doctor says without looking up.

"He'll take me." I say firmly. The doctor looks up and jumps.

"OH! You! Er, yes, right this way!" He sitters away from me, glancing where I tapped him like he expects a few icicles to be jutting out. Mal and I exchange a glance and shrug, following him to Arson's room. I see Sera in the room next to him, sound asleep. I look away and go in. Arson's up in bed, his eyes open wide and wild. He sees me and his eyes seem to pop open.

"Icy!" he tries ti get out of bed but thick black bands hold him back. He looks down at them in confusion.

I run over. "Hi." I wrestle with the bands for a moment before

getting them off his wrists. He grins and hugs me tight. When he backs up again, his grin seems tight.

"Sera?"

I shake my head. "She's still out of it. Why'd you want to see me?"

His brow furrows up. "Sera 'splains better."

"Explains what?"

"Why we sleeped." Arson looks up at me.

"Why you went into the coma? I just thought it was that Ares used you guys as an escape route."

"No. *Why* we sleeped. Why dad did..." He stutters for a second. "Why dad did it."

"To get away?" I guessed.

"No. Get *you*." Arson points at me. Specifically at my heart.

"What?"

"Ice. Snow. Icy."

"My powers?"

"He wants."

"He wants my *powers?*" I yell. Arson nods grimly.

"He got in my head. When he---" Arson mimics how Ares had been holding him in the chokehold. "I saw him."

"Why would he want my powers?" I ask.

"I can answer that." My mom comes into the room, nibbling on her lip. "Because of me."

Ok, so this was REALLY short.... But I thought I should probably update while I had time. My week has been hectic. I have summer school finals in like three days, and I'm super nervous.

So, hope you guys enjoyed what little bit I was able to get out!

Also... mwahahaha. I still got my evil-cliff-hangy-ness.

As always, comment and enjoy!

(I just realized... If I want people to comment and enjoy, I should say that at the BEGINNING.... whoops!)

I Had To Ask

"What do you mean, it's because of you?!" I demand. Arson grabs hold of my wrist to keep me from jumping up, so I relax and breathe as evenly as I can. "What do you mean, it was because of you?" I repeat.

Mom keeps nibbling on her lip. "Well, I'm assuming you know how I met your father."

"Yeah. You were the early version of Ben wanting to bring Isle kids here."

"In a way. Yes." Mom sighs but doesn't continue.

"Oh, no. Don't tell me..." I groan and run my hand down my face. "*Please* tell me Ares didn't like you."

Mom looks a little offended that she didn't get to break the news, but she nods. "Yes. He, well, made that quite clear. But I---"

"Rejected him?" I snort. "Nice."

"Oh, quiet! Yes, I said no. Your father was much nicer." She says, looking slightly angry.

"Sorry." I laugh again. "Okay, go on."

"Well, a few years after your father and I left the Isle, I heard rumors that Ares had had two children and was planning on using them to get back at me. So I talked to Fairy Godmother and she checked, and sure enough---"

"Arson and Sera." I say.

Mom nods. "But they rumors about using them to get back at me obviously weren't true."

"Why not?"

"Well, for one, Arson was... Sorry." She glances at him. "Disabled. Ares was furious."

Arson grins. "Making Dad mad make me happy!"

I smile too and reach over to pat his arm. "What about Sera?"

"Well, she was a strange little toddler. She started walking when she was a few months old and glared at everybody, demanding----"

"For toys. And food!" Arson breaks in. He scrunches his face up and pretends to glare at us.

Mom gives a small smile. "Yes. That. But then when I went there to see if I could get Ares to come to Auradon, give a better life to his kids, he said no. He yelled at me for at least half an hour before I could get a word in."

"He yells lots." Arson says.

"Why didn't you just leave?" I ask.

"Well, I felt bad for his kids. But what he said near the end is what shook me. He said the only reason he'd ever liked me was because he wanted my power in his children."

"Weird." I interrupt. She glares and I shrug. "Continue."

"So he swore he'd get my powers someday. When I asked why, he said---"

"Power in the wrong people makes it weak. Power in the right people is power." Arson says in a small voice. That might be the longest sentence I've ever heard him say.

"Well, he swore he'd get them someday." Mom says. "And it looks like he just tried to."

I feel my eyes open wide. "Seriously? That was him trying to get my powers? *That's* why Uma and him were stalking me?"

Mom nods and I groan. "Great. Because I really needed another

stressful thing in my life."

"Oh, hush. It's not like he actually took them. Did he?"

I hold both my hands up and test my ice powers in one and my death powers in the other. "No, I've still got both." I extinguish both of them by closing my hands.

"Did he say he wanted your father's powers too?" Mom asked.

"Well, we didn't exactly strike up a conversation, Mom." I say. Arson laughs as she glares.

"I didn't mean---Oh, never mind. I'm glad you're awake, Arson." She turns and leaves.

I look over at Ar. "Well, that was dramatic. For her, at least. She normally tries to solve problems first."

He nods. "My mom did too."

I smile. He's actually talking! Not in short little words, in actual sentences!

"You remember your mom?"

He nods vigorously. "She nice. She soft. Not like dad."

Well, it was a start.

"Do you know who she was?"

He shakes his head. "Not know from which story."

"You don't know which story she's from, do you?"

"Nope!"

"That's okay. I'm going to go check on Sera, okay?"

He nods sadly. "Bring back!"

"Bring back her, or news?"

He puts up two fingers and I laugh. "I'll see what's going on. Bye." I slip out of the room and walk down the hall to Sera's room. The doctors let me in and I sit next to her in a chair, rubbing her cold wrist to try and pump a better pulse back in.

It's eery to watch her eyes stare at the ceiling, glassed over and unblinking. I reach over and close them gently.

"Sera, you have to wake up soon. You're supposed to help me track down you jerk of a dad. Arson's up already. He really misses you. So does Brit. And everybody else. Well, not Maira I guess."

I sigh.

"I'm going to get you back. I'm not waiting. But I'm not going to be stupid. I'll be careful this time. I'm not going to go after Ares. I'm going to go to Camelot. Maybe they know something that can fix you. That's not leeches."

I shudder. I'd had them try that on me once. Luckily I'd gotten better the day before I was scheduled to try it.

I let go of her hand and stand up, crossing the room to open the door. But a foot away, my hand stretching out to open it, it flies open on its own.

I jump back in surprise, only to bang against Sera's bed. I stare in surprise at the alarming amount of crumpled bodies of doctors in the hallway, and my mother's body as well. I can see their chests rising and falling, so they're just unconscious. I step forward a bit to go out, but decide better. The door opened by itself... and great, this is probably a trap.

"Can't I have one relaxing moment?" I mutter. I step forward and peer out of the door, swiveling my head both ways. All I see is a bunch of knocked out doctors.

I step out of the doorway, my hands alight with blue flames and white snowflakes. I walk over to my mother and examine her, finding a bruise on the back of her head.

"Who did this, Mom?" I mutter. I stand up again and start searching

the hospital, finding more and more doctors and nurses and patients.

"Why would someone go to all this trouble...?" I wonder aloud.

"For this!" I hear, then someone's meaty arm is wrapped around my neck, and Uma's in front of me, wrestling a pair of those cursed gloves on my hands. I flail around, but my air is being cut off and I can't breathe and the world is going dark and...

And I can suddenly breathe again.

I cough and roll over on the ground, vaguely wondering how I got there when a minute ago I know I was being choked. I feel something wet on my face and I look up to find Carlos and Dude standing above me, Dude licking my nose and Carlos glaring at Ares and Uma.

"DANG IT, BOY!" Ares says, stomping his foot like a toddler. "YOU HAD TUH COME NOW?!?"

Carlos reaches a hand down. I take it and he pulls me up. Dude stops licking me and sits down, his tail wagging.

"Oh, look, it's seafood girl again!" he says. "Is it because you never brush you teeth, or do you just smell that way?"

"I'm going to cook that dog someday." Uma grumbles.

"Like heck." I say, letting go of Carlos to try and light both my hands up. Nothing happens. Stupid gloves.

"Are you okay?" Carlos asks, not taking his eyes off Ares.

"Yeah, thanks." I say, looking away for just a second to peck him on the cheek. He goes red and starts smiling like an idiot.

"Ugh, gross." Uma mutters. "Ares, just get it *over* with!"

"I need to be in contact!"

"Nice to know." Dude says. "Ellie, RUN!" He leaps forward and sinks

his little teeth into Ares' leg. Ares howls and starts hopping on one foot, shaking his leg around.

Carlos grabs my forearm and starts running, dragging me along. I put out my powers so I can match his pace. I hear Dude let go and start spitting, yelling "OH MAN! THAT WAS SO GROSS!! BLEH! BLEH!!! BLEH!!! GUY, TAKE A BATH!"

I can't help it and I laugh. Carlos laughs with me, and Dude joins us, running with his ears flying and his tongue hanging out of his mouth.

"YOU OWE ME MOUTHWASH!"

"Yes, Dude." I say. We keep running until we're almost to the doors, then a flash of red light blinds us and my hand flies up to my eyes to shield from the glare, and someone has my wrist. I try to use my powers, but those stupid gloves send heat flaring up my arm.

Ares grips harder and closes his eyes. Blue and black starts glowing in my veins, running up and down my skin, sucking like a vacuum towards Ares. I jerk back, trying to swat him away, anything, but nothing I do does anything until I rake my fingers down his face. The gloves protect him a bit, but he still yelps and stumbles backward.

He pushes me away, and I fall backward, landing hard on my back.

"Ow." I squeak. Carlos helps me up, but even then I can see it's too late. Blue is flowing from me, dancing towards Ares, who stands grinning with his arms spread out.

"NO!" I shriek, trying to get close to him, but a blue dome is surrounding him.

"Too late, *Ice Queen!"* Ares taunts, laughing.

And then his eyes are filled with terror.

"GET DOWN!" Carlos yells, his hand appearing on top of my head and pushing me down so hard my chin slams into the white tile.

And then then the room explodes in a supernova and blue and white.

_____

Hope you enjoyed!

Next chapter will be... full of surprises, gonna tell you that. Mwahahaha. Ha. HA!

Ok. Enjoy!

The Deadly (And Icy) Powers

"How are we going to tell her?"

"What DO we tell her?"

"She'll figure it out on her own soon enough."

"Ellie?" A familiar voice cuts through the fog in my brain.

"Hi, mama." I mutter under my breath. She laughs in relief.

"Well, at least you remember. No brain damage."

"Why would I have brain damage?" I ask, finding it very funny. I start giggling. "That's stupid. I just got my powers taken away. No big deal."

Mom looks uneasy. "Er, what numbing did you give her?"

"Just some laughing gas."

"Oh. That wasn't the best option. It makes her loopy. We had her try to stab herself with a fork because she thought it'd be funny the first time she had laughing gas."

"Stab myself... HA!" I crack up.

A doctor comes over and gives me a shot. The floaty, bubbly feeling I hadn't even noticed I'd had starts to seep out of me. After a few minutes, I stare at my mom.

"My powers..."

She ducks her head silently.

I put both my hands up and try to summon the cold relief I've known for as long as I can remember.

All I feel is a dead weight in my chest.

"What happened? Does Ares have my powers? Why'd they explode?"

She raises a hand to stop my babbling. "Ares and Uma are in a magic-free prison. And we checked, Ares can't use the funnel flame thing to escape again. He only had Sera and Arson, and with how weak they both are now, he'd only be able to jump a few feet."

"Does he have---"

"No. He doesn't have your powers, Ellie."

"How?"

"Because they rejected him," Dad says, ducking into the room.

I snort. "Rejected him?"

"Ares is a warrior. He didn't do his homework. Much like how your mother gave you her powers, he tried to take yours. But my powers---and your mom's---only work for the people *close* to the original host. Ares is nowhere near your friend or family, so it rejected his body."

I grin. "Nice." Then it dawns on me. "Where'd they go, then?"

Dad shrugs. "We don't know yet. We can't find them."

"They *have* to have a host, though, or they'll dissipate." Mom says. "But that could take a few days, so we're good for now."

"What about Carlos and Dude? Are they okay?" I ask.

"Dude is running around, complaining how cold he is from the, quote, "stupid deathball explosion", but he's fine. Carlos is in the next room. He's still asleep."

My heart swoops in my chest. "Asleep, like, unconscious like knocked out, or coma like Sera?"

"Not in a coma." Dad says. "Regrettably."

"Dad!"

"What?"

"He saved my life back there! Twice!"

"Oh, points for that. But I still don't like him!"

"Oh, for heaven's sake." Mom huffs. "Hades, stop it! She's seventeen!"

"So?"

"Can I go see him?" I ask my mom, already getting up. The room sways a bit but steadies after a few seconds. I walk out of the room and down the hall, running my fingers through my hair to get it out of the ridiculous bun it'd been put up in. At least I'm not wearing a hospital gown. I'm still in jeans and a T-shirt, but my jacket has mysteriously disappeared.

I open Carlos' door softly and see him lying in a hospital bed, fast asleep. Dude is next to him, licking his cheek. He sees me and his butt starts wagging with his tail.

"ELLIE!" he hops off the bed and bounds over to me, jumping into my arms and licking my face enthusiastically.

"Hi, Dude." I laugh, setting him down. He trots back over to Carlos and waits for me to pull a stool next to him. "How've you been doing? Do you remember what happened?"

"Well, my buddy here conked out before you did, you were awake but weirdly slurry or something when the doctors started waking up and found us. I tried licking him. No go."

"I don't need details. Did you see where my powers went?"

"Your powers? No, I went kinda blind for a sec after that big boom-boom."

I sigh. "Well, maybe Carlos will know."

"I'll try licking him again!"

"Dude, no, stop!" I yell, but it's too late. His slobbery tongue darts in and out as he resumes the licking of his master. Carlos' nose scrunches up and Dude backs away, wagging his tail expectantly.

Carlos groans and a hand jumps to his head. "Ow...."

I tap his forehead with my finger. "You okay?"

He waves me off without opening his eyes. "Just peachy. Can I die now?"

"Ha, ha. It's a headache, you big baby." I say, leaning over and kissing his forehead before getting up and grabbing a few pills labeled "pain meds" and a cup of water. I check with a doctor and he says it's all right to give him some, so I head back in and hand him the cup.

"Thanks." he says, downing the pills and water. He shudders and sticks his tongue out. "Ugh. What is that *taste?* Tastes like the Isle food. Like garbage and dead stuff."

I laugh. "Shush. You're fine." I grab the water and put it away from him. "Do you remember what happened?"

"Yeah. Ares took your powers, and everything exploded." Carlos looks up solemnly. "Oh. Ares took your powers."

"Funnily enough, he didn't. Nobody knows where they floated off to. But Ares' body rejected them. Or, they rejected him. Something like that."

Carlos laughs. "Nice. So, wait, nobody knows what happened to them?"

"Nope. We still have a couple days before the go poof and disappear, though, so I'm good."

He gives me a *you-sad-little-thing* look. "No, you're not."

I sigh. "No I'm not."

He smiles. "Don't worry. Things always have a way of working out. Remember the Isle?"

I snort. "Yeah, I was a popsicle."

"Ellsicle!"

"Oh, shut up."

We both laugh and a doctor comes in. "Ah, you're awake, Mr. De Vil!"

Carlos winces. "Uh, just Carlos."

"Yes, yes... I wish to take a few tests. May I?"

"Uh... sure?" Carlos says. I move out of the way while the doctor runs around doing whatever it is doctors do, and then he nods and walks out of the room. He beckons for me to follow him, so I wave goodbye to Carlos and follow.

"Miss... We found traces of your DNA in Mr. De Vil."

A snort escapes me. "Uh, what?"

He shows me his screen on the tablet and explains a bunch of science stuff that makes no sense to me. Then I hear Dude in the next room, talking about how dusty it is in the room. I leave the doctor and go back in just in time to watch Dude give an epic "AH-CHOO!" and shoots backward off the bed, barreling into my arms. I hold him upside down as he grins at me, his tongue lolling out of his mouth.

"Uh.... Ellie?" I look up at Carlos, who has a giant snowball stuck to his forehead.

"What the...?" I mutter, setting Dude down. He sneezes again and another snowball comes flying out of his nose, smacking against my leg. I swat it away before my pant leg can get too wet, and I pick Dude up again.

"Dude, what do you feel right now?" I demand. I have to know...

have to make sure...

"Uhhhhh, kinda cold. Like, really cold. Aaaaand... like I just drank a bunch of freezing water and I can feel it in my nose."

I set him back down. "Hold your paw out and think of something that makes you angry."

He sits back on his legs and holds a paw out, babbling something about Chad when his paw glows blue and an icicle shoots out and sticks into the ceiling. Before it can wear off, I grab Dude's muzzle and look closely at his eyes.

They're glowing blue.

I let go of Dude and step back, stumbling against the edge of Carlos' bed. Dude stands up again and looks up at the icicle. "How'd I do that? And what's with the snoseballs?"

"Snoseballs?"

"Snowballs from my nose."

I shake my head. "Okay, we are not calling them that. And... I think you got my powers."

Dude stops wagging his tail. "What? No! I'm sorry! How do I give them back?"

"I don't think you can." Carlos says, appearing next to me. "Did he get your dad's powers too?"

"I don't know." I say. "Dude, do you just feel cold, or is there this weird heavy feeling?"

"Actually, I've got this weird heavy feeling...." Carlos stops, staring at me. "Oh, no."

"Carlos, put your hand out like this," I put both my hands out, palms up, and he mimics me. "Now this is going to sound weird. But basically, reach inside you and pull out that heavy feeling, and channel it into your hands."

He gives me a *this-is-so-stupid* look but does as I say. I hold my breath, hoping against hope that I'm wrong. For a few minutes, nothing happens...

And then a tiny blue flame flickers to life on Carlos' right palm.

He yelps and stumbles backward, shaking his hand up and down to put it out. My heart sinks to my feet.

"You got my dad's powers."

Then something occurs to me.

"Oh, he's going to *hate* that."

_____

Hope you guys enjoyed this newest chapter!

Credit to BeautyBeastRose for the "snoesballs" word!

I just saw Ant-Man and the Wasp, and I'm dying inside. I HATE CLIFFHANGERS! (When I'm watching them. I love writing them, as you all know.)

MAKE MARVEL MOVIES FASTER! YOU CAN'T LEAVE ME AFTER___,____,___ HAPPENED AND YOU WONT TELL US WHAT'S GOING TO HAPPEN TO _____!!!!!

I hate not being able to spoil.

I also just saw Incredibles 2, and it was SO worth the 14-year wait. EEK! Never would have suspected_____as the villain!!!!!

(I'm not a spoiler. Tho I REALLY REALLY WANT TO!!!!)

Also---ALERT! I will not be on for the next week, so no updates for a week. I'm going to summer camp. Wish I could update there, but I can't. Sorry!

Okay. Enjoy!

Also, who else has seen the video release of Uma (China A.M.)

getting a cast of her face? Hmmmm?

Aunt Anna's Book Really Kills

"You have WHAT??!?!" My dad explodes.

Carlos shrinks back until I nudge him. "Um, I have the death part of Ellie's powers."

Dad's right eye is twitching dangerously.

"Um, Dad, remember that he didn't do it on purpose." I say nervously. Mom's smiling behind him, her arm hooked through his to hold him back.

"Oh, I'm not worried about *that*." Dad hisses through his teeth, his twitchy eye saying otherwise. "I'm mad because MY powers chose HIM for a host! And they're not supposed to go to anyone you're not close to!"

"He's my boyfriend, Dad."

"So?"

"Uh, Ellie?" Carlos interrupts. "Look."

He points to show almost all of my friends (and Maira) stomping towards us, looking very unhappy. Ben in the lead. Carlos looks ready to dive behind me to try and hide.

"WHAT THE HECK HAPPENED??" Mal yells, getting there first. "Your mom shows up with Ares and Uma in tow, saying something about you being in the hospital, and nobody will say anything, and why are you so freaking *red*?"

"What?" I ask, looking down at my arms. They look fine to me.

"Uh, I was going to tell you later." Carlos mutters, scratching his neck. "You kinda look sunburned on your face and neck."

"It'll be the absence of my powers." Mom says. "I looked like that for

a few weeks after I accidentally gave mine to you. Though I must say, your nose is much more impressive than mine."

"MOM!"

"What?"

"Wait, what do you mean, *the absence of her powers?* You don't have them?" Evie asks.

I shake my head. "Nope. When Ares tried to take them, they backfired and zapped Dude and Carlos, instead. Dude has---"

"AH-CHOO!" Cue the snowball.

"Dude has my ice powers. And Carlos has my death powers." I say, continuing on.

"I have snoseballs!" Dude says happily, wagging his tail and sneezing again, hitting Maira's sneaker.

"Gross!" Maira says, shaking her shoe until it flops off and starts melting on the sidewalk. Jay looks like he wants to laugh but has the decency not to.

Ben shakes his head like he's clearing it. "Wait, Carlos and Dude have your powers?"

"Yeah. I'll figure out some way to get them back later. Right now I think Dude is having too much fun."

"AH-CHOO!!"

"See?"

"Uh, I don't think waiting is an option, Ellie." Ben says.

"Why?" Carlos saks before I can.

"Because these two weren't made for your powers. You've lived most of your life with them. Like the death one. You're used to it, and your dad had it before you, so you were kinda made for it, so it

doesn't hurt you. But..." Ben stops.

"What?" He doesn't continue. "What, Ben?" I demand.

"But Carlos has never had powers. They're death-y, right? So... they might be killing him. And Dude. That might be why he's sneezing."

"AH-CHOO!"

"Um, just saying right now, I feel fine." Carlos volunteers.

"Of course you are. You just got them." Ben scratches the back of his neck. "Dude, do you feel kind of weak? Just barely?"

Dude stops wagging his tail and sits. "Um, kinda. Why?"

"Well, Ellie, remember that book you remembered when you found out about your curse?" Ben asks.

"Yeah."

"Well, I read through it. The *whole* thing."

"And....?"

Ben sighs. "Come with me. Just you three." He points to Carlos, Dude, and I.

"Uh, okay?" Dude says, trotting alongside us as we follow Ben. Mal looks very unsatisfied with our answers, as does Arson and Brit, but they all let us leave. Ben leads us back to his office and spends five straight minutes flipping around the book, folding corners down to mark his places.

"So... Ben?" I ask.

He looks up. "I'm almost done. It's kind of hard to explain, so I thought I'd just let you guys read it."

"I'm a dog!" Dude so wisely points out. "I can't read!"

"Then Ellie and Carlos will tell you." Ben says. He hands us the book and points out at least ten bookmarks. I take the book and flip

through it, scanning the pages he points out until I sigh and lean back in my chair.

"Great. Now we have to go on *another* mad dash to find some way to stop this." I groan.

Carlos takes the book and reads through it. "You've got to be kidding me."

"WHAT?" Dude asks.

Carlos taps the page he's on. "I'm going to shrivel into nothing if I don't get this out of me. It's not meant for me, and not for you either, so if we don't get it to someone who can control it, it's going to kill us."

"Oh, perfect! And I had a pedicure next week!"

All of us stare.

"What?"

Ben sighs. "Well, actually, this time, we might not *have* to go on a wild search."

"Why?"

"Because... I have a sort-of-solution... but you're not going to like it."

"Why? What is it?" I ask. I glance sideways at Carlos, who is now examining his arm, probably looking for the black veins mentioned in Chapter 3, Darkness and Death.

Ben watches him for a second until Carlos realizes we're watching him. He stops looking at his arm and flushes red.

Ben shakes his head as if to clear it. "Well, you know how our museum has a bunch of artifacts?"

"Yeah. Why, would one of them work? Oh, are you talking about that temporary thing Jane did with Ellie?" Carlos asks.

"What?"

"Oh, right, you weren't there for that." Carlos looks embarrassed. "Sorry."

"Yeah, I was being held captive here." Ben mutters, rubbing under his eye where he still has a brilliant purple bruise.

"Sorry."

Ben shakes his head again. "No, I'm getting off track. Not the wand. Temporary isn't a full fix. No, this one actually wouldn't *fix* it, but it'd *give* us a way if we asked right."

"*What?*" Carlos, Dude, and I yell.

"Evie's mirror."

Hi! I'm back from camp! Hooray!

(Duh.)

Anyway, hope everyone liked this chapter!

Comment and bask in the cliff-hangy-ness of this story!

(Also, for the peeps who are going to be all "Oh, another power-curse-thing, so unoriginal, blah blaaaaaahhhh..." Don't. I work hard on these, and I have a bunch planned to get these out. It still includes Ellie's choices, but it will NOT mirror Ellie's curse.

Okay. Have fun reading!

Magic Mirror On The Wall, You're The Dumbest Of Them All

[image]

"Evie's magic mirror? You mean the one her mom gave her? How would *that* help?" I ask.

"If we ask it right, it can tell us how to get a cure." Ben says.

"But it only shows *where* things are, not what to do." Carlos says. "It only answers specific questions at its original size."

"So, we get Mal to make it grow back." I suggest.

"That might work." Carlos admits. "But who would ask it? Evil Queen was the only person. I'm not sure if it would even answer Evie at full size."

"We'll just have to try. Come on." I grab his hand and pull him up. "You coming, Ben?"

"Yeah. I'll come." he gets up and follows us out, Dude walking dejectedly behind us. We walk down the halls as I think about our strange problem of running into problems.

Was this how Carlos felt when I told him I was dying? Right now I'm feeling a bit desperate, and ready to literally murder anybody if it means saving him.

(Well, not *anybody*. But you get the idea.)

And Dude! He's just a tiny fuzzball! How old is he, anyway?

"Mal!" Ben yells as he sees her in the hallway. "Can you make things grow?"

"Um, yes?" She glances around at our group. "Why?"

"Come with us." Ben grabs her hand and explains along the way. "You think it'll work?"

"Well, we'd still have to go looking for whatever it tells us, but it sounds like it would work." Mal admits. "Just going to say, the mirror will have to be removed from the museum for it to work properly. I remember Evil Queen saying that it was picky it not be around other "fake" magical objects."

"Weird." I say.

"You have no idea." Mal laughs.

Ben opens up the museum and asks some workers to take Evie's mirror out. Very confused, they hand it over and we run out and set it on the concrete.

"Oh! It needs to be on a wall." Mal says. "I can't think of many things that rhyme with "concrete," can you?"

I grab it and lean it against the stone outside of the museum. It looks very tiny.

Mal bites her lip for a moment. "Um... Spells... Got it."

She raises her hands and green magic starts flowing. "Magic Mirror on the wall, grow past the size you are now---small."

"Really?" Carlos smiles.

"Hey, it was all I could think of!" Mal says.

"Look, it's working!" I yell, stepping between them.

Everyone watches as the tiny mirror fixes it's own cracks and starts wiggling around, growing in size and spookiness until it jumps of the ground and sticks to the wall. A white face appears in it and stares at us.

"*Who* are you?" It says in a snide voice.

"You're not supposed to ask the questions." Mal scolds.

"I only answer to the Evil Queen." He says.

"Go get Evie." I whisper to Dude. He nods and runs off.

"Again, *who* are you?" The mirror asks.

"Mal, daughter of Maleficent." Mal says.

"King Ben, Beast and Belle's son." Ben says.

"Carlos, son of Cruella De Vil." Carlos mutters.

"Ellie, daughter of Elsa and Hades." I sigh.

The mirror's eyes pop. Or, the black spots do. "WHAT? Daughter of Hades? So sorry, so sorry, your, um, Queenliness, I didn't recognize you."

Carlos elbows me. "Seems being daughter of death has some perks."

"No kidding." I mutter. "So I can ask you questions, and you'll answer?"

"No rhyming required for you, milady!" he squeaks.

"Oooh, bonus!" I say.

"Ask already." Mal complains. "E will get here soon, and do you really want her to find out her mirror doesn't work on just her?"

"Fine. Magic Mirror, how do you cure it when you accidentally give your powers to two of your best friends?"

"Elaborate."

So I do. I tell him what happened, who has what power, and what we read in the book.

"Pffft. Easy answer. The answer is you three. The cursed, and the curser."

"Elaborate." I drawl.

He turns pink, something I hadn't thought possible. "The powers were born inside you, your deathliness. Not in them. So, to get them out, you just need to have them *give them back to you.*"

"I'm sorry, that doesn't make any sense." I say.

"They need to use the powers more than they can handle." The stupid mirror says. "Let it overload their systems."

"Uh, so, basically, we need to kill ourselves like Ellie tried to do?" Carlos asks.

The mirror goes dead silent.

"Answer him." I say.

"RRRRRRGH." The mirror complains. "Yes. Kill yourselves for all I care. Not you, your blackness!"

"You can just call me Ellie. Seriously."

"Yes, Ellieness!"

"Oi." I groan.

"Hi guys!" Evie runs over with Dude. "Dude said---Oh." She sees the mirror. "Never mind. I'm guessing it worked for you, Ellie?"

"Yeah."

"Mom always said it used to work for Hades. I thought she was joking." Evie laughs.

"SHE WAS NOT!" The magic mirror sniffs. Then he disappears with a poof.

"So did we get what we needed?" Dude asks, wagging his tail.

I run my fingers through my hair. "Basically, you guys need to use my powers to their fullest." I say. "So.... Like a gigantic snowball for you, Dude, since you're so tiny any bigger things might really kill

you. And Carlos... trying killing something."

"WHAT?"

"Not a person!" I say quickly.

"ITS CALLED A SNOSEBALL!" Dude breaks in, still wagging his tail.

"Fine, Dude. And Carlos, I meant like a tree or something. Something big, though."

"Oh. Not much better. But okay." he says.

"SNOSEBALL!" Dude yells with finality.

First things first.

It's been brought to my attention that one of my most comment-y readers has a birthday tomorrow.

caratqueen17 , (hope I spelled right) happy early bday!

Everybody!

HAPPY BIRTHDAY TO UUUUUU, HAPPY BIRTHDAY TO UUUUUU, HAPPY BIRTHDAY TO UUUUU-UUUU, HAPPY BIRTHDAY TO U!!!!!!

:)

Anyway. Hope that isn't seen as weird.

Okay, on further news, who's seen Mal's new dress????

Link BELOW:

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=rxp_4v07qr0

Okay. I'm done. Hope you enjoyed this!

My Powers get Expelled

"Okay.... so I just have to kill something? Intentionally?"

"And I have to make a giant snoseball!"

I sigh. "Repeating it three thousand times doesn't make it any better, Dude."

He just wags his tail.

"Dude, seriously, it's not that hard." I tell him. "You just have to sneeze bigger than you normally do. I don't think it will even hurt for you."

He just wags his tail more.

"Dude, you do realize that it will ill you if you don't do this fast?"

Wag. Wag. Wag.

I wave my hand. "You're hopeless."

"Nope! I'm Dude!"

"Dude, can you focus for one minute?" Carlos asks.

"Nope!"

"Dude, this is serious!" I say. "Just make a snowball already!"

"But it doesn't come on purpose! Only when I---I---ACHOO!" A pitiful snowball plops onto the hot concrete and starts to melt.

I sigh and run my fingers through my hair. "This isn't working. You've already killed three trees, Carlos. And one very big garden."

"Belle's not going to be happy." Dude says.

"Oh, shut up." I snap. "I don't understand why this isn't working!

You said it hurt when you did it, right?"

"Yeah, I passed out for five minutes after the last one." Carlos mutters, rubbing the impressive bump on the back of his head.

"No luck yet?" Mal says, popping in behind us. Ben's standing next to her, along with Arson, Brit, Merida, and Maira.

"Course not, it's these three." Maria says.

"MAI!" Merida yells, whacking her on the back of her head.

"Ow! Mom!"

"Please shut up, annoying-girl-whose-name-I-don't-know." Brit says.

"That's Maira." I say.

"I can introduce myself fine, thanks." Maria snarls.

"Obviously not, because I didn't know your name." Brit says.

Merida's cheeks are pinched in her attempt not to smile.

Ben eyes the shriveled garden. "I'm not even going to ask."

"Probably smart." Carlos agrees.

I run my fingers through my hair again. "Any of you guys got any ideas? Not Maira."

She rolls her eyes. "Try using them on her, then we can get rid of all you three."

"Hey!"

"MAI!"

"Mom, I'm serious!" She turns back to us. "All kidding aside, have you tried using them *on* the old host?"

"No." Dude says.

"Wel, try it. No matter how much you use them on her, it won't hurt her. So, literally knock yourselves out."

I *really* want to glare at her...But she may be right. I sigh and turn to Carlos and Dude.

"She's right. You keep killing stuff, sure, but you're holding back. You can't." I say.

Carlos gives me a *I-can't-do-this-I-don't-want-to-hurt-you* look. Dude just wags his tail. I don't think he really gets what Maira's saying.

"Carlos. Seriously. As much as I hate it..." I glare at Maira. "She's right. You have to try and kill me."

"Okay, that might be the weirdest sentence you've ever said." Mal says.

I roll my eyes. "Oh, shut up."

"Mom, we might want to leave. Knowing this group, there'll be an explosion before it all ends." Maria says, looping her arm through her mom's and dragging her away. Brit, smiling nervously, waves and runs off after them.

"Traitors." I mutter. "We don't *always* explode everything!"

"Ehh, you kinda do." Mal says. "Just to be safe, we're going to leave too."

"We are?" Ben asks.

"Well, you do have a meeting in five minutes, anyway, so..."

"SHOOT!" Ben starts tearing down the lawn. Mal cracks up then chases after him, waving at us while she runs.

"As entertaining as *that* was..." I turn back to Carlos and Dude. "Come on. Carlos, you literally *have* to do this."

He crosses his arms. "No, I don't."

"Yes, you do. You'll die if you don't. And I will not die if you hit me with them."

"How do you know that?"

"Because they're my powers."

"Not right now, they're not."

"Hey!"

"What? I'm just saying, if you lost them, how do we know they won't hurt you if we use them on you?"

"You don't! But you have to try!"

"But what if we accidentally end up making them float away again and they go to somebody else instead and---"

"Oh my *gosh*, Carlos! When will you get it through your head that I don't care about my stupid powers! I don't want you to die!" I scream.

He goes dead silent. I let out a huff of frustration and tuck a chunk of hair behind my ear.

"Okay." I hear Carlos say. I look up and his face clearly shows how terrified he is, but there's also a spark of determination. "Okay." he repeats.

"If he can do it, I can do it too!" Dude chimes in.

I cross my arms behind my back and stand up straight. Carlos shakes his head like he can't believe what he's about to do and raises his hands.

"Oh, and Dude!" I break in before they start. "No snoseballs, please."

"Ah, man!!!"

Carlos laughs. Dude looks a little sad, but he stands up on his hind legs and starts barking, a huge snowstorm growing around him with

each bark. Carlos glances at him, looking scared again, but he still starts growing his own powers.

I almost laugh. "Are you trying to use Mist?"

He glances down at the blue/gray smoke rising from the tiny flame in his hands. "Maybe!"

Then Dude barks one last time and his snowstorm explodes. Carlos yelps and ducks to avoid the blue ice that streaks out in a circle from Dude, but I let it fly right into my heart. Like my Aunt Anna, it feels like a knife piercing me through, but I'm careful not to show it so Carlos won't stop. Dude's done. I can see his tiny body collapse on the ground and starts sneezing, probably the absence of my powers.

"You ready?" Carlos yells over the still-blowing remains of Dude's storm.

I nod.

Smoky gray tendrils erupt from Carlos' hands and hurt *way* more going in at the same place Dude's snow did. I can't stop a gasp from slipping out, and before I realize it I'm on the ground twitching uncontrollably. I don't remember screaming, but later Mal will tell me that you could hear it from the entire school grounds. I just remember looking over to where Carlos was standing and just seeing him on the ground, not shaking, but looking exactly the way Sera and Arson did.

And then I blacked out.

SO this chapter was kinda rushed for me... It was hard to write, because I didn't want to sound forced.... but it may have turned out that way anyways.

ANYway.

Hope you guys enjoyed the new chapter, please comment and enjoy!

Also: I'm sorry I'm updating kinda slow. I'm busy and don't get a lot of extra time. That's also why the chapters can get kinda short.

OH, also: Anyone seen all the fan theories about D3? AND HOW THEY'RE COMPLETELY DONE FILMING???

WhY make us wait a YEAR when you're already done filmmmmingg..... :(

Fan theories, tho: There is one set we see that shows an underground tunnel, sorta a mine, with a BEWARE OF DOG sign---that shows a THREE HEADED DOG. Cerberus! Maybe Mal and somebody will go to the underworld!

Maybe? Hmmmm?

Okay. I'm done. Bye!

Ellie's Year

(**Anyone who gets the title and the storyline, I love you. But I AM going to point out---any coincidence was made BEFORE I noticed the similarities. I titled it after realizing it matched the story. I AM NOT COPYING.**)

~A year later~

"I still can't believe I had to re-learn all my powers' powers." I groan, rubbing the ache in my side from using my powers for the last three hours.

Dad smirks. "Well, you wouldn't've had to if you didn't---"

"DAD! For the last time, I didn't give my powers to them on purpose!"

He gives me a *sure-dear-whatever-you-say* look.

"Ellie, remember, you have to focus." My mom reminds me.

"I *know*, Mom. I've had your powers my whole life. I know how to work them. I just need to get them right again." I say.

"Then try again." She says. "And please... don't freeze my flowers again."

My mother had already had to replace her garden five times until we wised up and moved to the courtyard of her castle, where everything was already frozen.

Ben had offered to let me practice at Auradon Prep, but I haven't been to Auradon Prep in almost a year because of how bad I was after I got my powers back. I'd been in extreme medical care for at least three weeks before I'd finally woken up to everyone freaking out because my heart had stopped right before I'd opened my eyes. I wasn't allowed to talk to anyone before they gave me a complete check-up and the swished me out of Auradon and brought me here

to "recover".

"I still don't see why I'm not allowed to go back yet." I grumble.

"We've told you, your body needs a chance to heal." Mom says.

"I'm *fine,* Mom! I could go back right now if I wanted to!" I say.

"No, you can't!" Dad snaps. "If it was my choice, you'd never see That Boy again!"

"His name is Carlos, and it wasn't his fault!"

"I don't care! You're never going to Auradon Prep again! He nearly killed you!"

"A coma is not the same as killing me." I say.

"I wasn't talking about that coma! I was talking about what happened in Aurad---" He goes dead silent.

"What?" I ask.

I can practically hear Mom's panic as she says, "Oh, nothing. Now, try and hit the target, please?"

"What, Dad?" I ask.

"Well..."

Mom puts a hand on his shoulder. "Maybe it's time we told her all that happened."

"*What* happened?" I demand.

Mom sighs. "I think it's best we go inside. It's a long story."

"Well, start off where you remember, Ellie." Mom says once we've all sat down in her living room on her squishy un-meltable snow cushioned couch with her Marshmallow's complementary hot chocolate recipe. I still have no idea how he makes this stuff.

"I remember Dude hitting me and it hurt, but it wasn't that bad until Carlos hit me and I remember seeing him on the ground. And then... waking up. Three weeks later." I say. "Now, *what happened* that was so bad that I had to stay away for a year?"

"Well..." Dad glances at Mom, who shakes her head so hard I'm surprised it doesn't fall off.

"Well..." He repeats.

"Spit it out!" I say. He gives me a look and I take a deep breath. "Sorry. But what happened and why is it so bad?"

"You had those two use their powers on you to get them out of themselves, right?" Dad asks.

"Yes."

"And Dude's worked fine?" Mom asked.

"Yeah. Please tell me I'm not going to hear this story as questions."

"No, you're not." Mom promises. "But when Carlos tried his on you, he took your and Maira's advice very seriously. He pushed as much of the powers out as he could. He must have really thought it wouldn't hurt you, or he didn't know just how much power he had."

"Yeah. Soooo?"

"Well, you want to know why we also never let you near a mirror while you were here?"

"Yeah, do you know how hard it is to tell if I have bed hair without a mirror?"

Mom sighs and gets up, leaving the room and returning a few minutes later with a sparkly silver hand mirror. "Just... Don't... Freak out." Mom says slowly.

I reach for it and hold it in front of my face warily.

"Pleasedon'tfreakout!" Mom says fast.

I don't freak outside. But inside, I think my heart may have stopped.

I reach a hand up to touch my skin. I'd thought it'd felt a little different, but nothing could have prepared me for the amount of scars on my face. I'd noticed a few small, not-very-noticeable ones on my stomach, but thought nothing of it. But there are deep lines, at least fifteen of them, crisscrossing all over my face.

But the worst part is my eyes. One of them looks fine, still bright blue, but the other's iris is filled with black.

"What happened?" I ask. I'd known that I had some scars, I could feel them on my skin, but I hadn't know it was this bad.

"My magic has some... unfortunate results." Dad says slowly. "I don't think he meant to do it to you... but my power literally kills, Liss. You're lucky you're still alive, actually. I felt you die three times in the hour after we found you, but you kept coming back."

"Probably my half of her powers." Mom says. "It keeps her safe, like when Maleficent came."

Dad glares at mom. "Eh???"

"Oh, right, you might not have heard of that. I forgot you mostly kept to your own little underground world. Well, Maleficent broke out of the Isle and froze everybody except Mal, Carlos, Jay, and Evie, and Ellie here somehow froze herself so she could move around."

Dad looks at me in awe. "You'll never cease to amaze me, Liss."

"Back to the more important thing right now?" I ask, waving a hand at my face. I'm not really that into beauty and things, but right now I sort of look like I got hit by acid or something. "Is there any way I can fix this?"

"Your eye, no. Your face, maybe." Dad says.

"Why not my eye?"

"Because that's That Boy's fault. He hit your eye accidentally and since it's your eye I can't pull the power out without damaging your vision."

"Pull the power out? Is that what would fix..." I wave a hand around the scars.

"It wouldn't get rid of them. But it would make them more shallow. And it might weaken my side of your powers."

"Might?"

"Well, there's a chance Elsa's powers would protect that from happening."

I swallow the lump in my throat. Part of me *really* wants to go outside and watch people scream at my face. But the rest of me doesn't want to walk around looking like this for the rest of my life.

Then a thought occurs to me. "Is that the only reason I'm not at Auradon Prep?"

Mom swallows visibly. "Er, no. Auradon Prep has asked you to stay away until you get your powers under control."

"What?" I ask, laughing. But they're dead serious. "They've never cared about my powers before." I say. "And that was before I got control over them."

"Yes, Liss, but you weren't in a coma before." Dad supplies.

"What difference does that make?"

"You caused quite a few explosions." Mom coughs. "As in, *quite* a few. Nobody was hurt, I promise, but they replaced half of the dorms and part of the museum."

"I did that? I saw it on the news." I say. "It was... big."

"Very big." Mom smiles.

"That was *me*?" I ask. "Why didn't they say that on TV?"

"Because your father spent an hour negotiating with Auradon Television."

Dad strokes his chin. "Well.... More like threatening."

My eyes pop wide. "I just now realized---People are okay with you being back? With mom?"

Dad coughs. "Well, most of them are still finding out. It *was* a secret until a few weeks ago when that heinous boy Nedwin told everyone."

I groan. "Of course he did."

"Well, at least they aren't showing up with pitchforks and torches," Mom mutters.

"They did that?" I ask.

"No. But there were crowds. Big crowds."

"Most of them are just embarrassed now." Dad says smugly. "I've been given at least a hundred "I'm sorry" cards in the past year."

I crack up. "That's awesome."

"Well, actually, 25 of them was That Boy begging you to come back." Dad says.

"WHAT!?" I leap up. "Dad! I haven't had any contact with anyone! AND HE SENT YOU 25 LETTERS!?"

"Liss! Sit down!" Dad snaps.

I sit down.

"Good. Now, I didn't give them to you because they had his phone number." Dad says.

I lunge up from my chair and sprint towards mom and dad's room. I hear Dad cursing himself behind me and a small poof. I whack myself on the forehead and stop running to snap my fingers. I

disappear with my own black poof and appear in his room. I turn around and find him right behind me already, holding what looks like 25 letters in his hands.

I cross my arms over my chest. "Dad."

"Liss."

I snap my fingers again and the letters disappear with a poof again and reappear in my hands. Dad sighs but does't stop me from snapping my fingers again and appearing in my room.

It'd taken a while to get used to be here again after being in a dorm for so long. This room is made entirely of icy blue material, most of it unmeetable ice, but squishy where I need it. I flop down on my bed and look for the letter with the date farthest from now so I can read them in order.

The first one is from the week after I first came here.

To H--- scratched out. *To Mr. H----* scratched out. I smile as I see he'd scratched out my dad's name multiple times until he finally settled with *Ellie's Dad.*

I'm really sorry. I don't know what happened. Can she please come back?

A week after this one.

I'm REALLY REALLY sorry! Can I at least talk to her? On the phone? My number is---- and he rattles off his number. I let go of the letter and grab my phone, dialing it into my contacts and calling him. It rings for a few seconds then someone picks up.

"Hello?" I hear.

"Carlos!" I yelp. "What happened to your voice?"

I'm not meaning to sound rude, but it sort of sounds like he has a needle in his throat, like it hurts to talk.

"Who is this?" Carlos asks, sounding annoyed now.

"It's Ellie!" I say, then immediately regret it when I hear the phone on his side hit the ground. I listen to him scramble to pick it up and hear him holding his breath as he asks, "Ellie?"

"Yeah!"

"Ellie!" Carlos whoops. "So, you're okay? Are you coming home? Oh, I'm so sorry, I never meant to hurt you, I was just----I mean---are you okay?"

I shake my head, smiling. "I'm fine, Carlos. I'm a little.... Uh.... well... let's just say there were some side effects. I think Dad can get rid of them, but yeah. I'm okay, I promise."

"Are you coming back to Auradon?"

I hear someone clear their throat and look up to see my dad. He shakes his head.

"Um... Not just yet. I want to get rid of the... side effect thing I mentioned."

"What did I do?" Carlos moans. "They wouldn't let me see you at all. Did I do something to you?"

"Um..." I look at Dad again. "You'll see. I'm coming back soon."

Dad looks furious, so I hang up and sit with my knees pressed together to stop them from shaking. I can't believe that was probably my one opportunity to talk to him, and we barely spoke for two minutes.

"So... Dad..." I clear my throat. "Can you..." I wave my hands around my face.

He sighs. "Yes, Liss, I can. But remember, it may not even work."

"I know. But I don't want to be freakazoid for the rest of my life." I say.

He smiles. "It won't hurt. I promise. But it might... tingle, sort of." He reaches a hand out and lays one finger against my forehead. I

almost flinch when I feel how freezing his skin is. I don't feel anything else for a couple seconds, and then a weird tugging sensation starts growing around the area where Dad's finger is. After maybe three more seconds, he backs away and looks me over. He smiles.

"Well, I was right about your eye. But you'll be happy with the scar results." He says. I grab the mirror I'd taken from the living room and look at where I used to have the deep lines. Now all that's there are some faint pink lines.

"I can't make those disappear. But they're mostly gone, at least."

I smile and stand up to hug him. "Thanks. Does this mean I can go back now?" I say.

"Ha! No." Dad says. "Nice try, though."

I pretend to pout and he laughs.

"When will I go back? I haven't seen Mal, or Evie, or Gil, or Carlos, or *anybody* in months." I say.

Dad sighs. "Tell you what. I'll give you three weeks to get your powers under *complete* control. If you can, I'll contact the board and convince---" he stops talking and clears his throat, the cough sounding remarkably like *threaten*--- "them to let you back." Dad says, smiling.

I throw my arms around him. "Thank you!"

Now I just have to solve one more little problem.

Getting my powers under control again. *Complete* control.

So…. I've noticed that a bunch of people I know in real life that read this are pronouncing Ellie's name wrong. I'm not saying you HAVE to pronounce it this way, you can pronounce it however you want, but I personally pronounce it EL---ISS---EE---UH. Not El-EESH--UH. Okay!

(Again, you guys can still pronounce however you want. This is just how Ellie is to me.)

Now, I hope everybody enjoyed this chapter!!! Anyone else FREAKING OUT that D3 is coming out in a year??? I CANNOT WAIT!!!!! I'm geeking out just thinking about it!!!!!

Okay, who has seen the trailer for Christopher Robin?? I've grown up with Pooh my whole life, so this movie had BETTER live up to the trailer, or else I'm going to get mad.

BUT POOH LOOKS SO ADORABLE!!!!! "People say nothing is impossible...but I do nothing every day." EEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEE!

Last thing: Someone pointed out to me that since I'm not following a script anymore, I'm basically rambling.... Am I? Comment if you think I am... Because if I am, I'll have to correct that.

Okay. Bye!

It's Still You And Me. All The Way.

That night I lay in bed letting all my happy, bubbly feelings drown me from reality. In less then three weeks, I could be seeing Mal, Evie, Jay, Carlos, Lonnie, Ben, Dizzy, Gil, Arson---And Sera! I completely forgot to ask if she was awake yet!

I roll over in bed, staring at the flickering blue flame that never goes out next to me bed. "Could she be awake?" I ask out loud, needing to hear it. She has to be. Brit said it could last UP TO a year. So... she has to be. Doesn't she?

I roll over again and stare at the ceiling. The flickering from the bedside fire makes the shadows jump all over the wall. I can't fight my grin as I think of all the people I haven't seen in more than a year. Is Dizzy still the best hair person? Does Mal still call her that? Are she and Ben still together? They probably are. What's going on with Uma and Ares? I hope they haven't escaped. Though they'd probably have come after me if they had.

And, feeling happier than I have in months, I find myself dreaming about everyone I'll see in just three weeks.

~Two weeks and six days later~

"DAD!" I yell, staring in pleasure at my creation. "Come here!"

"What? What?" he gripes, walking outside with a grumpy look on his face. But it disappears when he sees what I've made. "Wow."

I grin. "Soooo?"

He keeps staring at the life-like sculpture made almost entirely of ice of him and Mom. I based it off a picture I found of the two of

them when they were younger. He still had fiery hair then, so his hair part of the sculpture is on fire. In the picture (and the sculpture) Mom is laughing so hard she looks almost short on breath, while Dad is holding her close and looking at her like she's the only thing in the world.

He keeps staring. "Elsa!" he calls. "Come and see this!"

Mom comes out, wiping her hands with a dishcloth and stops abruptly when she sees it. "Did you make that, Ellie?"

I nod and hold up one fingers as the universal *wait* sign. I put a hand up, fisted closed, and open it up fast. A flurry of snowflakes burst upward and explode in a snowstorm. Soft white flakes start falling around the statue.

Even Dad gets a little teary-eyed.

"I wanted to say thanks." I tell them. "And apologize."

"For what?" They both say.

"Well, for mom, for everything I said or did after the garden party to now." I say. She gives me a sad smile and I know she's thinking back to when she freaked and kept telling me to talk to FG.

"And for dad, I wanted to say sorry for sort of being a brat since I met you. And for not trying harder to be your daughter and not just an acquaintance. Since I'm going back, I don't think you'll be coming, since it's a school... But I----"

The rest of my speech was cut off when they both hugged me simultaneously.

"You've got nothing to apologize for." Dad says. "I haven't exactly been a good Dad for your whole life."

"Yeah, that's another thing." Mom says. "I'm sorry for lying about your father."

"And I'm sorry for not being here." Dad says.

"This was supposed to be about me, you guys!" I laugh. But I hug them again anyway. I can't begin to even think about how much my life has changed since the first time Carlos, Jay, Evie, and Mal set foot on Auradon.

Even though I shouldn't be nervous, I feel butterflies swarming in my stomach as we draw closer to Auradon Prep. After we'd gone inside, I'd heard Dad yelling at the school board until they agreed to let me come back. Then he'd talked to Ben, and let Ben talk to me, and Ben sounded really happy that I was coming back. He told me that everyone was waiting patiently and that they'd be there when I went back. I'd laughed and told him to say hi.

And now, with my dad driving and my mom riding shotgun, and me in the back, part of me wishes I could turn the car around and go right back home.

Mom must sense my anxiety, because she reaches back and puts a hand on my knee. "Remember, Ellie, it'll just be your friends that know you're coming back. Nobody else knows."

"So Maira doesn't?" I ask.

Mom laughs. "No, actually, she's become part of your smaller group as well."

I stare at her. "Um, what? She *hates* me." I say.

Mom just shakes her head and brings her hand back to the front of the car. Dad looks at me in the mirror. "Liss, look out your window."

Part of me REALLY doesn't want to, but....

I poke my head into view of Auradon Prep.

And I see a white-and-black-haired someone pacing in front of the Beast statue (in Beast mode, Not Adam), looking like he's chewing on his nails.

"Lissa..." Dad starts.

"Dad!"

"Hades." Mom chides. She puts a hand on his shoulder. "We're leaving, right?"

"But---"

"*Right?*"

"But That Boy---"

Mom's hand pushes down on his shoulder and whatever he'd been saying disappears with a squeak. "Yes, dear."

I grin at mom. She winks back and takes her hand off his shoulder. Dad grumbles as I get out of the car, but they both still drive away after I grab my (very small) suitcase from the back. Carlos still hasn't noticed me, so I just start walking. I choose to carry my suitcase, and I walk as quietly as I can.

And I'm still about 20 yards away when he looks up.

And I stop walking.

All the color drains from his face.

But my face feels the opposite, like I've just set my eyebrows on fire again. (Long story.) I reach up nervously and tuck a lock of my white-sort-of-still-blue hair behind my ear.

He doesn't move. He still looks about the same as he was a year ago, a black-red-and-white leather outfit and freckles scattered all over his face.

"Hi." I say.

Some of his color comes back and he smiles. "Hi." He agrees.

I almost feel like something's pushing against my back, prodding me forward. So I keep walking, this time leaving my suitcase behind. Carlos starts walking at the same time I do, and then I can't take his worried look and I start running, crashing into him and hugging

him as tightly as I can. He hugs me back almost as fiercely.

I bury my face in his shoulder, trying very hard not to cry. I hear some sniffling behind me and almost smile at his failure to not cry. But it feels so good to be back here, to be back with him, that for the moment I don't care.

And then he pulls back. "Ellie, I'm so sorry---I never meant---And---" He stops abruptly, his eyes fixed on my black eye.

I shake my head, not letting go of him. "Carlos, I *do not care.* I promise. Not letting you die was way more important."

"But---"

"Stop." And he actually does. "Carlos, seriously, when will you learn? I don't care if you cut all of my hair off. I'll care more about *you.*"

He smiles a tiny bit. "But---"

"Ah!"

"I---"

"Up-bup-bup!"

He smiles for real, color shining back into him. "Okay. I'll stop. But I do have something." He lets go of me to dig through his pocket. He pulls a silver box wrapped in blue ribbon out that definitely should not have fit in his pocket.

"What, is your pocket like Mary Poppins' bag?" I joke, taking the box.

"Who?"

"You obviously still have a lot to learn." I laugh, pulling the ribbon off and lifting up the lid, different theories running through my mind.

So I was *really* not expecting a silver half-crown with dark blue

gems dotting the edges of a snowflake in the center. Two gems are missing, and there are some spots that are rusty.

"Is this the crown I lost during Cotillion?" I ask, laughing when he nods. "Where'd you get it?"

"I had Jane summon it with her mom's wand. And I fixed it up." He scratches the back of his neck. "I didn't do very well."

But the two missing gems make it that much sweeter. He takes it gently and places it on my head. I grin and shove it to the side, making it tilt lopsided. Carlos laughs.

"You know, I actually like my black eye." I tell him, pointing to it. His smile dissipates quickly. "No, I'm serious. I like it. It's different."

"I thought you hated being different." He reminds me.

"Well," I wrap my arms around him again. "That was before."

"Before what?"

I chew on my bottom lip, deciding if this will make him sad or make him laugh. "Before I met you."

Thankfully, he laughs. And then, out of nowhere, I realize he's a lot closer to me than he's ever been. I can practically feel a blush creeping up my neck, but it doesn't have time to finish because Carlos leans forward and kisses me.

The_Awkward_Seaweed please don't burst! XD

Hope everybody enjoyed this chapter! Please comment what you think!

(Also... Christopher Robin coming out TOMORROW!!!! AAAAAH!!!!! CANNOT WAIT!!!!!)

Okay, seriously, I hope everybody reading this liked this chapter. I put a lot more thought into than I normally do,

because I realized that Carlie has been a thing for a while and they've still (well, NOW they have)
kissed. BeautyBeastRose was the one who pointed it out.
Thanks!

All right. Bye!

Home

[image]

I do believe I made some sort of squeaky noise resembling that of a mouse that somebody just stepped on.

But after the initial shock, (which took maybe one or two seconds) my brain registered that this was the first time my boyfriend had *actually* kissed me.

And it was pretty awesome.

So of course it went downhill from there.

I heard a tiny *poof* behind me and somebody clearing their throat. My eyes shoot open and we wrench apart to find my father standing behind us, holding the book I had been reading for the first half of the drive. His face is purple and his right eye is twitching. And a pair of binoculars are hanging around his neck.

"Umm-----" I squeak. My lips feel numb.

"Run?" Carlos asks.

"Run." I agree. I grab his hand and turn to dash away.

"STAY PUT!" Dad yells. We stop together almost like he's frozen our feet.

"HADES!" Mom shouts, running up behind him. "I'm sorry, Ellie, he saw it happen and looked for an excuse---He saw your book and used it to get close----HADES GET BACK HERE!"

"HE WAS----"

"I AM AWARE!!!"

"BUT----"

"*Daaaaaad!*" I groan.

Mom finally catches up to him, grabs my book, and tosses it to me. "Stop interfering with Carlie!" she scolds my dad.

"MOM!" I shriek.

"What?" She smiles. Then she grabs my dad's ear and makes him *poof* them back to the car.

And Carlos is dead silent.

"Sooooooooooo...." I drag out the word long as possible.

"Sorry." Carlos mutters.

I can see he thinks he shouldn't have done it, so I laugh. Even to me, it sounds strained. "I'm not mad. I just wish Dad hadn't seen." I quickly say, smiling.

He looks up with the tiniest smile. "I'm just glad he didn't kill me."

I laugh again, sounding more real, though this one sounds more like a pig's snort, and hook my arm through his. My whole face feels like it's on fire. "Where's everybody else?" I ask.

"They're in their dorms. They said something about going to your dorm later tonight." Carlos said.

I feel a trickle of disappointment. I'd hoped to see everybody at once. "Oh."

"And... Sera's still not awake." Carlos mutters.

"Oh."

He must see how sad I'm getting, because he tugs me towards the building. "Hey. Sorry. I just.... Never mind. Come on."

I let go of him to go back and grab my bag, then I walk inside with him to my dorm. I'd hoped Sera would be awake, too.

"How's Arson doing?" I venture.

Carlos grins, to my surprise. "He's loving it here. He misses Sera, but he doesn't miss the Isle."

'What about Ares and Uma?"

"On the Isle, under intense spells."

"Gil? Brit?"

"Gil still likes it here. He wishes he could patch things up with Uma, though."

"Aw." I smile sadly. "Wish I'd been there."

"Oh, by the way, now that you've pointed it out..." he clears his throat. "I actually think your black eye looks awesome. When Hades told us about your...uh...scars and stuff, Mal said that was the coolest thing ever. Dizzy said that she had "*so many ideas her head was going to burst*" He puts air quotes around the sentence.

I snort. "Of course she does."

We get to my old dorm, and I expect Carlos to leave to go back to his. But he just waits behind me.

I glance at him. "Uh, is there a reason you're hanging around?"

He just shakes his head, bouncing on his heels.

Weird...

I open my door up to find it pitch-black like it was the night Chad, Quentin, and Ned attacked me. I glance back at Carlos once, and he's grinning. I step one foot in and blinding lights turn on, a LOT of voices yelling "SURPRISE!!!!" at the top of their lungs. Once I blink the light out of my eyes, I register what looks like half the school squished into one room. Or at least it feels like it after a year with just two other people in my life. Really it's just Mal, Evie, Jay, Ben, Arson, Gil, Brit, Doug, Dizzy, and all my other friends. I do have a lot.

I see a table filled with ice cream, cake, and a couple presents. A

huge multicolored banner above it reads WELCOME BACK ELLIE!!!!! in all caps.

And I'm still standing in the doorway with one hand on the doorknob. Carlos pushes me in a little as everyone starts talking at once. Over the next fifteen minutes, I'm hugged so many times I can barely feel m arms. Then things start calming down a bit once everybody gets a slice of cake (chocolate with double-fudge icing---yum!) and let me actually talk. Not that I have anything to say.

Mal speaks up first. "Gotta say, Ellie, your dad wasn't kidding about the black eye. It's awesome."

I smile. "Thanks. Nice hair."

She grins and shakes back her shorter, more vibrant purple hair.

"Hey Ben, did my dad really have to threaten the school board?" I ask.

Ben laughs. "Yeah, he did. It was actually pretty awesome."

Evie shoves her way to the front with Dizzy. Dizzy is holding a bright silvery present, and she shoves it into my hands. "We made it yesterday, so don't judge if it's weird!" Dizzy says.

I smile and tear it open, expecting some kind of hair product. I'm half right---

"A coupon book?" I ask, flipping through the little booklet.

"There are twelve cards in there. Free complete makeovers, not counting the one I'm going to give you tomorrow." Dizzy squeals. "But that's not the best part. Look in the bottom!"

I move around the tissue paper until I find a little notecard. It's only got two sentences on the front.

You've been asking for too long. Hope you like!

I turn the card over. *Devie.*

I look up to find Doug and Evie grinning at me. I stare at them for a minute before cracking up. "About time!" I say between breaths.

Evie just grins. Doug looks a little embarrassed, but still happy.

"Mine next!" Brit squeals, shoving past them. She, Gil, and Quentin look pretty pleased with themselves as they hand me a gold-wrapped package. I tear it open, and find...

"A book?" I ask.

"Right!" Brit says. "Y'know, on the Isle, television was called books."

Her eyes sparkle as it clicks in my head. "You've seen---"

"No. Ar told me to say it." Brit says. Arson jumps up behind them, waving for the second he's in the air before he disappears in the crowd again.

I push through to hug him. "We *have* to watch all my favorite movies so you can quote them with me," I tell him. He nods, grinning.

And then someone clears their throat and my small welcoming party clears to show Maira. She looks *severely* uncomfortable. But she also looks different. She's not glaring at me, for one, but her hair is also cut to just below her jawline, and she's actually wearing a sword with her knapsack.

She clears her throat. "You wanna talk outside, Icy?"

I feel a twinge of the old annoyance at the nickname, but I nod and follow her out. I hear people back inside my dorm whispering, betting on whether I'll kill her as I close the door behind me. I roll my eyes and follow Maira out of the hallway. She leads me to a garden with a small trickling fountain. I tap the base and it frosts, freezing in a twirl of sparkly white dust.

Maira sighs. "Look, I wanted to apologize."

"For what exactly?" I ask. "For being a brat? For basically hating me?"

She growls. "And you wonder why it was so easy for me to hate you."

"You're not exactly helping your case."

She sighs again. "I know. You want to know the real reason? Why I hated you so much?"

"Do enlighten me."

"Okay, A) because of that attitude." I sigh. "And B) Because you stole Hades."

"What?"

"I grew up with him my whole life, Ic---Ellie. Look, my dad always wanted a son. He didn't try to hide that fact. But Hades was like a dad to me. And then you show up, out of nowhere, never having met him in your life, and all of the sudden *you're* his little girl, not me."

"Oh."

"He used to talk about you all the time. Whenever I would see a picture of you online, I would run over to his house and show him. He loved that." She sighs and sits down on the fountain. I hesitantly sit next to her.

"Sorry?" I venture.

She laughs. "You don't have to apologize. I was kind of a jerk to you."

"Kind of?"

"Okay, I was a jerk."

"There you go."

She laughs again. "And here, everybody was just lining up to be your friend, even Sera."

"Not everybody." I correct. "I have a few stupid enemies."

"Yeah?" Maira smiles. "Like who?"

"Well, Nedwin of Maldonia for one."

"Prince Ned?" Maira's eyebrows knit together. "Green sweater most of the time, arrogant, son of Tiana?"

"Yeah."

"Oh, he *hates* me. I was hanging out with Arson one day, and he walked by us and when he saw Ar, he squealed and started screaming at us to run back to our slug holes."

I get up. "Scuse me. Gotta go kill him."

She puts a hand on my arm. "Wait! Just wait." She's laughing so hard now, she's crying almost. "Arson looked so offended, so I punched the guy in the nose, and Arson started laughing, and he said 'squishy face!' because of how Ned's nose squished against his face when I punched him."

"Squishy face?" I laugh. "That's from Lord Of The Rings! I told him that's what I called one of the Orcs."

Maira nods. "I know. He told me. He also made me watch every good movie in existence."

"Princess Bride?"

"Oh, definitely."

"Star Wars?"

"We're on number seven. Carlos watched those with us. He kept saying something about finally getting what a padawan was."

I smile, thinking back to before Cotillion, when I had said that word and he'd had no idea what I'd meant.

"Star *Trek?* The newer ones?" I ask.

"All un-named red shirts beware." Maira smirks.

"And here I was worried you two would be killing each other." I hear behind us. We both turn at the same time and find Mahina behind us, looking *very* out of place from my memories in jeans and a T-shirt.

"Hi, Mahina." I say.

"Welcome back." She hugs me. "Sorry I missed your welcome party, but Nedwin threw gum in Kalia's hair again and we had to look up that potion Mal gave us last time to get it out."

Maira growls. "We seriously should kill that kid."

"Don't bother." Kalia comes outside and closes the door behind her. She's also in jeans and a T-shirt, but her T-shirt is soaking wet.

"Why are you all wet?" I ask.

She smiles. "Because I just finished rigging Ned's goldfish collection. The next time he goes to feed them, it will flip and dump on him."

"What about his fish?"

"Oh, they aren't real. He hates real animals. They're mechanical." Kalia says. "He only pretends to feed them so people will think they're real."

"Only Ned." I sigh. "Why did he put gum in your hair the first time?"

"The first time was right after you left." Mahina says. "He blamed us for bringing Hades here and finding out about the whole pictures-from-the-Isle thing."

"That's dumb, he's *my* dad!" I say.

Maira rolls her eyes. "You think that matters to him?"

"Point taken." I laugh.

"We should go back to the party." Maira says. "Otherwise they'll

think we've murdered each other."

"Please. I would roast you in a fight."

"Suuuuure." Maira snorts. "Keep tellin' yourself that."

I put one arm over her shoulder and one over Mahina's. She links arms with her sister and we walk back inside with one of the least likely people I would consider a friend.

Hope everybody enjoyed my newest chapter! :)

Please comment what you think!

One thing, tho: I HAVE NOW HIT 50K VIEWS!!!!! AAAAAAAAH!!!!!!!! *squeals in delight and dances around my room* Thanks so much, everybody who reads this!

hugs

sends out candy THAT IS NOT TWIX DON'T YOU DARE SAY TWIX BeautyBeastRose I AM WATCHING YOU

Okay. Bye!

Enchanted To Meet You

[image]

(**Ignore Mal. Pretend she, and the picnic stuff, are not there.**)

"Chop, chop!" Dizzy says, shaking me awake. I lazily open my eyes to see her grinning above me. Everyone had insisted on staying in my dorm room until at least 4 in the morning, then everyone was too tired to keep going. Everybody had flooded out and left me in there with Brit, who hadn't even bothered to change out before flopping on her bed and snoring away. I'd stayed awake for another hour, smiling at how *much* I'd smiled in the past hours.

Dizzy shakes me again. "Come *on,* you have a date today, and I want to give you a much-needed makeover!"

"Date today?" I ask, still half-asleep.

"Yes, you dummy! With Carlos! Your *boyfriend."* She sings.

I sit upright. I forgot about that. I look down and realize I forgot to change before falling asleep too. Dizzy pulls me out of bed. "It's fine! I'm going to give you new clothes, too!"

I glance at the leather jacket I've been wearing since Ben's coronation when Evie made it for me."What about my jacket?"

"You can keep it if you want, but Evie made a new one, too." She reaches up and grabs the crown off my head. "Be glad nobody noticed this last night," she giggles.

I can feel my face heat up. "I---It's---"

"Relax. I know your boyfriend gave it to you." She smiles and sets it on my bed. "Now, come ON! My store will be flooded with people soon, and I want to make sure I do you right!"

I laugh and let her drag me to her shop. Sure enough, there's a line of people waiting outside the locked doors. Dizzy waves and

unlocks them, shoving me in and locking it behind her again. The crowd seems pretty used to it. Dizzy shoves me towards a chair and, laughing, I sit down while she sets to work. I can't tell what she's doing most of the time, but she does paint my nails light blue with black swirls. I feel her playing around with my hair, probably getting out the old blue dye on my scalp. She won't let me look until at least an hour later. What kind of hairdo takes an HOUR?

"Ta-da!" She says, spinning my chair around so I can see myself in the mirror. I almost laugh but think that could be inappropriate. Dizzy's used my eyes as a baseline for all her styles today. My right side (the one with the blue eye) has a black chunk of hair that is the same length as the blue one on my left side. The rest of what Dizzy did is deep blue tips. The rest of my hair is stark white, like always. I grin and shake the two black-and-blue chunks into my eyes.

"This is awesome, Diz." I say.

She grins too. "Aw, I know." Then she grabs a handful of fabric and shoves it into my hands. "Evie made this outfit for your date. Mal helped, since she knows where you're going."

"Why does everyone know but me?" I laugh.

She just smiles. I shake my head and step into a bathroom in the back. It's a knee-lenth dress that starts as sky blue on the gauzy sleeves and fades to white at my knees. For some reason, black high-top converse go with that. I laugh when I see the new leather jacket Evie has made for me. It looks about the same as the last one, except this one has beaded white snowflakes on it all over, and what looks like black glitter. I step out and Dizzy squeals.

"You look awesome! Now, c'mon, I'm doing your makeup!"

"Carlos, I really don't see the point of a blindfold in the middle of the woods." I laugh, walking slowly over tree roots and rocks in the path. He'd had the limo drive us out here in the middle of nowhere and then put the blindfold on.

"Just trust me." Carlos laughs. "Besides, we're almost to the bridge. Then I have to take it off so your foot doesn't go through the slats."

"Wait, what?"

His laugh is all I get as an answer.

We keep walking with me badgering him, but he doesn't answer again until the blindfold is suddenly whisked off. I have to blink to let my eyes adjust to the sudden light, but he wasn't kidding when he said bridge.

"Wow." I say. It stretches over a ravine basically filled with more trees. "Wait... is this where Ben too Mal? On their first date?"

Carlos nods. "Yeah. Ben recommended it because it's one of the few places he'd doubted you'd actually been."

"Well, he's right. I've been most everywhere else."

Carlos takes my hand and walks onto the bridge. "I don't see any spots where my foot could go through." I point out.

He shrugs. "Well, would you rather wear the blindfold the rest of the way?"

I laugh. "No way." I lean on the ropes and look down the dizzying drop. "Besides, even if I fell, I could just use my powers to bring me back up."

Carlos laughs. "This is why I missed you."

"What exactly did you do while I was gone?" I ask.

His smile vanishes. "I tried to get you back."

My laughter dies as well. "Oh. Sorry?"

"I wasn't your fault. And I get why your dad was so strict about it. It *was* kind of my fault."

I bump his shoulder with mine. "It was my fault too. I shouldn't

have snuck through the hospital by myself. I'm just glad you were there. Dude too."

Then a thought occurs to me. "Hey, did we ever get Dude his mouthwash?"

Carlos laughs outright. "Yeah, I did. He spent an entire afternoon using it to get Ares' taste out of his mouth."

"Where was Dude last night?"

"Chasing a squirrel with Dug." Carlos says, completely straight-faced. I stare at him for a second before swatting his arm.

"That is so not funny!" I scold, but he's laughing so hard he's doubled over. "I told you how sad that movie makes me!" I tell him.

He straightens back up, his mouth twitching with his urge to not smile. "Aw, come on. I watched it with Arson and Brit. It's a cute movie!"

"Yeah, but a *sad* kind of cute!" I say. "Not to mention that the character who shares my name *dies!*"

Carlos stops laughing. "But that's why I liked it. Because the nerd and Ellie got together."

I feel my heart skip a beat. Quite literally. "Oh."

He smiles again. "Okay, I just realized. Is it bad that I've been dating you for who knows how long, and I don't know some simple stuff about you?"

I turn around, leaving against the rope to face him. "What do you want to know?"

He thinks for a second. "Favorite color?"

I laugh. "Easy. White."

"That's not a real color."

"Sure it is! White is all the colors mixed together."

"Black is that. White is the absence of color." Carlos says.

I smile. "It can be either. If black absorbs all colors, then it should absorb white too."

"You have a very strange brain."

"Why, thank you. What's your favorite?"

He scrunches his nose up. "Well, this might be a surprise, but blue."

I glance down at my dress once. Then back up at him. "Why blue?"

He smiles a tiny bit, having noticed my look down. "Partly because blue is what I think of you as. But partly because I grew up on the Isle, where everything was gross and trash and little to no color. But the sky stays blue. Even when it storms. It's still a stormy blue."

I watch him for a second. "That's deep." I joke.

He laughs. "But it's true!"

"Okay, what else was it you wanted to know about me?"

"Ummm... Is it bad that I want to know if I was your first kiss?"

I practically feel my face heat up. "Yes. You were my first kiss." I tap the spot my forehead next to my black eye. "Everybody hated me, remember? If anyone *did* ask me out, I would have assumed it was a dare."

He glares at nothing. "I hate that."

"Hate what?"

"Hate how you were treated when we first got here. Chad, Ned, Audrey... everybody just targeted you."

"Not you guys."

"Not us." he agrees.

"Anything else?" I ask.

"Um. Well. Who did you think your dad was? Before Mahina and everybody?" He asks. "I know I have some theories of who mine is, but nobody you'd know. Just some people from the Isle."

"Well. I kinda thought my dad was Jack Frost for a while. Cuz, you know..." I put my hand out, palm up, and snowflakes dance around my fingers. "I also thought it was some random normal guy, maybe, I don't really know. My mom wouldn't tell me *anything* about him."

"Like Mal." Carlos supplies. "All Maleficent ever told Mal was that her dad was human and weak."

"Then how'd she fall for him?"

"How'd she fall for *anyone?*" Carlos asks. I laugh.

"And how'd anyone fall for *her?*" I add.

I turn back to the ravine. "So, was the bridge the whole date? Or was there more to it?" I ask.

His grin becomes sneaky. "Don't worry, there's more. C'mon." He grabs my hand and drags me down the bridge, off of it, and around the path off to the side.

"Um, not to interrupt, but isn't the pavilion that way?" I point to the path we've left behind.

"We're not going there." Carlos says. "Well, I mean, we kinda are. But not really." He keeps dragging me along. I look up and note that it's starting to get dark. After Carlos' favorite-color-confession, I can see what he means. Even now, when the sky is filled with pinks and purples and golds, I can see deep blue mixing perfectly in with the stars just beginning to shine.

I'm so busy watching the sky, I almost run into him when he stops walking. He grins and turns around, gently pushing me in front of him. We're on he edge of a cliff, not very far from a lake underneath us. By now, the sky is full of sparkling stars in a deep blue background.

I turn back to Carlos. "Is there a reason you brought me out here in the middle of the night?"

"Because by the time we get back, it'll be morning." He chews on his bottom lip. "Ellie, I realized the day before you came back, I... we... We haven't really been... Argh, this made so much more sense in my head." He runs a hand through his hair. "My basic point is, and this is going to sound cheesy, each day starts over. We don't run along forever. We have to start over sometimes. This is our do-over."

I watch him for so long he laughs nervously. "Told you it sounded cheesy."

"No, it wasn't cheesy. It was sweet." I say. "Really. I like that."

He gives a nervous smile. "Well... then... Hi. I'm Carlos." He puts a hand out and, laughing, I take it and shake.

"Hi. I'm Ellie. Delighted to meet you." I say.

He grins. "We're at an enchanted lake."

"Well, then, I'm *enchanted* to meet you." I laugh. "And now..." I step behind him and smile. "Is this water safe for humans?"

"Um, yeah, Ben went swimming with Mal. Mal sort of almost drowned, but whatever. Yeah. It's safe. Why?"

I shove him off the cliff. He yelps and grabs onto the edge, just barely staying on. I laugh at him, doubling over and hugging my stomach, I'm laughing so hard. He just grins, his face going pink from holding on.

I snort. "You look like Gandalf."

"What, am I supposed to say, "Fly, you fool" now?"

"That would suit this situation." I say.

"I can think of a better one." He reaches forward and grabs my ankle, letting go of the cliff and pulling me off with him.

"Noooooooo...." I yell on the way down, hitting the water and disappearing in a burst of bubbles momentarily. I kick up to the surface and spit water out, watching him surface a few feet away from me.

I splash water his way. "That was cheating, you jerk!"

He laughs and splashes me back. Before it hits me, I wave my hands and it freezes into slush that falls into the water again.

"Now who's cheating?" Carlos yells, splashing me again. This time I'm not quick enough. But by then I'm laughing too hard to care. Carlos grins and dives underwater and doesn't come back up for a few seconds. Just when I'm starting to get worried, he resurfaces holding a spiky white/rainbow ball.

"Ben told me about these. Supposedly, if you make a wish and throw it back in, it's supposed to come true." Carlos says, his hair dangling in front of his eyes as he grins.

I laugh and take it, still treading water. I catch sight of the pavilion to the side and swim over to it, hoisting my (soaking) self up on it. Carlos comes up next to me as I close my eyes and hold the crystal tightly and toss it in after I say in it my head.

"What'd you ask for?" Carlos questions.

I flip my soaking hair in his face. "That would ruin the wish, you dummy!"

He laughs and wraps an arm around me. "Okay, okay. Just asking."

I lean my head on his shoulder and gaze up at the sky, wishing with all my heart that the wish I wished will eventually come true. But even if it doesn't, I can't think of any time I was happier than I am now. Even if it's freezing out here when we're both soaked. But hey, freezing is what I'm used to.

Okie-day, I hoped everyone liked this newest Ellie chapter!

I just saw Christopher Robin yesterday, and I literally laughed and squealed so many times during the movie that the people around me kept glaring. BUT IT WAS TOO CUTE TO HOLD BACK!!!!!!!!! EEEEE! TIGGER SANG THE SOOOONG!!!!

The wonderful thing about Tiggers, is Tiggers are wonderful things! Their tops are mae out of rubber, their bottoms are made out of springs! They're flouncy, trouncy, bouncy, bouncy, fun-fun-fun-fun-fun! But the most wonderful thing about Tiggers is I'm the only one! IIIII'm the only one!

AAAAAAH I LOVE THAT SONG AND I AM PROUD OF KNOWING IT BY HEART!!!!!

Okay one last thing: Who has seen the video that China Anne Mclain recorded? Here is the link: https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=czg4BgvqtvM

She has Descendants news----will somebody comment what it is when it comes? Because I can't watch TV this friday. PPLEEASE? Thx!

Okay I'm done. Hope you guys enjoyed!

Stop Pressing Me!

True to his word, we stayed there basically all night. Near the morning, we saw some weird flashes and went to investigate but didn't find anything. By then we were both so cold and shivery that we just jumped back into the water. (Enchanted lake---who knew it was like a hot tub?) Neither of us cared that we were in regular clothes. (Though I did take off Evie's new jacket.) We just splashed around and *maybe* kissed a couple times... but that's not important. I think I may have ruined all the makeup Dizzy spent an hour on, not to mention probably washing half the dye out. Carlos assures me I still look awesome. But he has to say that. Otherwise he'd be a Carlos-icle.

I giggle suddenly at that thought. I think Sera may have rubbed off on me a bit too much.

Carlos swims over. "What's so funny?"

I put a hand over my mouth to stop. "Oh, nothing." He's soaking too, but I don't think he cares. "Were you planning on getting actually in the water when we came here?" I ask, treading closer so I don't have to yell.

He laughs. "Actually, no, but when you shoved me in I thought we may as well."

"Well, now I feel bad! What were we originally going to do?" I ask.

"I had no idea. That's why I'm glad you pushed me." He says, grinning.

"Oh!" I laugh. "Okay, now I don't feel bad." I look up at the sky, which is just starting to turn light blue again. "Should we be heading back?"

"Yeah, they probably think I murdered you in the middle of nowhere by now."

"Uh, excuse me, but if anybody was murdering anybody, I'd kick your butt in a fight."

He laughs. "Yeah, you totally would." Then he starts swimming towards the pavilion. I follow him, climbing up next to him and wringing my sopping hair out.

"Evie and Dizzy are going to kill me," I laugh, looking down at my dress. Only then do I notice I still haven't even taken off my sneakers! "Oh, my gosh, they really are going to murder me."

Carlos scoffs. "Nah, they'll probably be too busy geeking out over Carlie."

I turn to stare at him. "Oh, my gosh, even *you've* accepted it!"

He flushes. "Sorry. I got used to everybody saying it while you were gone."

"It's okay. My *mom* even uses that name. Did you hear her the other night?"

Carlos laughs loud, it ringing across the lake. "I thought your dad was going to kill me. I really thought he would."

"Believe me, I thought he would too. I'm surprised he didn't show up here. Wait..." I jump up and run over to where we saw the bushes. My feet go *squish, squish, squish.* "Do you think that was him?"

"Ellie, if it was him, I'd be dead by now." Carlos says, taking off his sneaker and literally wringing it out.

"Does that work?" I ask.

"How should I know? I've never gone swimming in regular clothes." Carlos says. "Well, no, there was the time Jane dropped us in the middle of the ocean. Remember?"

I laugh. "And Sera freaked."

Carlos laughs with me. We keep talking back and forth until we're

at least a little dry, then Carlos helps me up. "The limo should be here by now. Let's go."

We walk back the trail and over the bridge holding hands, and the driver gives us a weird smile. I feel my face flush red, and I duck into the car before the driver can say anything. He drives us back and pulls up to the entrance. And my jaw drops.

A HUGE, and I mean HUGE crowd of reporters are waiting at the entrance, holding cameras and microphones and notepads and recording devices.

My stomach squirms as I look at Carlos, whose jaw is dropped as well. "What are they doing here?"

"They can't know about---" I start, but he cuts me off.

"No. There is no way they could know. I only told Mal, Evie, Jay, Diz, and Ben. That's *it.* And none of them would rat us out."

"Then they can't be waiting for us, can they? Maybe some new VK's are coming or something." I throw out. I tap the window and the driver pulls it down so we can talk to him. "Is there any way you could drop us off somewhere else?"

He looks around. "Look behind you, Miss."

So I do. Reporters have crowded around the car, blocking off every possible escape. The driver gives me a pitying look. "Sorry, Miss. I didn't think they'd crowd around."

I groan and bury my face in my hands. "There's no way out of this, is there?" I ask Carlos. He shakes his head, his skin ashen.

So I take a deep breath and open the left door, stepping out. Reporters start yelling instantly, but I can't hear any of them over the snapping of pictures and screams of other reporters. Carlos gets out behind me and everything explodes once again. I take one look at his face and knows how much he hates this. So I take his hand and push through the reporters, keeping my head down and not listening to any of their questions.

Until I hear, "And here she is, the daughter of Death itself! Tell me, Elicia, who have you sent to their proper place yet?"

I look up to see a snobby-looking blond guy in front of me. I find my limbs seem to have gone rigid. "I'm not quite sure I know what you mean by that." I say through gritted teeth. I note the multiple cameras taking it in.

"I mean, who's dead yet? You haven't been here for over a year, since the explosion, and suddenly you're back?" His eyebrows wiggle. "Like this young fellow here! Carlos, how'd you do it? How'd you get little miss Death here to fall for ya? You kill her old boyfriend?"

Carlos stares at the guy, openmouthed. "No---I---we--She--"

"Aaaah, she swore you to secrecy? Good, good, we understand, lad."

"No! She wouldn't---I never---"

"Elicia, where've you been for a year?" A new reporter yells.

"Why was your father hidden for years?"

"Do you in fact have any powers from him?

"Where did the daughter of Ares go?"

"Did you kill her?"

And here, in the middle of a thousand cameras who will twist it, I sob. I can't help it. Sera... I may as well have killed her. Ares used them to try and get to me.

"WHERE DID YOU GET THE BLACK EYE?"

"WHY ARE YOUR EYES DIFFERENT COLORS?"

"WHERE ARE THE SCARS FROM?"

"Stop it!" Carlos yells, but it's no use, they're pressing in, yelling questions, and I press my hands against my ears as though I can

block them out. I feel Carlos wrap his arm around me and push the reporters away, but their questions, their accusations follow me with every step. I hear many questions about why we're so wet, some people speculating that we buried our latest victim underwater. We finally get inside but there's still reporters, and at one point I can feel someone else holding me with Carlos, but I don't open my eyes or take my hands off my ears until someone makes me sit down on what feels like my bed and takes hold of my wrist, forcing them off of my ears.

I open my eyes to find Maira in front of me, not glaring, but actually looking genuinely concerned. "Are you okay?"

I give a hollow laugh. "Sure."

"You are *so* lying." I hear Mal say. I look up to find Mal, Evie, Jay, Ben, Dizzy and Brit standing across the room. I look next to me to find Carlos still with his arm around me.

"How'd they find out?" I ask.

Ben shrugs helplessly. "I have no idea. I didn't even realize they were there. Like, it was almost as if they only appeared on our cameras after you got here."

Mal looks murderous. "I can't understand it! Carlos, you didn't tell anyone but us, right?"

"Right." Carlos says.

Maira raises her hand. "I literally only found out a few minutes ago. And so did Brit. We promise it wasn't us."

"It wasn't me and Diz." Evie says, putting a hand on Dizzy's shoulder. "I promise we didn't talk about it. Even here, we stayed quiet."

Jay shakes his head. "Wasn't me. I spent all day yesterday fencing with Lonnie and some team members."

"And I didn't tell *anyone* else, Ellie." Carlos says. "I promise."

"I know. I believe you." I sigh and run my fingers through my hair. "This doesn't make any sense. Why were they so fixed on *us?* They weren't this bad when Mal started dating you, right Ben?"

"Well, they still kinda clung to us, but no, it wasn't this bad." Ben says.

"They took pictures on a couple more public dates, but----" Mal starts.

"Oh, no." I interrupt.

"What?" Carlos asks.

"The flashes! We saw last night!!" I yell, standing up. Carlos groans and puts his face in his hands.

"Flashes?" Ben asks.

"We saw these weird lights, but when we went to investigate there was nothing there." I explain.

Everyone in the room groans. "Why are they so fixed on you guys?" Brit asks.

"Probably because of who her dad is." Maira points out. "Remember, nobody remembered until he showed up again. So if they think you've been trying to hide it... and he's your *dad*... It doesn't look good."

I sigh. "You'd think I'd be used to this stuff by now."

"You never get used to this stuff." Mal says. "Especially the things they were asking you!"

"I didn't even hear half of it." I admit.

"Yeah, we know." Carlos says, mimicking my hands-over-ears pose. "You're lucky. Some of the stuff they were yelling about you was *awful.*"

"Uh, De Vil, there's a time to remain silent." Maria points out.

"Sorry."

Ben sighs. "The point is, I'm going to find out who spilled it. And who was there last night. That spot is for the royal family only. And people we say can use it. If someone trespassed there, that's a serious offense."

"Think it's Uma?" I ask. "She and Harry have done stuff like this before."

"No. Fairy Godmother is keeping tabs on all the major villains. They're all on the Isle still." Mal says. "Jane is helping, too. That's one of the reasons she wasn't at your welcome-back party. Ares' little tracker-blip thing had disappeared. But don't worry, he's back. And very angry."

I laugh. "Well, that's good at least."

Ben glances out the window and yelps. He runs over and closes the curtains. "Okay, this is getting out of hand. I'm going to go make Fairy Godmother make them go away."

"Are they outside our *window?*" Brit demands. When Ben nods, she shoves him aside and opens the window up. She sticks her head outside and yells, "LEAVE US ALONE!!!" and then brings her head back in. We all stare at her. "What?" She asks.

"Um, nothing." I say.

Ben leaves the room, promising he's going to find Fairy Godmother and advising us to stay inside for now. At one point one of the reporters keeps tapping on the window and yelling questions through, so Maira starts firing arrows out the window. They scream and run after that, but then they keep coming back. Finally she climbs through the window and screams at them for ten minutes straight, also using one her enchanted ball things to short-circuit all of their cameras and mics. Then she'd climbed back in and locked the window.

We watch through the window as Fairy Godmother runs out screaming at them. It's the angriest I've ever seen FG. Her face is

flushed pink and her wand-waving is out of control. By the time he crowd leaves, half of their hair colors and styles have turned neon and feathery. FG comes in afterwards while we all scramble to make it look like we weren't watching and cracking up.

"If they come back, please tell me." FG says sternly. "Really! A school!" she mutters to herself, walking off. And we all lose it again.

"Princess of Death---" *Flip.*

"Dating Carlos De Vil---" *Flip.*

"Killings suspected---" *Flip. Flip. Flip.*

Every single news channel on this stupid television is overflowing with pictures and videos of Carlos and I yesterday. Videos of me covering my ears while Maira and Carlos shove through reporters. Videos of us getting out of the car, still sort of wet. (To my surprise, all of my dye and makeup was still completely intact. Dizzy whispered earlier that she had put a tiny spell on it since she knew where we were going.)

But the worst ones were the four separate pictures of Carlos and me at the lake. Every channel that showed them said they had been given by an "anonymous source" that preferred to remain unnamed. The first one was Carlos and me on the bridge, laughing while I stared down at the ravine. The second one was right before we fell into the water, we're inches from hitting the surface of the lake. The third one was when we climbed out onto the pavilion so I could make my wish with the spiky rock.

And the last one is us kissing. We're both in the water, and I have my eyes closed with this weird smile on my face, with Carlos' back to whoever took the picture.

And as you can imagine, the last one has been exploding all over the internet.

Ben has been using his status as King to get into every site he can,

deleting the pictures and videos, but there's only so much he can do when it gets posted again and again every minute. Carlos and I have both locked away all our electronics because we keep getting notifications for every social media account we have, people won't stop harassing us. The first few times I actually looked, half of them were people telling me to go to Hell because of all the people I've killed, another bit was people saying we looked cute together, and like three people sympathizing.

We both stopped looking.

I basically have stayed holed up in my room with Brit, reading and watching my favorite movies with her and Arson and Carlos. Even then, people find ways to get to us. I've had at least fifteen people send me letters, while Carlos has had maybe four or five. One of them was enchanted to burst into flames when I touched it, but luckily Jane happened to be the room and felt the spell before I got the letter.

Something like that did get Carlos, though. All of his fingertips turned red, and the letter inside said *You hands are stained as much as hers, now.* The red won't wash off, no matter what spell we try.

Ben told the messengers to stop giving us whatever someone sent us.

I'm miserable. I can't even go to my classes without fellow students and reporters swarming around me. Most of the teachers have been pretty understanding, sending me homework in my room along with detailed instructions. Even Mr. Deley sent me a short note telling me and Carlos that we didn't need to come to class until this all blew over.

All of my friends stop by every day, filling me in on their attempts to stop it all. Only Ben is getting anything done. He had to stop my mom and dad from coming here because when they tried someone fired a few shots around their direction.

I've been stuck inside for seven days.

It's been a long week.

On the beginning of the eighth day, I'm in my room with Brit, Carlos, Arson, and Maira, watching the first *Hobbit* movie. I can't stop myself from cracking up when Bilbo runs off yelling "I'm going on an adventure!" We're at the part where Bilbo finds the Ring when our door bursts open and Mahina and Ben come running in.

"Ellie!" Mahina reaches over and grabs the remote, stopping the movie. "You need to hear this."

"What? Why? Did you find out who that unnamed source was?" I ask.

"Actually, yeah!" Ben says. "Mahina found it. *Another* unnamed source sent her a note, telling her that she felt bad for what you and Carlos were going through, and she told Mahina the source's name. Mahina---" Ben gives her a dirty look. "---refused to tell me until she told you. Now who IS it, Mahina?"

Mahina pulls out the note. "Well, this person said it was the daughter of a villain on the Isle. Her name is..." She scans the note. "Endora."

Ben goes white. "Oh, no."

Okay, fun fact: While I was looking up names that started with "E", I found out that "Ellie" sometimes means "beautiful fairy woman". HA!

By the way, anybody who gets where I got the name "Endora" from, I love you. BeautyBeastRose you are not allowed to answer since I already told you what it meant. AND NO HINTS, EITHER.

Okay. I'm done! Bye! Hope you guys enjoyed!

Icy And....The Beast?

"Ben, do you know who that is?" I demand.

He nods, his face still white.

"Well, who is it?" Carlos asks. By then we're all up, *The Hobbit* momentarily forgotten.

"Well, who do we know of a villain that starts with an E?" Maira demands. "Since everybody insists on naming their kids with the same letters as them."

"Evil Queen?" Brit suggests.

"No, Evie don't have sisters." Arson says.

Ben sighs. "Well, Endora's mom isn't *technically* a villain..."

"What?" Brit says in surprise.

"Like my mom?" I ask.

"Sorta. Except my dad wouldn't let her stay here, period." Ben says. "I've been trying to get her and her daughter back here... But neither of them want it. They're furious."

"Of course they are." I sigh.

"Why would your dad care whether... ohhhhhhhh..." Carlos says, his eyes going big. "Ohhhh, no..."

"What? What?" I ask. "Who is it?"

"The Enchantress." Carlos mutters.

Brit's eyes bulge. "The Enchantress?? I didn't even know she was on the Isle!"

"She hides out on the edge." Carlos explains. "The only reason I know she's there is because she and my mom used to make me and Endora get together so Dori could make me look better." He flushes a little here. "My mom thought I should try and make friends."

"Dori?" I note.

He flushes again. "She was nice!"

"Well, obviously not." Maira huffs. "Since she was at your date and told everybody where you guys were. And I'm betting she's the reason your security stuff couldn't sense them until these two arrived, Ben."

He groans. "You're probably right. I should've taken care of her sooner..." He murmurs to himself.

"What?" I ask. "You knew she was off the Isle??"

Ben flushes like Carlos. "Yes, I knew. She was one of the people Uma let out when she attacked here."

"How do you know that?" Brit asks. "I never saw her. Neither did Ar."

This time, Ben pales so much it looks like he's half-dead. "Because... she was one of the ones who interrogated me." He whispers.

I flash back to the ruined state he was in. "Interrogated? What did they want?"

"They wanted to rule over every kingdom, but couldn't get into some. Like Wonderland, Neverland, Atlantica, and New Motunui. Only the royal family is supposed to know, so they tried to get me to tell them. But I couldn't. Like, literally can't. When I became king, I swore to protect my subjects, and that spell is binding. Ever wonder why we used FG's wand?" Ben looks miserable. "I'm sorry I didn't tell you guys. I just didn't want my dad finding out and slamming Auradon Prep into war mode. Not when you supposed to come back soon, Ellie."

I hug him. "It's fine. But that means she's been out for over a year!

Why strike now?"

"I think she may have been waiting for you to get back, Icy." Maira says.

I groan. "Why is everybody after *me?*"

"Probably because of who your d---"

"Yes, I realize it's probably because of my dad!" I snap. I rub my forehead. "Sorry. But, Ben, don't you have some spell with FG that allows her to track some villains?"

"Yeah, but ever time we try, it won't pinpoint on her. We think she's using her magic to mess it up somehow." Ben says.

"How powerful is she, exactly?" I dare to ask.

"Very." Ben sighs. "Even more than her mom. Though she did make a point in telling me that she can do beasts as well as her mom. She was going to turn me into one but then you guys came back."

"Why did your dad have to put them on the Isle?" Mahina asks.

"Because he was scared of what she can do. She did turn him into Beast, after all." Ben says.

"Yeah, but he found Belle because of it!" I say.

"I know, I tried to tell him that when I first invited Mal, Jay, Evie, and Carlos. I tried to get Endora to come."

"You did?" Carlos says in surprise. "She always talked about how much she wanted to come here."

"Dad wouldn't let me. He refused point-blank." Ben says. "I mean, he barely agreed to let Mal come."

"Of course he would." Maira sighs.

"What's that supposed to mean?" Ben demands.

"Your dad isn't exactly forgiving." Maira says, crossing her arms.

"Let's not do this right now." Brit pleads. "We know who it is now. Why don't we tell the press that? Then they'll have something else to slobber over."

Mahina nods, looking thoughtful. "That might work. And maybe it will flush her out of hiding."

Arson raises a hand, jumping up and down. "I wanna tell! I wanna tell!"

Brit lays a hand on his shoulder. "No, Ar, you'd just run in there screaming to leave your friends alone."

He pouts. "Yeah...."

I laugh. "Why don't we let Mahina do it, since she's the one with the note?"

"Or I could do it, and maybe order them to leave you guys alone." Ben suggests.

"No, that'd make it look like you're covering something for us." Carlos says.

"You're right. Mahina?" Mahina nods and leaves the room holding the note. Ben notices Carlos' red fingers. "Ummm, what happened?"

Carlos hides them behind his back. "Stupid letter from somebody." He mumbles. Ben nods.

"There!" I laugh as I hold up Carlos' red-free fingertips. "I thought it might come off here."

He laughs. "I can't believe we came back here." We're sitting on the pavilion at the enchanted lake again. I brought him here knowing that we'd at least be able to escape most of the reporters. Ben also put guards at every possible entrance here so we'd technically be alone. We both agreed that we had to get away from Auradon Prep.

Once we'd gotten here, I'd had the idea to try and use the water to

wash off Carlos' red fingers. So we'd sat on the edge and spent a good ten minutes getting the color to go away.

Carlos wipes his fingers off on his shirt. "Wow, you can't even tell!" He laughs.

"Well, the enchanted lake washes away all enchantments." I say. "Ben's love spell accidentally washed away when he and Mal went here."

"And he still liked her?" Carlos asks. "Mal never told me that."

"Well, after that she was... you know." I wave my hand around my hair. "Blonde and non-magicky."

Carlos laughs. Then something seems to occur to him. "Uh, Ellie... If my fingers wash off, why didn't what was left of your scars come out?"

I tug my black bang in front of my eyes. "Mine was the leftover amount from a curse. Yours was a simple hex. Those come out. Mine leaves a mark."

He winces. "Sorry."

"For the last time, it wasn't your fault! Well, maybe it was, but I don't blame you. Really." I say.

Carlos opens his mouth to say something, but then someone bursts out of the bushes near us. I whirl around to find Maira, leaves in her hair and a grass stain on her knee. She doubles over, out of breath.

"Maira?" I ask, standing up. Carlos stands up next to me.

"Ellie---Carlos---you need to come back right now!" Maria says, straightening up, clutching her stomach.

"What? Why?" Carlos asks.

"Well, there's good news and bad news. Good news---we know where Endora is. We found her." Maria says. "The bad news---"

"Uh.... Ellie?" Carlos' voice shakes.

"What?" I turn and I barely have time to take in his appearance before a scream slips out of my lips. My hands jump up to cover my mouth so I'll stop, but a whimper still escapes.

Carlos is at least twice as tall, covered in white-and-black curly fur, with fangs sticking out of his mouth and horns curling around fuzzy ears and claws on his huge paws. His clothes are mostly ripped up but stretching just wide enough to cover him. He stares in horror at his hands, and then turns in a circle to find a furry tail following him.

"Y---you're a---" I stutter.

Maira scratches the back of her neck. "Yeah... that was the bad news. Every boy in the kingdom has turned into a Beast."

(Edit after the first D3 trailer came out: Feb. 19 right now) I CALLED THIS I SO CALLED THIS!!!! HA!!!! BEASTS~!!!!!! AAHAHAHHA

Duh-duh-duuuuuuh! Who's mad at me now? Huh? Everyone? :)

JK. Please don't be mad.

Okay. Phew. THAT was a hard chapter to write. Hope everyone enjoyed! Endora hopefully be in the next chapter for real.

Heads up, tho. I go back to school in a couple days, so there might----MIGHT---not be another update for a while. MIGHT. Knowing me, I'll be able to squeeze one out pretty quick anyway.

Okay, seriously, now I'm finished. Bye!

FAN ART!!!!!

BeautyBeastRose sent me this fan art that she drew!!!!!!!! THANKS SO MUCH!!!!!!!

Ok. THIS is Brit!

[image]

THIS is Ellie!

[image]

Aaaaaaand.... THIS is Sera!!!

[image]

Some of these are a teensy bit off.... but I LOVE them!! Thanks so much, BeautyBeastRose!!!!!!!

Fan aaaaaaart!

[image]

This was drawn by Warriorsfangirl9 and I REALLY hope I got your name right. Thanks for the drawing! I seriously love Ellie's magic.

Endora The Enchantress

"All the boys? Why just the boys?" Carlos complains.

"Why do you think? She just wanted to target Adam." Maira says. "Also, I not sure if she *can* turn girls into Beasts."

"But why target *every* boy?" Carlos moans, scratching the back of his neck. And then his arm. And his stomach. And his knee. That fur must be itchy.

"This is her revenge, Carlos." I say.

"Right." Maira says, still clutching her side. "We need to get back. Now. We know Endora was looking for people away from the castle to see if she could use them as ransom and stuff."

"Why do that on top of the Beast thing?" Carlos asks.

"Revenge, remember? She probably wants Ben and Beast to suffer as much as possible." I suggest.

"Right." Maira says. "But we need to get back *now.* Ellie, would you do the poof thing?"

"Um, I can't really do long-distance very well." I say. "And I can barely transport myself right now."

"Just try it. Please?" Maira asks.

I let out a huff of frustration, making my blue bang flip up for a second. "Fine." I grab Maira's hand and then reach for Carlos' paw, my hand basically disappearing in his. I close my eyes and concentrate, and after a brief burst of cold air, I open my eyes and we're in mine and Brit's room. I grin. Maira lets go of me and runs from the room, Carlos and I following her quickly. We go to Mal and Evie's room to find that Maira was right. Jay, Ben, Arson, and Gil are all twice as big and covered in fur the same color as their hair. Ben kind of looks like his dad's Beast self.

Arson waves.

Mal, Dizzy, Evie, Mahina, Kalia, Brit, and Jane are in there right now. "We're all trying to stick together so that Endora can't grab one of us alone." Mal explains. I nod and slip into the room. Carlos squeezes through the door and closes it behind him.

"Is there any way to get rid of this stupid spell?" Jay asks.

"I don't know." Ben admits, his voice sounding deeper than normal. All if the boys voice's sound growly. "There isn't a rose this time to give a deadline, and she didn't tell us what we had to do like she did with my dad."

"Right." Jay sighs. "He had to learn to love, and someone had to love him. Perfect."

"That can't be the case this time, can it?" I ask.

"I'm not sure it could be, because Mal and Ben are already together, so is Evie and Doug---he's trying to cut his fur off right now---" Dizzy says. "And Carlos and you are an item as well."

Is it possible that Carlos can flush red under all that fur?

"Right." I say.

"I wish she'd done some villain-type monologue." Jay complains. "That makes everything easier."

"Yeah, then they reveal what we can do to fix it." Brit says.

"How'd you guys know where she was? Was she here?" I ask.

"Yeah, we were all in the courtyard between classes, and she showed up hovering above my dad's statue." Ben says.

"So you know what she looks like now?"

"Not exactly." Gil admits. "I mean, nobody ever saw her on the Isle, and today she was wearing a dark green cloak that covered her face. She had a wand, though."

"She had a wand?" I groan. "Great. Wands work way better than normal magic."

"Thanks." Mal says.

"It's true, though." Jane says. "Wands give a more focused magic."

"Carlos, do you know what she looked like?" Ben asks. "Since you knew her on the Isle?"

"Um, no, she always wore a hood there too." Carlos says. "She said she didn't want anybody to see her face."

"That's weird." Gil breaks in, scratching behind his ears. His bandana is still somehow on, but lopsided and hanging off one of his own horns.

"Well, we still know she's wearing a big green cloak." Evie supplies.

"And that half of the population, the male half, will be hiding their faces." Carlos mumbles.

All the girls in the room laugh while the boys nod sadly.

Three days later, and we're all either packed into Ben's office or the library. We can't find *anything.* Since the Enchantress told Beast how to get rid of it last time, we had Fairy Godmother go to the Isle to ask the Enchantress, but she refused point-blank to help us. When FG told her that it was all the boys who got turned, the Enchantress has just told her "Only the caster of the spell can know for sure the cure."

So, since we found out, (which was an hour ago) we've basically been looking for Endora.

Only problem: How do you find a girl who has a magic wand?

With another wand! Yay.

"You're sure this is smart?" Jane checks yet again. "With her magic

contradicting mine, you might end up miles away from her still. And even if you got close, I can't guarantee you won't pass out or something after you land. I can feel her power from here."

"So you can track her?" I note.

"No. I can sense her powers, but only the presence of them. Like, I know they're *there,* if that makes sense." Jane says.

"Not really, but I'll deal." Maria blows a lock of curly hair out of her eyes.

Maira, Arson, Mahina, Carlos and I had been selected to go. Carlos, because he wants to see if he can't convince Endora to lift the spell. Maira, because she wants to punch her in the nose. Mahina, to stop Maira from punching anybody. And Arson and I because we have cool powers.

(No pun intended.)

It had taken a *lot* of convincing to get Carlos and Arson to agree to leave the dorm room. Finally we promised Maira had a ball that could cover them up (which she doesn't) and they finally left. I don't know why they're so stubborn about not being seen. Every single guy in Auradon is a beast! Does it matter right now?

I nod once again. "Jane, please just do it before one of us bails."

She sighs and raises her wand. FG had used her wand to make Jane her own after Jane had used FG's so well during the attack. Jane's wand is more gold than bluish silver, with a glowing pink ball on the butt of the wand with rose gold spirals tipping at the end. Jane waves her wand and silver sparkles swarm around us. I can feel them pink us up and carry us at speeds we can just barely feel, then stopping suddenly.

It drops Carlos and Arson first, but I lunge for Maira's and Mahina's hands and poof safely down to the ground. I'd found I can do some long-distance ones, but with no more than three people, including myself. Carlos and Arson are facedown on the ground now.

Carlos groans. "My teeth just rammed into my stupid nose." He rubs

his gigantic, furry nose. I barely hold back a laugh. I look around where we are.

"Hey, this is the enchanted lake!" I say in surprise. "Well, the woods near it. Why would Endora be here?"

"Well, I figured somebody would come after me sooner or later." Says a voice that I can only describe as sounding honey-covered. I hear a rustle above us and look up. A female shape wearing a deep green cloak is balanced in a tree high above. I can only see her mouth under the shadows, and she's smirking. "I wanted to be somewhere where *I'd* have the advantage."

"Hate to break it to you, but the enchanted lake is the royal family's." Maira spits. "Same with the woods around it."

Endora's form flickers and disappears. I feel a shift in the air behind me and duck instinctively, rolling and coming up a few feet to my left. I look up to see a tree with a burning hole in it like Endora flung acid at me. I stand up again and find her smirk is wider than ever.

"So, you're not as useless as Uma claimed you were." she says, moving almost like water. Fluid and graceful. She circles me, paying little to no attention to the others. I shake my hands, and blazing fire erupts on my palms. She laughs at that.

"Silly flames won't help you here, Daughter of Death." she flicks her hands and my world turns upside-down. I wiggle around, looking up and seeing that vines are wrapped around my body, trapping my arms against my sides. In one quick movement, I freeze them and break loose, landing hard on the ground.

"Stop playing around!" I insist.

"Oh, I'm far from playing." Endora promises.

"Dor---Uh, Endora, stop!" Carlos yells.

For the first time, Endora sounds surprised. "Carlos? What are you doing here? I didn't mean to make *you* a beast!"

He looks surprised as well. "You didn't?"

"No! You were supposed to be in Corona!"

"So there's a cure, then?" He asks hopefully. Endora doesn't answer but surveys the rest of our group.

"Arson?" She asks. He nods and waves. "You were *supposed* to be in Agrabah!" She growls. "Uma said---"

"Uma wants revenge on everybody, so she probably lied to you." I jump in.

Though I can't see her eyes, I can feel her glaring at me. "No kidding."

Mahina steps forward. "So you didn't want to get them?" She asks.

"I didn't want to get anybody but the prissy Auradonians." Endora sniffs. "Is Jay there too? And Gil, I'm assuming?"

"Yeah. They're both there. And very furry." Maira says.

Endears mouth twists down in a snarl. "Uma tricked me. That *witch*."

"So... You'll remove it?" Carlos asks.

Endora's shadowed face glances towards Maira, Mahina, and I. "I can't."

"Why not?" Arson asks.

"Because I cursed them that way." Endora says. And then her hand reaches up and she pulls back her hood. She has honey-gold hair that curls past her shoulder blades and bright green eyes that sort of feel like lasers reading my every secret. To my surprise, she's actually wearing makeup that gives her a striking, fighter look. She unclasps the cloak and throws it on the ground behind her. She's wearing blue jeans with ripped knees and gold converse. A green jacket is rolled up to her elbows, with a white shirt and the golden silhouette of a rose on it. Her nails are painted gold and green, her

right hand holding a long, thin white wand with minuscule gold designs.

[image]

She crosses her arms, twirling her wand around. "I cursed Adam and Ben in a very specific way. They'd pay for their mistakes. They never should have put my mother on the Isle."

"But Ben didn't!" I protest. "Neither did the entire male population of Auradon!"

Endora eyes me. "I realize that. But Adam made an unforgivable mistake. My mother saw his future. He was destined to die alone and evil until she changed his story."

"He was scared." Carlos says.

"Well, he shouldn't have been." Endora hisses. Her eyes blaze green like Mal's sometimes do. "My mother made his life the best it could possibly be, like she did with so many others before Adam banished her."

"Can you see the future too?" I ask.

Endora turns to me. "Yes. I can. Why?" Her eyes lose the fire and are replaced with a twinkling that is almost hypnotic. "Wondering what paths are ahead of you?"

Carlos grabs my shoulders and shakes me. The dreamlike quality of Endora's eyes fade away. "Don't look her directly in the eye." Carlos insists.

Endora smiles. "Just a bit of fun, Carlos. But yes, I can see the future every so often. I don't like doing it, though, because it brought nothing but trouble for my mother."

"Is your mom still on the Isle?" Maira asks.

"Yes."

"If we brought her here, would she lift the curse?" Mahina asks.

"I've already told you. It cannot be lifted. It has to be cured." Endora says.

"Cured *how?*" Carlos asks.

"Well, like my mother, I believe people deserve second chances. Not Adam, of course, but Auradon deserved a chance to redeem itself." Endora says. "So I built in a breaker."

"Breaker?"

"Something I can sense but can't activate." Endora explains. "Even I don't know what the cure is. But it will get rid of my curse."

"Any hints?" I suggest.

"I don't have anything." Endora says. "I know it should sort of reflect my mom's curse, since I used the same spell for this round of beasts."

"So... love?" Mahina guesses.

"Well, like I said, I really don't know." Endora says. "But it would have to be powerful."

Mahina gives a dreamy smile that reminds me of how she was before she came to Auradon. "True love's kiss." She mutters.

Endora nods, like we're talking about something that isn't totally Princess Bride-y. "That could do it. But true love almost never happens. *Ever.* That's why Uma wanted to use Ben. Because she didn't expect Mal to be his true love. Believe me, when she stormed back to the Isle's barrier, she was so mad she was almost steaming."

"Okay, not to sound like the trolls my aunt Anna went to see..." I say. "But that wouldn't fix everybody. There is no way everybody could find their true love." *Plus,* I add silently, *I want a lass embarrassing cure for my boyfriend....* Because I really don't want to find out he's meant for somebody else. There is no way somebody like him is meant for somebody like me.

Endora shrugs. "Well, it would have to be something as powerful.

Like forgiveness, or... Well, no, actually, those are the only two I can think of."

I snort. "Oh, boy. Please don't tell me I have to forgive Chad and Ned to turn them back."

Endora turns her green fire gaze to me. For a second, she's silent. "No." she says. "They weren't turned into beasts."

"They *weren't?*" Carlos sputters. "But I know for a fact that were at school!"

"They're already the worst form of themselves." Endora explains. "With everybody else, their Beast selves are the bad parts of themselves, the worst qualities. They're *literally* the worst qualities of themselves."

For some reason, I find that incredibly hilarious.

"What would our bad qualities be, though?" Carlos asks. But when I glance sidelong at him, I can see in his eyes he already knows the answer.

"Only you know that." Endora says. "I can't tell you."

"So... we basically have to find our own cures." Carlos says.

"Great, because we don't already have enough on our plates." Maira complains.

Endora shrugs. "Well, since you guys obviously aren't here to arrest me, I'll be leaving." She gathers her cloak up and raises her wand.

"Wait!" Carlos yells. "I have to know---Why'd you expose Ellie and me like that?"

Endora looks confused. "Expose you?"

"Take those pictures of us on our date here." I say. "And tell the news we were coming back."

Endora's gaze hardens. "I never came to the lake before today. It

wasn't me."

Ta-da!

Hope everybody enjoyed this chapter!

Tomorrow is my last day of summer before I start high school. I'm so nervous.... has anyone else started high school already? Was it bad?

(Also, WHY IS MY SCHOOL SO STUPID??? WHY AM I STARTING SCHOOL ON A FRIDAY ONLY TO GO TO WEEKEND RIGHT AFTER????)

Okay I'm done complaining. Bye!

Beast's Battle

"What do you mean, it wasn't you?" Maira demands. "The news people told us it was someone named Endora who sent the pictures and tips in."

Endora shakes her head. "It wasn't me, I swear. Remember, I thought Carlos was in Corona? And I couldn't care less about Icy here."

"And yet I was the one you played around with when we got here." I muttered.

She shrugs. "I had to see if Uma was right about you."

"And was she?"

"Heck no. She said you were a useless piece of junk that couldn't help yourself and had to rely on others to save your butt."

"Gee, thanks."

"That's why I messed with you. And she's wrong. She just doesn't like admitting that she lost because of you and Mal's little group."

She raises her wand yet again but hesitates. "Carlos, you said you were dating Icy."

"Um. Yeah?"

"No hard feelings. But Icy?" She turns to look at me. "You hurt him, I'll come after you and zap you so many times you won't even remember your own name."

"Uh, okay." Maira breaks in between Endora and me with her palms out. "All that aside, let me get this straight. You *don't* want to hurt anybody, right? Or at least, you're not on Uma's side."

Endora gives Maira a dirty look. "No, I'm not on Uma's side. But I do

want to get back at Adam."

"Then come back with us." Maira suggests. "You can help us fix the problem, and then Ben---remember, the king that's *not* Adam anymore?---can set you and your mom free. And anyone else that doesn't deserve to be there. He's been trying to, remember? With Dizzy, Brit, Gil?"

Ednora glares at her. She doesn't answer for a moment. "You really think he would?" She finally says.

"Did you just---Did you *read my mind?*" Maira demands.

"Yes."

"Okay, if you come back with us, reading minds is a no-no." Maira instructs. "You in or not?"

Endora considers it for a moment. "Fine. I'll bring us back." She raises her wand and waves it before any of us can say anything. This feels way different than Jane's magic or my poof-y-ness. It feels harsher, almost like it's pushing against us while transporting us across the country.

And the gold sparkles fade and we're standing in the courtyard with Beast's statue. Endora smiles with satisfaction and slides her wand up her jacket sleeve. Somehow, her sleeve looks the same.

And then a bunch of alarms go off.

Before we can react, electric blue magic fills the air and none of us can move. FG appears, along with Adam (Who looks like an older version of Ben's Beast.)

"Ellie! Carlos!" FG yelps. "What are you---how did---"

Adam sees Endora. "YOU!" He roars and starts forward only to get stuck in the blue magic.

Endora sighs and slips out of the blue energy. "Believe me, Beasty, if I had wanted to hurt you, I would've tracked you to your not-so-secure office and ambushed you there." She takes her wand back

out and we're all freed from the magic except for Beast. FG waves her wand and Beast gets freed soon after. He glares at our group.

"Why is she here?" he demands.

"She's here to help." I assure him. He doesn't look convinced. "She never meant to get Carlos, Gil, Arson, and Jay. She just wanted to get you back since you put her mom on the Isle."

He looks guilty. "For good reason!"

"Not for good reason, you moronic excuse for a king!" Endora yells, brandishing her wand. "My mother saved your life!"

"She changed it!"

"Yeah, because she saw that every single other future you had, you died alone and miserable!"

He harrumphs. "Fine. You're not here to murder everyone. But I'm still posting a legion of guards near you!"

Endora sighs and waves her wand. A miniature army of little pixies appear. Hovering in mid-air, they're all completely still expect for one. He punches his right fist into his left palm two times.

Adam blanches and seems to battle with himself for a moment. Then he sighs and waves his hand. "Fine. FINE! Fairy Godmother, keep an eye on her."

"Yes, your Majesty." She bows.

_____

Okay. This one is shorter than normal. I wanted to update today, because A) I'm going on a trip and won't be able to post again until Monday, and maybe not even then. And B) TODAY WAS MY FIRST DAY OF HIGH SCHOOL! It was *meh* until my last hour, which was intro the acting. IT. WAS. AWESOME.

Okay. Enough for now. Bye!

My Life Seriously Sucks

Endora seems to be having way too much fun.

Every few seconds while we're walking, she waves her wand and something either changes color or grows in size. FG silently fixes everything but seems to get more annoyed as Endora continues. Until she finally turns around and glares at Endora with more anger than I've ever seen in the kindly woman's face.

Endora glares back, perfectly calm. "I'm helping only because I cursed my friends. No other reason."

FG huffs out but keeps walking.

"Where are we going, exactly?" I ask.

"The Isle of the Lost." FG says. I run through Arradon's layout in my head, and we are heading towards the limo parking lot.

"Why?" Carlos asks.

"Because Shrimp'll be the only one who might be able to tell us what could reverse it." Endora tells me, twirling her wand. "I can make people tell the truth, whether they want to or not. Don't worry. If she knows how, we'll get it."

"Are you sure that's smart?" Maira asks, crossing her arms over her chest. "The last time we tried something like this, Uma and everybody very nearly took over Auradon. Remember? And then everything with Ellie happened... and... yeah."

We all look at her.

"What? It's true!"

"Well, if Uma had never captured Ellie in the first place, I would never have escaped." Endora says.

"Yes, and we're all delighted you were here to give Ellie and Carlos' date location away, and turn everybody into beasts." Maira says, her voice dripping with sarcasm.

Endora glares at her. "For the last time, I did *not* give away their location! I have no idea who did! I wouldn't give away my friend's secrets like that!" She shouts. Her face is a deep pink, and her fists are balled at her sides, sparks exploding from the end of her wand.

"Okay, geez. No need to get angry." Maira mutters.

"There is reason to get angry!" Endora yells. "I hate being judged! My mom has spent years on the Isle because someone deemed her evil when she was the farthest you could be!! And I am sick of getting those looks soley because I come from the stupid ISLE OF THE LOST!" she screams. Gold and green sparks jump around us, grabbing us in a few milliseconds and dissipating with us surrounded by Uma's crew on her ship.

"Oh, crap." Endora mutters.

Uma's face splits into a grin. "Well! I gotta say, nice job Eddie!"

Endora rolls her eyes. "Oh my gosh, Uma, I've told you I hate that name. If you're going to shorten my given name without my permission, at least call me Dori. It's what I prefer."

"Fine, Dori." Uma says, waving her hand. "But good job! And I see Arson and Carlos have gotten their fair share of beasty-ness. I'ma guess Ben is that way, too?"

"Yes, he is. You told me Carlos was somewhere else!" Endora says. I notice her wand is twitching. And as Uma's eyes survey over all of us, she skips over FG. Then she lands on me and her grin grows, if possible, bigger.

"Well! Icy's got herself on the Isle once again. I'm glad." She cracks her knuckles. "I've been waiting for way too long to get you back, Ice Queen."

I bend my knees ever so slightly, putting my hands out on either side of myself. Blue fire blazes in each palm. "I'd like to see you try."

She just laughs. "Nice eye. And nice scars." She traces one of my deeper ones on her own face. "Glad to see your pretty little face didn't leave unscathed."

I notice two pirates sneaking up behind me holding blue fabric, and I twist around, grabbing each of them and tossing them in the water with those stupid gloves. "Nice try, Shrimp. I am never wearing those things again if I have anything to say about it."

Uma nods a bit then turns back to Endora. "So I'm guessing Sera's still under?"

Arson roars and charges Uma, who just sidesteps him and lets him crash headfirst into the wood behind her. Four pirates grab him and hold him down. Uma steps forward again.

"One down... four to go." She says.

I wave my hand and her arms are jerked behind her back, tied with black smoke. "One down." I say in a whiny voice. "A billion stupid pirates to go."

She growls, pulling at the bonds. "Dori?"

Endora just shakes her head. "No way, Uma. You lied to me. You just wanted revenge on Ben and Elicia."

"Uh, please don't call me Elicia. Even Icy is better than that." I say.

"Fine. Icy." Endora says, giving me something close to a smirk. She twirls her wand. "Now, you're going to tell me the cure for my spell. I told you it before I left."

"Why can't you just do it?" Mahina asks.

"Because, once I cast a spell, I forget the cure. It's a side effect from growing up on the non-magicky Isle." Endora explains, twirling her wand again. Gold sparkles come out once again, and the entire pirate crew freezes. She turns to Arson and helps him up. Then she turns to us again. "We've got ten minutes before the spell wears off. Kay?"

"I can help with that." I tell her. I snap my fingers and all the pirates are coated in a thick layer of ice.

She nods in approval. "Now. Shrimp. Answer the question. Oh, and by the way---" She points her wand at FG and the air shimmers around her. Uma's jaw drops.

"You!" she snarls.

"Hello, Uma." FG says cheerfully.

"Now. Cure." Endora says. "And remember... Even on the Isle, my wand works wonders."

"Too bad yo had to steal it from the museum." Uma taunts.

FG doesn't even flinch. "I already knew of the theft." She assures us. "I just didn't realize it until I checked yesterday."

Uma growls again. "Ugh! Fine. I'll tell you the stupid cure. But..." she glances wickedly at me. "It won't work for anyone but a few people who are willing to try."

I try to keep my face neutral.

"It's---" Uma starts.

And then, of course, everything went chaotic.

I felt a slight movement in the air behind me and I twisted around but all I found was a sword point at my throat. The person dug the tip deeper, cutting into my skin.

"Ellie!" Carlos yelps, trying to lumber over but getting caught in a burly, sunglassed-man's arms. Ares nods at me, grinning.

I focus not on the sword tip, but on the person's face. Anger makes my vision cloud over.

"You. Have. Got. To. Be. *Kidding.* Me." I growl.

"Welcome back to the Isle." Hans Jr. says. He's holding a small box

with a red button on it. He presses it once and a small light starts beeping on Maira's bag. "Now, unless you want me to blow this ship up, you'll corporate."

This chapter might not be my best... But I felt really bad that I haven't updated in a while. So, I did this! :)

Okay, seriously, I am sorry. I just started high school up, and it's HECTIC. I've barely had time for Ellie! *cri* As you could probably tell, updates will now be much less frequent. I know I've said that before, but this time it's true. Sorry!

Hope you guys enjoyed! Bye!!!!!!

The Wide-Awake Princess (Of Sarcastic Violence)

Maira doesn't move an inch, staring in shock at the red light on her bag. "How did this get on me?" she demands through her teeth.

Hans Jr. just smiles greasily. "Just a lucky toss." He tells her, digging his sword into my throat.

Endora looks scared for the first time. "Let them go, Hans." she commands.

"Why? You send a few sparkles my way?" He chuckles. "I'm not scared of some girl who decides to get revenge soley because Uma slipped it in her mind."

Said Shrimp glares at Hans Jr. "I wouldn't make fun yet, Dung boy. That wand is capable of more than you know. So is Fairy Godmother's."

He glares at FG and then Endora. "Either of you try something, this ship blows to pieces."

Endora's grip on her wand tightens. FG looks hesitant to try something just yet. Carlos shuffles on the deck of the boat, somehow still looking nervous as a ten-foot monster. Although I guess having Ares' arms wrapped around your neck helps.

(And I take that back. Carlos could never be a monster. Just an extra-large puppy. With fangs. And claws.)

I try to breathe out, but Hans Jr. just digs his sword in more. "Don't think I'm giving any chance for you to get out of this, Ice Queen. I let you go twice, I'm not making that mistake again!"

"Let me *go?*" I demand. "I kicked your---" he presses in further and I squeak. "---butt."

He laughs, an inch from my face. "A fact I'll fix before today's over."

Out of the corner of my eye, I catch Endora's eye color warping in the air, like heat waves do sometimes. The green seems to glow ever so slightly, along with the tip of her wand.

Please keep monologuing. I pray.

Thankfully, this is this is the child of Hans of the Southern Isles we're talking about. Being self-centered and talkative is his forte.

"My dad never thought you'd come back here in a million years. Any of you. 'cept maybe you, Dori." He eases back on my throat, just enough so he's not cutting me. "But Arson...Oh hey, Ar, is Sera up yet?"

Arson growls and starts to charge, but Hans' sword is away from my throat and at Arson's in a second. My hand jumps up to massage the bleeding area, and Hans uses his free hand to grab my wrist and twist it behind me, so that I'm no longer facing everybody else. Perfect.

"Uma's original plan to get off the Isle was brilliant." Hans says. "But it failed. So we have a new plan." He twists my arm further, my shoulder making a popping sound. "This little girl has her uses, and she came right to us."

I groan, fighting the black fog in my vision. "Did you just call me a *little girl?*"

"Uh, you scream like a five-year-old, Hans." I hear Carlos argue.

I grin. "Thanks."

"Any---" He squeaks. "---time."

I hear Ares sigh. "Enough of this. Slit the girl's throat and be done with it! We delay this any longer, and she'll weasel her way out like her infernal mother always did."

"Our friends normally have un-slitted throats, thank you." Mahina puts in. I realize this is the first she's said since we got here. Why

has she been keeping quiet?

"That's what they always say." Hans Jr laughs. I hear his sword slice around, obviously away from Arson now, and then Hans Jr pulls me in front again. Arson is on the ground, with three long scarlet cuts on his stomach.

"Arson!" I yelp, my reflexes taking over. I bring my foot up and kick backward, smashing my heel against Hans Jr.'s thigh. He yells and shoves me away. I barely avoid falling on my face, coming up with my hands alight, dancing with my mom's side of my powers. I snap my fingers and Hans' finger freezes in place, inches from the button that would activate the explosive on Maira.

Maira sighs with relief and pries the beeping red gadget off her bag. Staring at it with distaste, she throws an awesome long pitch out into the ocean. A small explosion erupts, waves cresting just barely over the edge of the boat.

Maira grins. "Ah, a job well done. Now..." We all turn to Ares, who's staring at me with more hate than I've ever seen on any sane person.

He doesn't let go of Carlos. "You think you've won, girl?" He hisses at me.

"Why does everybody target *me?*" I complain.

"Because you've got the powers of the freaking god of death, and the---basically---goddess of snow!" Maira snaps.

"My mom's not a goddess."

"No, but everyone knows that those powers originated from Khione." Maira says. "Duh."

I vaguely remember Ares mentioning that. "Okay, fair enough. I am pretty awesome."

"Man, Sera wore off on you." Maira complains. "Even though I only knew her for like a week."

Carlos' eyes bulge as Ares tightens his grip. "Shut up, you two! Now get down on the ground and stay there, or I'll snap your boyfriend's neck!"

I stop laughing. I really need to learn to pay attention to people when they're threatening to kill someone.

FG fidgets nervously. Endora shows no emotions, but her eyes and wand are still warping.

"DO IT NOW!" Ares warns, taking one hand from around Carlos' neck to snap his fingers. Fire blazes from his hand, melting all the pirates, including Hans Jr. Carlos' face starts turning purple, so I silently let my hands go out and start kneeling down. Pirates pull my arms behind me, luckily no gloves though. FG follows next, one of the pirates grabbing her wand. Mahina kneels quietly, not even fighting when one of the pirates grabs her arms and pins them behind her. Maira goes down too, grabbing Arson's wrist before one of the pirates grabs her.

Only Endora is left standing. Her eyes stop warping, and she smirks. She snaps her fingers and her wand disappears in a poof. Then she kneels down next to me.

Help is on the way. Her voice whispers in my mind.

I barely contain my flinch. *What do you mean?* I think back. Her voice doesn't respond, she just shakes back her honey gold hair and puts her hands behind her back before the pirates can.

Ares looks a bit uncomfortable at her easy surrender, but he pushes Carlos away and pirates pile on top of him. I wince as he chokes.

"Aw... Y'all didn't have to kneel." says a familiar voice behind me. I turn and my heart stops in my throat. "I guess this is how Ben must feel." The newcomer scrunches her nose up. "It's weird. Don't do it again, I say."

Then they put both hands up in the air, and slam them down on the deck. A ring of fire explodes from their palms, knocking everyone but our small group off of the boat.

Sera straightens up. "That's right. The jaw drops are needed. I'm back!"

Okay... DEEP breath.

**YAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA
AAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA
AAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA
AAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA
AAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA
AAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA
AAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA
AAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA
AAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA
AAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA
AAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA
AAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA
AAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA
AAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA
AAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA
AAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA
AAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA
AAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA
AAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA
AAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA
AAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA
AAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA
AAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAY!!!!!**

Need I say anything else?

Hope everybody enjoyed! Please comment and vote and stuff!

("And stuff".... I'm tired. Don't judge.)

XD

One thing, though: Who has heard "Born Ready" By Dove Cameron??? AMAZING, RIGHT???

And "Rumors" By Sofia Carson and R3HAB!!!!! AAAH!!!! I'M SO ADDICTED!!!!!

Okay. Bye!

Sera

[image]

(The picture above was the FIRST EVER image that I made for Sera. I made this the day after I created Sera, guys, so don't judge if she's different now. Actually, she's a LOT different. So just... Idk.)

_____

My friend (in real life) pointed out that she wanted to see some outfits of Ellie's so here ya go!

Ellie's date with Carlos at the enchanted lake: (Ignore the girl. NOTICE THE DRESS Put black converse with it! And a blue leather jacket! and give her filmy, silky sleeves that drape easily halfway to her elbow.)

[image]

Couldn't find any pictures that fit Ellie's current outfit. Just imagine white shirt with blue snowflakes on it, the NEW jacket Evie made, (blue with white beaded snowflakes and black glitter) and blue converse and regular jeans.

Hope you enjoyed! If you want to see another specific outfit, comment it and I might add it in!

_____

Sera laughs at all our dumbfounded expressions. "No need for *that* dramatic of jaw-drops, guys."

I quickly scan her for signs that she's an illusion. She has her hands on her hips, wearing fingerless leather gloves and a black tank top with a dark red torn vest over it. Black jeans with rips up and down her legs, and brown combat boots. Her hair is limper than normal, but still deep black with red braids and a red glint in her eyes.

Granted, she does look a little skinnier than normal, but she's glowing with a red aura, like she's ready to punch anyone. And she's grinning like mad.

"SERA!" Arson bellows, heaving himself up off the ground and staggering towards his sister. Her face suddenly becomes alarmed as she catches her brother just as he faints.

She glances up at us. "I leave you for one measly year and everything goes to heck!" She gently lays Arson down. "What *happened* to you guys?" Her eyes lay on me and bug out. "ICY?! What's with the Heterochromia??"

I sigh. "I like how you notice my eye, and you don't notice the fact that your brother was a Beast."

Sera shrugs. "Eh. He's always looked like tha'. But Carlos, I gotta say, ya look taller."

"Oh, ha ha." Carlos winces and rubs his neck.

Sera dusts her hands off. "We better get back to Boring-don, or king Ben'll have my head. Everybody ready? Dori, you doin' it fer me?"

Endora nods and her wand shimmers back into her hand. "Everyone grab hands. And... er.... Someone hold onto Arson."

Sera grabs me with one hand and Arson with another. Carlos nabs my other hand and people start circling the rest of the way. Endora puts one hand on Arson and then waves her wand. This time, it doesn't even feel like we move but when I blink again we're in the hospital.

Endora lowers her wand. Golden sparkles flare from her eyes and gather underneath Arson, lifting him up and following her to the nearest empty room. She opens the door without even asking the doctor in the room, who appears to be asleep on the counter. He snores loudly. Even for a Beast, this practically shakes the room.

She slams her hand next to his head and he jumps. "EH? I---Three!" he blinks. "Er, who are you?"

Sera grunts. "Dr. Adams. 'Member me?"

"Sera. Yes. Wait----weren't you---but---you---how---"

Sera sighs. "Don't focus on the fact that I'm awake. Just keep my brother alive." She shoves her furry brother into his equally furry arms.

The doctor looks down at Arson in confusion, then at the rest of us. "Er... All right?" He carries Arson over to the bed and lays him down. He starts examining the cuts through his fur as best he can.

"What happened?" the doctor asks.

"They went to the Isle to try and figure out what could cure..." Sera waves around at the furry mess. "That."

The doctor's face grows dark. "And you got attacked."

"Well, we didn't exactly *mean* to go. We were unprepared." Maira says.

Mahina nods. "Endora accidentally sent us there."

"Endora?" The doctor asks, scanning the room and his gaze landing on Endora. She gives a tiny smile and his glare deepens. "You're the one who put us in this mess!"

Her smile wavers. "I---I---Yeah. I did."

He glares harder. "You're lucky I don't have nay fancy powers. If I were you, I' go walk around outside for a bit. See what happens."

Endora pales.

"Doc, it ain't her fault. Shrimpette tricked her." Sera growls, putting a hand on Endora's shoulder.

Everyone turns to stare at Sera.

"What?" She demands.

"Why are you defending her?" I ask. "And while we're on the

subject, Endora, how'd you know Sera was coming? She's been asleep all year!"

Sera winces. "Actually, I just looked asleep. I could hear and see everything going on."

Mahina's eyes go wide. "Oh....Poor you..." She murmurs.

Sera rolls her eyes. "Yeah, yeah. Poor me."

"Back to the question?" I wave my hands. "How'd you know?"

Endora sighs and shrugs Sera's hand off of her. "Because I was the one keeping her under all that time."

To our surprise, Sera is the only one who doesn't explode in anger. Endora raises her hands. "STOP! It was for a good reason!"

Sera grunts. "Gotta get used ta these guys. When they care, they *care.*"

"Why are you so okay with this?" Carlos demands.

"Because, like she said, it was for a good reason." Sera says. "Uh...You explain it. I still don' fully get it, Dori."

Endora sighs. "Fine. Well, you guys know Ares used their powers to escape. And Ar woke up quickly after. You ever wonder *why?*"

"Why?" Arson slurs from the bed.

"Hi, Ar. And because I talked with Sera while she was comatose." Endora says.

Another round of shouting crops up, with Endora waiting for us to stop. "A long time ago, Sera and I became friends when Uma and her crew started picking on Arson and I helped Sera kick their butts. I told her Uma would get her back for it, and she just grinned and said she had me to help her now. So I asked her if I could do a really simple spell, one of the only ones I could do at the time, that basically tells me when she's in mortal danger.

Sera grunts. "Tha's the first time ya've sensed it."

Endora nods. "Yeah, she can take care of herself most of the time. Anyway, I'm on Auradon that day you guys came back, when I get this weird tingling down my spine."

"Spidey-sense?" Sera and I say at the same time. Then we stare at each other.

"Man, I forgot how it felt to have another super-geek around." I say happily. She grins.

Endora sighs. "Sure, whatever spidey-sense means. But I knew what it meant, so I tracked it to the hospital, being invisible of course, and found Sera. You were in the room when I got there, actually." She looks at me.

"Really? Wow, your magic must be pretty powerful."

"Uh, yeah. You haven't figured that out by now?" Endora smirks.

Carlos waves his paw around. "Uh, explanation, please? I'm still confused."

"I am as well." Mahina says.

"Ditto." Maira adds.

Endora nods. "Right. So, once Ellie here left, I just...touched her forehead and I could hear her thoughts. After a bit of concentration, she could hear mine. But I could also sense her problem."

"Problem?" Maira demands.

"Ares didn't realize how much power he sapped out. But Arson..." Endora swallows. "It was killing him. So Sera offered to put a bit of herself into him. It was tricky magic, but I did it. That's why Arson woke up so fast."

"But what was that about you keeping her under?" Mahina presses.

"I had to. Her mind wanted to wake up, wanted to help, wanted to

kick Ares' butt." Sera grins and nods. "But her...core, I guess. Where her magic centered, wasn't ready. If she had woken up any sooner, she would have---best case scenario---lost her memory and all function of her body and worst cast, lost her life."

Sera whistles. "A'ight, yaaay, Dori. Now ya guys understand?"

Everybody nods except Arson, who has a giant scowl on his face as the doctor works on him. "You wen' under on purpose." he accuses.

Sera nods, crossing her arms. "Ar, it was killing you. If I hadn't you wouldn't be here and I'd...I can't..."

Arson loses his scowl and motions her over. For one of the only times I've ever seen her, she shows an emotional side of her and crawls next to his hulking form, hugging him. I note that she carefully avoids his cuts.

Everyone in the room, including Maira and Endora, has sappy smiles on their faces until Sera looks up and glares. "Ah, shut it, you guys. I haven't seen 'im in a year. Gimme a break."

"Uh, you haven't seen *any* of us in a year." I point out.

She gets up and holds her arms out. "Why? You wanna hug?"

I laugh and actually do hug her, which seems to surprise her. I feel her head look around there best of the room. "None ya'll getting' hugs." She says smugly.

Sera pulls back and tugs on my black bang. "Dizzy?"

"Dizzy." I confirm.

"Well, what're we standin' here for?" Sera laughs. "I gotta go see the look on everybody else's faces when I waltz in!"

This was kinda a fluff chapter. But I love having Sera back, so I felt she deserved attention.

Who has seen the new trailer for Under The Sea?? EHH?? SOOO GOOD!!!! CANNOT WAIT!!!!

I hope you guys loved having Sera back as much as I did.

Comment and enjoy!

(Seriously. ENJOY. I'ma be done with this story, soon...) ;)

Dori Didn't Take The Pictures

Their faces were priceless, all right.

Jay spewed out the drink he had in his mouth, Mal and Evie both fell out of their chairs, Ben jumps so hard he knocks over two lamps, Dizzy screams along with Brit, and Kalia keeps reading her book, nodding at Sera like she just saw her yesterday.

Sera nods back.

"S-s-sera??" Jay stutters.

"Hey, Jay. 'Sup, E?" Sera winks at everybody.

Evie gapes at her from the floor.

Arson grins madly. "She back!"

"Duh." Mal grumbles, pulling herself off the floor.

Brit's mouth flops up and down like a fish.

I step up next to her.

"Ellie!" Ben exclaims. "What---how----is---"

"It's kinda a long story." I admit. "But the thing is, she's back. For good, hopefully."

"Aw, Icy, I never knew ya cared so much!"

"Uh, you were gone for a year. And it was kind of my fault."

"How was it yer fault?" Sera demands. "My dad's a complete moron, he captures my brother, and you try to save us. Ya'll have such weird "my fault" labels."

I can't resist smiling. "All right, I guess it wasn't too much my fault."

Sera snickers. "Don't forget about Shrimp."

"Yeah. Her too." I agree.

"B-b-but... How... You.." Ben splutters.

Sera throws her arm over my shoulders. "Ah, look at 'em, all cute with'eir mouths open." She coos.

Arson can't contain his grin.

Everyone continues to stare at Sera. She finally glares at them. "Oy. I'm awake. Move on, already!"

They all nod numbly. She rolls her eyes and claps her hands so loud my ears pop. "MOVE ON!" she yells, waving her hands around.

They all start and stop staring like buffoons. "Sorry." Dizzy says. Then she and Brit run forward and hug Sera. Sera grunts and hugs them back, smiling despite herself. She nods at the rest of the group.

"So, what's happened while I've been gone?" She asks. "Other than Miss Heterchromia, here."

"Uh...." Ben sighs. "You've missed a lot."

"No duh." Sera sits. She plops down criss-cross on the ground. "Spill, my dudes."

Three hours later, we're at my homecoming, and Sera can't contain her giggles. "Carlie is finally alive!" she crows.

I can practically feel my face heat up. "Oh, shut up."

She keeps snorting and laughing her head off. "I can't believe you guys couldn't wait a few more weeks before kissin'! I could'a taped it all!"

"The press go plenty of pictures of us, thank you." I snap.

"Press?" Sera asks.

"You didn't let us get to that part yet." I say. "We went to the Enchanted Lake, and someone took pictures of us there. We came back and there was this huge crowd of reporters, and they--"

"They barged against 'em and asked stupid questions that were none of their business." Maira breaks in.

"Yeah. Pretty much that." Carlos agrees.

"Close enough." I acknowledge. "Anyway, we were sent this awful hate mail and stuff, and Carlos got this envelope that had a red finger hex in it, and... what'd the note say?"

"Your hands are stained as much as hers, now." Carlos says instantly.

"Stained?" Sera asks.

"They thought I'd been killing a bunch of people." I sigh. "Because of who my dad is."

Sera flushes red. "Where're these reporters? I wanna go break their noses. And ankles. And maybe their skulls."

"See, nobody thinks *she's* a murderer." Carlos grumbles.

I shush him. "Anyway, I took Carlos to the lake to wash it all out, and by then we'd gotten this note that said Endora was the one who took the pictures and told the press when we were coming, but---"

"Hold it. You tried to ruin Carlie, Dori?" Sera demands.

Endora rolls her eyes. "I don't even know what Carlie *is.* And for the last time, I was NOT the one who did that!"

Sera raises her hands in defense. "Sheesh! Fine!"

"You didn't let me get past it." I say. "We went to the lake, and then Maira showed up and told us everyone was Beasts, and then Carlos turned, and we went back and everything started... y'know. Doing

what it normally does for us."

"Falling to Ch-aos?" Sera suggests, making a 'ch' sound instead of 'k'.

"It's *chaos*." Endora sighs. "And yeah. I turned everyone, they came after me, blah, we got sent to the Isle, blah blah, you came back, blah blah blah. Okay! Story's over! Yay! Can we please find who used my name now?"

Sera stands up and brushes her legs off. "Why don't you just use the reveal spell?"

Endears face goes slack with shock. "Oh! I hadn't even thought of that. Thanks, Sera!"

Sera waves her hand, pretending to blush and flutter her eyelashes. "Ah, yer too much."

Endora waves her wand. "Find the truth, find it now. Find it now, I don't care how!" She snaps her wand downward and a poof of sparkles appears, shaping into a person.

I groan loud and long. "Why am I not surprised??" I yell, tearing at my hair.

Ares looks around in shock. "What the..."

Sera rubs her fist, grinning greedily. "Dori?"

She waves her wand and Ares seems to lose a bit of his red glow. "Already done."

"Good."

She punches Ares in the nose.

"OW!" he yelps, his voice a few octaves higher.

She punches him four more times, then kicks him hard in the shin and steps back. Arson grabs him, throws him over his head, and down on the ground. I step near him and just snap my fingers. Blue flame shoots out and Ares turns a sickly gray, then freezes over. I

kneel down and tap on his frozen forehead. "You. Are. A---"

"Sicko!"

"Jerk!"

"MORON!" people keep chiming in.

"I was going to say slimy little cockroach." I admit. I stand up. "But good guesses."

I stand up again and Endora waves her wand. Are disappears. "Now that we know... Why don't we find a way to get rid of this Beatyness?"

Arson pouts. "I like bein' big."

Sera ruffles his hair. "Sure ya do, big guy."

"I DON'T!" The rest of the guys yell. All the girls laugh.

_____

Sorry I haven't updated. I'm just super busy.

Anyway, I hope you guys enjoyed. See you next time.

Harry Hook's Horrible (Something That Means Confession That Starts With "H"!)

Before I start----I have an announcement.

There will be this chapter and two more after this before THIS section of Ellie is finished with. I'm going to be at 70 chapters then, and I'd like it if I rounded it off in a good solid number.

After I finish the next three chapters, I will be starting a NEW Elicia, in which I will continue Ellie's story with some more of my own story-spins (MAYBE Under The Sea) and Descendants 3.

Since I am super busy, and I can't think of a good title, I wanted to ask you guys. If you think you have a good title for Ellie's new book, comment! I want to hear ideas!

The only problem will be, my school has blocked Wattpad on MY computer, so I have to use my father's computer for this stuff. Aaaand, since it's HIS computer, not mine...I don't have access to MY drive. Anything I save will go to HIS, not mine. And I'm not sure he'd appreciate a bunch of snowflake/fire/ Hades/KillerFrost/Descendants stuff crammed into his drive.

So...After I find the right title and everything... it will still be just a blank background.

(In theory, I COULD give my password to someone with access to a drive, and THEY could do it...But I don't want to do that. Then whoever got my password could get sneak peeks in Ellie chapters!)

(...and hack my account. Boo!)

Anyway. I've prolonged this enough.

Hope you guys enjoy!

"Only one more problem." Endora says.

"Yeah!" Carlos says. "We need to get back to being HUMAN!"

Endora scratches her chin. "Wellllllllllllllll....Do we *really*?"

"Yes!" Every boy yells.

She laughs and holds her hands up in surrender. "I was kidding!"

I roll my eyes with Sera's arm twitching over my shoulder as she laughs. "Very funny, Endora. But I would like my boyfriend to be normal size, not twice my height. And not covered in fur."

"What fun would Carlie be if half of it was Fur-lie?" Sera snickers.

"Sera!" Carlos complains.

I laugh with her, completely as ease now that she's back. I mean, sure. My boyfriend is still furry and gigantic, but Sera is back! For good, hopefully.

Everything has changed since she's come back. Suddenly everything is one big joke again, and we no longer fret over every little thing. Even the boys seem a bit less grumpy about their Beast-y-ness.

Brit giggles. "I have to say, I enjoy seeing everyone complaining about how itchy they are."

"Brit!" Half the room exclaims.

We all crack up in laughter. Endora waves her wand. "Seriously, though, we need to figure out how to fix you guys."

"We've been ignoring it for a bit." Carlos agrees.

"Aw, c'mon, you guys were just givin' me a welcome home!" Sera giggles girlishly, shoving me playfully.

I laugh, shoving her back. "How can you blame us? You've been gone for a year!"

"So have you, Icy." She teases, tugging on my blue bang.

I slap her away, grinning. Endora rolls her eyes at us. "You two are almost as bad as Carlie, here." She gestures to Carlos.

"Uh, are you talking about me, or the ship?" Carlos asks, confused.

She feigns innocence. "Oh! I thought that was your name now."

Everyone glares at her. She shrugs. "Just trying to lighten the mood."

"Well, it's not helping." Gil scratches his arm. "I wish I could just shave it all off."

"Dad tried that." Ben says. "He told me it just grew back."

"Well, maybe if we could figure out *what* would be the cure, we'd be better off." Dizzy suggests. "We know it has to have something to do with love, kinda, right?"

"My spells always do." Endora says.

Mahina's eyes light up. "Oh! Uma almost told us! On the boat! What if we have her tell us?"

Endora nods her head slowly. "Well...we'd need to make sure we didn't get ambushed again."

"Although, with Uma, there's really no way to avoid it." I sigh.

Maira groans. "You got a point, Icy. No matter what we ever do, Uma always ends up winning in some twisted, shrimpy way."

Sera snickers. "I love that ya guys are still callin' her Shrimp."

"Well, it does fit her." Mal admits.

Sera saunters over to Endora and hooks her arm over her neck. Endora glances at her for a few seconds before looking away again. "Just send us there!" Sera says suddenly. "We pop in, threaten Shrimp a bit until she tells us how to reverse the fuzzies, and pop out!"

"It is *never* that easy." I complain.

"Yeah, that's why we'll be takin' ya, Icy!" She rubs her hands together greedily. "With yer awesome powers, my awesome powers, and Endora's sparkles, we're bound ta win!"

Maira coughs.

"Got somethin' to say, Miss Scottish Person?" Sera asks sweetly.

Maira rolls her eyes. "It's Maira, ya big---" She stops herself. "Sera, no offense, but every time we try something like this, we lose. Big time."

Sera sighs and walks over, whispering something in Maira's ear. Maira's eyebrows jump up and she grins. "Okay then! Bye, y'all! Come back soon!"

"What did you tell her?" Evie asks curiously.

"Nunya business, E." Sera says smugly. "Okay, change of plans. All the Beasts are coming, along with E, M, Icy, Brit, and Lonnie."

"Lonnie?" Dizzy asks in surprise. "Why Lonnie?"

Sera wiggles her eyebrows. "You'll see, ya snails. Dori?"

"With pleasure." Endora waves her wand Lonnie appears out of nowhere. "Hi! I'm Endora. You're coming with us to the Isle, m'kay?"

Lonnie pauses for a second, confused. "Uhh... Sure. I guess."

"That's the spirit!" Endora cheers, then she waves her wand again and sparkles surround us.

"YOU!" someone yells, their voice cracking with anger.

I whirl around to see Harry Hook standing behind us, his jaw open in surprise, holding a mop.

"Aw..." Sera coos. "Poor Harry's been demoted to cleaner!"

he glances down at the mop in disgust, and throws it down, drawing his sword. "Uma wasn't pleased when ya escaped, lass." He says to me. "Maybe I can bring her back if I get ya now!"

I sigh dramatically. "Why is everyone always after *me?*"

Sera elbows me. "probably because you're super annoying to your enemies."

I laugh. Harry lunges for me, but I barely lift a finger before he falls to his knees, black smoke wrapped around his body.

I smile and kneel down next to his face. His silver-blue eyes glare back hatefully. I snap my fingers and his mouth comes loose. "We need your help." I tell him. "Uma told you the cure, right?"

"If she did, I'll never tell ya." He spits.

"Aha! So she did tell you!" Mal says triumphantly. "You can't know what doesn't exist!"

His glare deepens. "Sometimes I really hate ya, Mal."

"Likewise, Harry."

"Okay, then let me rephrase my past question." I snap my fingers and a ring of fire sparks to life surrounding his head. If he moved an inch any way, even backward, he'd burn himself.

"Let me warn you now, unless you're me or my dad, this stuff really burns. Understood?" I ask him.

Eyeliner glaring at me, he gives a minuscule nod.

"Great! Now, did Uma tell you the cure?"

"Aye."

"What is it?"

His face goes innocent. "Can't remember."

"Oh, please." Endora waves her wand and Harry's eyes turn gold. "What's the cure?"

Harry turns towards her with glazed gold eyes.

"There's no cure."

Hope you guys enjoyed! For people reading this today, on Friday, I hope to publish the next chapter today. If not, then tomorrow, on Saturday.

(If you're someone reading this in the future... sorry. Ellie's probably already done. XD)

Hope you guys liked this chapter! Please comment Ellie's next book's TITLE! I needs ideas.... :(

Bye! :)

Sera and Endora's Plan

"There has to be a cure!" I shout.

"She's right!" Mal joins in. "It's impossible to make a curse without a counter-curse at her age!"

Endora twirls her wand around. "Well... I have done it once or twice..."

Everyone turns to her. "You *have*?" Maira demands. "That's literally impossible!"

Sera grins and saunters over to her, putting her forearm on Endora's shoulder and leaning against her. "Aw, don' worry, ya guys. I'm sure Endora has a plan. RIGHT, Dori?" she elbows her friend savagely.

Endora grins wide. "Time?"

Sera rolls her eyes. "That's why I said, RIGHT, DORI?, ya big galoot."

"Pardon?"

"Dori!"

"Riiiiight." She turns back to us. "Don't worry, guys, we got a plan."

"What plan?" I ask, standing up.

"This one." Endora raises her wand high. "Sorry, guys!" Then she brings it down in a deadly arc that dissolves Harry's bonds and makes Uma's entire pirate crew appear around us.

"Are you KIDDING me?" I demand. "Sera!"

"Sorry, Icy." She shrugs. "Girl's gotta do what a girl's gotta do."

Uma's mouth gapes open like a fish. "What the... How'd..." Then her

eye catches on me, Endora, and Sera. And a slow smile creeps up her face. "Oh, this is too good."

"Have at 'em, Shrimpy." Sera gestures our way.

For once, Uma doesn't mind her nickname. "Harry. Get 'em."

"Aye!" he stands up and lunges at me, but I sidestep and summon a bright flame.

"Don't. Even. Try." I hiss through my teeth.

Endora clucks her tongue. "Can't have that!" She waves her wand.Blue sparkles burst from it and surround my hands before I can stop them, extinguishing my flame and solidifying as...

Blue gloves. Covered in golden designs. Letters that say *Ice Queen.*

Great.

Harry lunges forward again, and this time I don't get away in time. He grabs my arms and twists them behind my back. But my powers aren't what they used to be. I concentrate for a few seconds and Harry rips away, the skin showing through his gloves a bright, burnt red. I rub my wrists, grinning.

"Not too easy now, huh Harry?" I challenge.

He just glares and goes to stand with Uma.

"A'ight, I'ma speed this up." Sera rubs her hands together and holds them in front of her like an X. My eyes open wide in panic as I recognize what she's doing.

"Sera----" I start, but she rips apart her arms, sending a glowing red X our way. It hits us like a brick wall, sending us reeling backwards and slamming against the wood. Everyone, Beast or human, is dizzy and weak.

"Not so easy now, huh Icy?" Harry mimics.

"Oh, shut up." I snap to the three existing Harry's in my vision.

Uma whistles and pirates come forward, securing each of our arms behind us, gathering us in one big group. Carlos and I are near each other, same with Mal and Ben, Evie and Doug, and so on. I find that a bit odd, but I don't have time to wonder about it, because Uma strides forward to me. I have to cross my eyes just to get the extra Uma's to go away.

"Not so spunky now, are you?" She snarls in my face.

I respond my gathering up what moisture I have and spitting it in her face.

"Ugh!" She recoils backward just in time. It doesn't hit her face, but it does fall on her shoes. "Ugh!" She repeats, stepping backward. "You'll pay for that, Icy." she growls.

"Pleasure doin' business with you, Uma." I sniff back. She punches my stomach and I groan, doubling partway over but still keeping eye contact with my watering eyes.

"Same ol' Icy." She moves on and lingers on Mal. "Hey, it's Miss Princess!"

"That's Your Highness to you, Shrimp." Mal mutters.

Uma slaps her hard across the cheek. Mal's head jerks to the side, but she doesn't move it back. A slow smile creeps up her face. "What doesn't kill you..." She whispers.

I straighten up. "Only makes you stronger." I mumble back.

Uma scoffs at us, but I share a smile with Mal.

Uma moves along, talking to Ben, Evie, Brit, and Gil before coming back to me. "Harry. Get---"

"Lemme guess. I'm going back to that dinky little cell." I drawl out. "And you want Fairy Godmother to come get us, give you the wand, blah, blah, blaaaah."

She just grins. "Nope. Harry!"

"Aye?"

"Plank. Icy. *Now.*"

"Wait!" Another voice cries. "She's *mine.*"

Uma turns to Hans Jr, who I am pleasantly surprised to see has a black eye. "O' course, Junior. Be my..." She looks at Ben. "...guest."

Ben glares.

Hans moves forward greedily and grabs me from Harry, dragging me towards the plank. He grabs Carlos as well, pulling him along with me and shoving us *both* out onto the plank. He makes me go out first, with Carlos close behind.

I lean forward just a bit. The water looks much further down than before. It churns in a deep, dangerous black.

I swallow and step back. I doubt my powers will be able to get rid of Endora's powerful gloves.

Carlos makes a noise behind me as Hans Jr. prods him forward, therefore making me move as well. "Ellie..." He says quietly.

I turn around as carefully as I can so my back is to the water. My heart is racing. There is no way we're getting out of this.

But Carlos doesn't look scared for himself.

His fear is only reflecting my own.

Hans presses us forward again and I can feel the heel of my boot slide off before I lean forward kiss Carlos softly on his furry nose.

The fear doesn't go away from either of us, but it lessens a bit. I wriggle my hand around, and feel it slip out of the rope. But I know in my heart there's no way to get out of this. I'm right on the edge. All Hans Jr. has to do is move me an inch and I'll fall.

Carlos' eyes darken as he understands.

"Together?" he mouths.

I nod.

Hans Jr. prods me forward as I get my hands out of the bonds and embrace Carlos. Then my foot slips off the edge and we both fall down to the watery depths.

But we never make it.

We both hit something solid and my eyes fly open. I let go of Carlos as a blinding white light burns my eyes. When I blink them away, I find a sight that makes my heart burst.

Carlos looks down at the invisible something we're lying on, and then down at himself.

"I'm---" he starts.

A noise of shock draws our attention to Hans Jr's shocked face. "HUMAN!" he yells.

Ta-da! I promised the next one would come today, and I held out on that!

Remember guys, ONE more chapter. ONE! And then Ellie will be starting in a new book.

I hope you guys enjoyed this. I really do have the best commenters/readers/voters/adding-to-their-libary-ers ever.

Wuv. Twue Wuv.

Last chapter of Elicia's Ice. Enjoy!

(Also pretend the Priest from Princess Bride can be seen above saying WUV. TWUUUU WUV.)

Carlos looks just as shocked as I feel. "What happened?" He demands, feeling his no longer fuzzy nose.

I look down at the churning water. "I'm more concerned about why we're hovering above the ocean of no reason."

"Sorry, Icy, that was my fault." I hear Endora's voice snicker. The invisible something lifts high, carrying us up to the ship and depositing us onto the deck. My gloves evaporate.

"ENDORA?!" Uma screams, tearing at her hair.

Endora, looking quite amused with herself, twirls her wand around. "Yeah... I'm kinda surprised you fell for all that, Shrimp."

Sera chuckles. "I know what ya mean. We already betrayed 'er once, and she thought we'd actually come *back?*"

Arson breaks away from his captor and stumbles over to Sera, hugging her fiercely. "I THOUGHT YOU BAD!" He wails.

I can barely see Sera through all his furry mass. "Ouch! Ar, I'm not gonna leave ya! Kinda insulted ya thought I would!"

"You were very convincing." I remind her.

She shoves Arson away and grins. "Yeah. I was, wasn't I?"

Uma, who is turning a bright red, spits out, "Grab 'em."

I glance over at Endora, who gestures, *have at it.* I grin and step lightly in front of Uma and her crew. My hands ablaze with white and blue light, I slam my hands down on the ground like Sera used to do. Every pirate goes flying, losing their grip on my friends and falling headfirst into the water. Uma, Harry, and a few other people manage to grab hold of the boat, but Carlos runs over and shoves them off.

Then he turns and grins at me. "That was awesome!" he cheers.

"Aw, it was nothin'." Sera says first, pretending to blush as she walks over to me and wraps her arm around my neck, rubbing my head.

I shove her away. "Oh, shut up, Sera."

She snickers. "Hey, at least our plan worked, eh Dori?"

Endora smiles and flicks her gold hair behind her shoulders. "I knew it would. When we got attacked on the ship before, I had Uma tell me in my head just in case it *was* no cure. And you'll never guess what it was."

"Y'all really shoulda tried this *first.*" Sera whispers loudly.

Carlos looks at me the same time I look at him. He turns pink. "Don't tell me..."

"TWU WUV!" Sera crows, laughing so hard she doubles over.

"Wait---How'd you know?" Brit asks.

"Because Dori told me right before I came to the ship outta my coma." Sera rolls her eyes. "Duh."

"Right. Duh." Brit agrees meekly.

"Wait...." Evie's eyes grow wide. "Is that why you made us all come?"

Sera shrugs. "Hey, I know for a fact tha' Mal and Ben'll work. The rest I'm just hopin'."

I glance at Carlos again. Then I groan. "There's no way to stop Carlie now."

Sera's grin has never been more evil.

Endora, ignoring us, gestures to everybody else. "Well?"

"Uh.... You do realize how awkward this is, right?" Lonnie checks.

"Y'all wanna keep being furry?" Sera demands.

Brit raises her hand. "Uh...Why am I here?"

Sera wiggles her eyebrows. "Everybody knows Gil likes ya, Brit."

"Sera!" Gil complains.

"And EVERYBODY knows you like Gil, Brit." Sera continues, not giving any mercy.

"SERA!" Brit squeals, burying her face in her hands. What little bit of her face peeks out is a tomato red.

Sera grins. "And---"

"OKAY!" I hold my hands up. "Before you say that, lemme ask, why is *Arson* here? Everybody else already has a guy, if we're counting Bil. or Grit." I pause. "Hmmm.... You guys are hard."

"Grutta." Endora suggests.

"YOU GUYS ARE THE WORST!" Brit wails.

Sera rolls her eyes, goes over to Arson, and plants a big kiss on his nose. After a bright light sears through our eyelids, Arson is back to human.

Sera shrugs, leaning against him. "He's my bro. Family love can sometimes work. It did for yer aunt, didn't it?"

I think back. "Eh. That was an act of true love."

Sera shrugs. "Meh."

Mal glances sidelong at Ben. He doesn't seem to notice until she leans close and pecks his cheek. This time we know to close out eyes, and by the time I'm opening them again, Mal is actually kissing Ben.

"Nice to have you back." She laughs.

He grins. "It's nice to be back."

Lonnie goes rigid suddenly. "Don't tell me you brought me here because of Jay."

Jay's beastly form seems to shrink. I didn't think Jay would ever cower. I guess all it took was a girlfriend.

Endora twirls her wand around. "Well, we could always keep Jay as a Beast..."

Lonnie shudders. "This would be way less awkward without everybody else."

"Hey, at least you didn't do it right before you thought you were going to die." I argue.

"That'd actually be so romantic." Evie murmurs.

Carlos, his face red, mutters, "can't believe we didn't think of this sooner..."

I elbow him. Right as I turn away, a bright light flashes and Doug and Jay appear as humans again, both as red as Brit. Lonnie looks embarrassed, while Evie just looks ecstatic.

"Hey! It worked!" She cheers. "Does that mean it actually---"

"Woah there, E." Sera laughs. "Poor Doug looks ready to melt."

Doug indeed looks like he wants to crawl in a hole. We all laugh. Gil actually turns hopefully to Brit. She doesn't remove her face from her hands. "This is so embarrassing..." She finally squeaks. "I thought nobody knew..."

"Well, Uma already knew I liked *you."* Gil admits. "She told me so when she captured Ben last year."

Endora waves her hand in their direction. "Get on, you guys. We gotta get back soon so we can tell everybody else."

"Wait, why didn't we tell them before we left?" Carlos asks.

"Because you guys were our guinea pigs." Endora says bluntly. "In case it didn't work."

"Which we knew it would." Sera finishes, elbowing her brother.

"Erm." Brit squeaks, finally looking up a bit. "Uhm."

"Does it count if I kiss her?" Gil asks.

SQUEAK! Brit covers her face again.

Endora shrugs. "Sure. Why not?"

Gil's face lights up and runs over to Brit, hugging her and kissing the top of her head since he's three times taller currently. A bright light shines for the final time and Gil is back, still embracing Brit.

Brit and Gil's grins outshine all the flashes made so far.

"Yaaay." Endora mutters. "We're going back now." She waves her wand and we appear in mine and Brit's bedroom. Audrey yelps and guiltily hides the jacket Evie made for me behind her back.

I stride across the room and hold out my hand. "Mine. Now."

Sulking, she hands it over. I slide it on over my Star Wars T-shirt and escort Audrey from my room. "OH! Audrey, spread the word. The cure for the Beast stuff is true love, 'kay?"

Her eyes grow wide. "but---"

"Bye!" I slam the door.

Sear hisses a breath in. "Oof, Icy, that was nice."

Maira comes running in, a big grin on her face. "Hey, you guys! I saw Audrey running around screaming what the cure was, so I assumed you'd gotten back. I'm glad it worked, Sera!"

"Wait, how'd *you* know that alrea----" I stop. "Ohhhhh..."

Maira winks. "That's what Sera whispered to me to get me to shut up. And it worked!"

"Ahh, it was nothin'." Sera chuckles.

"Back to the thing at hand---" Endora clears her throat. "We need to go outside and help people find their partners."

I snicker. "Ned and Chad will stay Beasts forever."

"They didn't turn, remember?" Endora taps her wand against her head, sending green and gold sparkles flying. "They're already such monsters, the worst part of themselves is already showing."

I rub an old bruise on my back from where Ned had held me the night he and Chad had tried to take my powers. "Got that right."

Mal glares at nothing. "I still haven't made them pay for that."

"I'm pretty sure my dad chasing him around was bad enough." I laugh.

Everyone starts snickering. Even Endora and Sera imagine it and laugh.

"C'mon." Maira gestures outside. "Let's go see what's happening outside." She opens the door and we pile out, running outside and into the courtyard, where a bunch of bright lights are flashing, the air filling with cheers as boys all over are turning back to human.

I wrinkle my nose. "Ugh. Hector's found a girl, I see."

He indeed looks very grumpy, glancing between me and a petite little girl with coppery skin and deep black eyes, her dark raven hair falling like feathers down her back against her yellow-and-brown dress paired with soft moccasins.

Maira snickers. "Oh, he's got to HATE that. That's Pocahontas' daughter, Poloma."

"Yeah, I guessed that from the moccasins." I laugh. She does look like Pocahontas, except for the fact that her face, instead of being a fighter's like Pocahontas, is soft and filled with hope. She's bouncing on her toes like she's about to take flight, and it may just be me, but where her toes are, the grass really does look healthier.

(You thought I was going to say GREENER, didn't you?)

Hector looks at her with distaste. "You realize I hunt things like you, right?"

Her sweet face crumples and she glares. "Since I just saved your hide, I'd be more respectful! Especially to the daughter of the Chief!"

"Daughter of the Chief, my butt." Hector says. "Still as prissy as all the other princesses."

She reaches out her hand above the ground and a stick jumps through the soil, launching into her hand. Hector goes pale and dashes off. Poloma chases him, throwing sticks at him.

"CALL *ME* THAT AGAIN!" She calls, easily keeping pace with him in what looks like a jog to me.

Maira waves. "Hi, Polo!"

Poloma notices her and her face brightens. She drops her sticks and runs swiftly over to Maira, hugging her tight.

"Mai!" She cries. "I'm so glad I'm back. Papa and Mama wanted me to be in the wild for a bit so I wouldn't lose my powers here."

"Oh!" Arson greedily comes forward. "Powers!"

Poloma grins. "Hi! I'm Poloma, or Polo to some people. Yeah, I got powers. I can talk to animals, and can occasionally summon stuff from the ground."

She kneels down and taps the soil. A small, white daisy pops out joyfully and leans toward her. When she pets it like a puppy, I swear I hear it coo.

Poloma stands back up, grinning. "See?"

I nod over at Hector. "So, you kissed him?"

"Well, technically, he was stomping around demanding some girl kiss him, and people weren't exactly lining up, so I volunteered and he gave me this look, and said "As if you could fix me" so I had to prove him wrong." She says brightly.

I roll my eyes. "Of course he did."

Mal bumps me. "At least he didn't try to get you to kiss him."

"Well, everyone knows Carlie is happenin'." Sera says, grabbing me and Carlos each and pulling us against her as she cackles. "Even if you two are denyin' it!"

"SERA!" both of is complain.

She just laughs louder.

Endora clears her throat. "If you guys are done... I can sense there are no Beasts left. Seems everyone found a girlfriend."

"I thought it had to be true love." Evie pointed out.

"Well, since most of my victims were teenage boys, I tweaked it a little." Endora shrugs. "Beast's was the only one who had to be *true* love."

"Yeah, Mom!" Ben laughs. "Old news."

"I'm kinda surprised you guys didn't figure it out super fast." Endora says. "I mean, I probably shoulda figured it out, too. But...whatever."

Poloma laughs. "Anyway, Mai, I gotta go. Aunt Nakoma and her kids should be here soon. Bye!" She hugs her again and races off.

"How old is she?" I ask.

"Older than you think. She's seventeen." Maira replies.

"Really! I would have said fifteen or sixteen."

"Nah. She just loves to embrace her inner kid." Maira laughs. "She's sweet."

"Hey, look!" Mal points. "There's Beast!"

We all look over and find Beast (Now human Adam) and Belle standing on the front steps, saying something as a crowd gathers. We go forward and listen.

"----we have to thank my son and his friends for fixing this mess." Beast is saying. "When we all turned into Beasts, I feared the worst. But things seem to have fixed themselves! Also, an announcement---Sera, daughter of Ares, is awake again!"

"YEAH!" I scream, pumping my fists. Everyone turns to look at me and I sweep into a bow.

Sera cracks up and the cricket silence everywhere. My friends all cheer through the silence.

Beast smiles a bit. "Yes. Well. Also, we can say that we have who started this is our midst. And, surprisingly, we can also admit that she helped solve this curse." He grumbles the last part. "Endora, daughter of the Enchantress."

"YEAH, DORI!" Sera cheers, clapping her friend on the back. Instead of cricket silence this time, a wave is going through the crowd as everyone tries to figure out who Endora is.

Endora sighs. "May as well." She lifts her arms, raising herself in the air, and bows deeply while twirling her wand. "I'm Endora. I cursed you. You're welcome, peasants!"

And angry buzz starts going towards her, but Sera and I simultaneously step forward. The crowd weakens and Sera grins. "Yuh-uh, step back, y'all! Sera's back, and she ain't leavin'!"

And I laugh.

BANG!

I jump, almost pitching off my bed. Brit actually does fall off, and gets up quickly, rubbing her back. "Ow." She complains. She waddles over to the door and opens it up. Sera is there, wearing her normal outfit but a sparkly red jacket and headband keeping her wild hair back.

She grins. "C'mon, y'all! We's havin' a party! To celebrate everythin' finally endin' nicely!"

Brit glances down at her pajamas. "Uhhh..."

I roll my eyes and wave my hands in the air. Black and blue magic swirls around both of us, finally settling and giving Brit smoky black jeans with her T-Rex pajama shirt, and me creating a simple blue dress with icy scales like my mom's shirt. It's one-sleeved and settles in waves downwards. I wave my fingers yet again and Brit's hair gets pulled back in a low ponytail by a some scrunchie, and my hair gets beaded behind my ears by snowflakes.

"There!" I say happily. I run over to Brit's bed and grab her purple jacket, tossing it to her. She catches it and pulls it on.

"Okay." She admits. "That was awesome. Also, can I keep these jeans? They're *so* comfeeeeee!" She squeals, rubbing the fabric.

I laugh. "Sure, by all means! They shouldn't evaporate."

Her grin vanishes. "Wait, what?"

I shove her lightly. "Kidding. Sera, where is it?"

"In Ben's room, it's gigantic, and--"

I snap my fingers and all three of us suddenly appear in Ben's room, Sera still talking. "---we need to be there quick, 'cuz...." She blinks. "Oh. Nice."

I smile proudly. Then someone catches my eye. "Hey, Endora!"

She grins and comes over. She's currently in gold sparkly tights with a neon green long shirt over it and her hair twisted back in a messy bun. As always, her wand twirls around. "Please, y'all can call me Dori now. I hate this "Endora" business."

I laugh. "I'm with you. What is it with moms giving kids really long names?"

"Especially the E people!" Dori laughs.

Everyone else starts coming in, wearing something in the sparkly fashion (for the girls) and basically normal stuff (For the boys). We basically hang around in one huge circle laughing and teasing each other for a while until Dizzy suddenly beams and runs off, coming back with a big karaoke player.

Mal groans. "Diz! No! We said no---"

"KARAOKE!" Brit squeals, running over and jumping up and down. "I GET TO PICK, I GET TO PICK!!!!"

Mal looks around at all of our grinning faces and shrugs, defeated. "Fiiiiiiine. But I'm not----"

"TOO LATE!" Brit cackles, grabbing the mic throwing it to Mal. "You're first! Pass along to your right!"

I glance to my left. Great. I'm second.

Mal glares at Brit and Dizzy. "I am so getting you back for this." She mutters.

Brit presses play, and after the music starts, I crack up. She picked this on purpose. Because of what Mal and I said on Uma's ship!

Mal groans and raises the mic anyways. "♫*You know my mind starts to wander*♫"

She starts laughing halfway through the line at everyone's dumbfound expressions. What was she worried about? Her voice is

awesome!

"*♫Standing here, alone. You know I dream in color, and do the things I want.♫*"

She hands it to me quickly. I laugh and strike a dramatic pose. "*♫Y'think you got the best of me, think you've had the last laugh? Betcha think that everything good is gone. Think you left me broken-down, think I'll come running baa-aack? Baby you don't know me 'cuz you're dead-wrong.♫*"

I pass it to Endora, who starts strumming a guitar mid-air. "*♫What doesn't kill ya makes you STRONGER! Stand a lil' taller!♫*" She literally stretches herself and pops back down. "*♫Doesn't mean I'm lonely when I'm alone!♫*"

"Mine!" Sera yells, grabbing it. "*♫WHAT DOESN'T KILL YA MAKES A FIGHTER, FOOTSTEPS EVEN LIGHTER, DOESN'T MEAN I'M OVER, CUZ YOU'RE GONE!♫*"

"Everyone!" Dizzy yelps.

To my surprise, everyone, *everyone* obliges. "*♫WHAT DOES KILL YOU MAKES YOU STRONGER, STRONGER! JUST ME, MYSELF, AND I! WHAT DOESN'T KILL YOU MAKES YOU STRONGER, STAND A LITTLE TALLER, DOESN'T MEAN I'M LONELY WHEN I'M ALONE! ♫*"

Sera hands it over to Evie, who grins. "*♫Thanks to you, I got a new thing staaaaar-ted!♫*"

Brit grabs it. "*♫Thanks to you I'm not the broken-hearted!♫*"

She tosses it to Ben, who actually doesn't back down. "*♫Thanks to you, I'm finally thinking 'bout me.♫*"

Jay. *"♫Y'know in the end, the day you left was just my beginning.♫*"

Everyone. "*♫IN THE EEEEEEENNNND! WHAT DOESN'T KILL YOU MAKES YOU STRONGER, STAND A LITTLE TALLER, DOESN'T MEAN I'M LONELY WHEN I'M ALONE!♫*"

"Mal!" Dizzy yells.

"*♫Doesn't mean I'm alone, ohhhh♫*" Mal laughs.

"*♫What doesn't kill ya makes a fighter, footsteps even lii-iighter♫*" I call out.

"*♫Lii-iiighter!♫*" Evie joins.

"*♫Doesn't mean I'm over, 'cuz you're gone♫*" Everyone jumps back.

"*♫Because you're goooooooone!♫*" Mal sings under us.

"*♫What doesn't kill you makes you stronger, stronger! Just me, myself, and I! What doesn't kill you makes you stronger, stand a little taller, doesn't mean I'm lonely when I'm alone!♫*"

I wrap on arm around Mal and the other around Endora. They continue it, until we're all one big circle swaying back and forth along to the music, each of us laughing as we sing the lyrics.

"*♫What doesn't kill you makes you stronger, stronger, just me, myself, and I, what doesn't kill you makes you stronger, stand a little taller, doesn't mean I'm lonely when I'm alone!♫*"

We all stop to take a breath. And then Mal finishes it off. "*♫When I'm alone...♫*"

Dizzy cheers. "THANK YOU THANK YOU THANK YOU!" She unhooks her arms around Carlos and Evie, who were bending down to be level with her. Everyone laughs and Brit untangles as well to run over and start a new song.

"*♫I did know what you were going through....♫*" Not everyone knows this song, but Evie and Mal are jamming it out. Everyone else trickles away. I go back by the window and peer out, wondering where my parents are now. I wonder if they've even heard of the whole Beast-curse-thing?

Carlos comes up behind me. "Hey."

I turn around, smiling. "Hi." I sit down on the bay window's seat. He

sits down next to me and we watch Mal and Evie sing their hearts out for a minute, then move on to another song I don't recognize. Carlos is humming along to it and wiggling in his seat, but he doesn't get up.

"♫*Rotten to the core, core, rotten to the core...*♫" I catch through Mal, Evie, and Jay's loud voices. I laugh.

"Wow, you guys really like saying that." I comment.

He chuckles. "Well, we haven't said it for a while."

I lean my head against his shoulder. He doesn't move away. "Would you ever go back, if you could?"

He doesn't answer for a minute. "Only if you came with me." He finally says.

I smile and know he's smiling too. "I---"

"Awww, ya two are so cuuuute!" Sera plops down on my other side and throws her arm over my shoulder, forcing my head to come back up.

I roll my eyes as Carlos snorts. "Hi, Sera. Perfect timing as always."

"I try." She shrugs.

"A little too much, if you ask me." I laugh, slinging my arm over her and Carlos. He mimics us, and we all watch them move on to "♫*Looking back at yesterday, I thought I gave it everything*♫" and pretending to splash water.

We stay silent for a minute. Then I smile happily to myself.

You and me, guys. I think to myself. *All of you and me. For as long as we can.*

Then I stand up and join them, side-by-side with two people that, two years ago, I would have never thought would be the most important people in my life.

So... Elicia's Ice is officially over.

Moving on to (spoiler alert) Ellie's Flame!

yeah. That's right. I'VE GOT A TITLE! WHOOP WHOOP!

(not my BEST one...But Ellie's grown out of "Elicia". She's become herself. ELLIE! And while this book was focused on her MOM, Ellie has learned more about herself, and, to be honest, Ellie's just full 'o fire.)

Anyway, I wanna thank everybody who reads this, votes for it, comments, geeks to their friends, (Sara and Sopie! You know who you are!) and ads it to the libraries, follows me, and anything I'ma forgettin'. : D

By the way, sorry 'bout taking long updating. I wanted this chapter to send chills up my spine. And, sad it say, it really did. Only took me 23 rewrites!

Also, it was stalled because I was practicing my audition for my school play. I guess my audition payed off, 'cuz I made callbacks! WHOOP! I literally left like an hour ago. I'll find out if I made a part tomorrow!!EE!

Anyway, I gotta say goodbye, for now. For those of you in love with Ellie as much as I am, Ellie's Flame's first chapter does not currently have a release date. I will post it ON MY WALL when I am done with the first chapter.

(unless you are a future reader. In that case, SHOO! WHY YA STILL HERE?)